[illegible]

[illegible]

LECTURES AND ESSAYS

Yours most truly

W. K. Clifford

Engraved by C.H. Jeens from a Photograph by Barraud & Jerrard.

…shed by Macmillan & Co.

LECTURES AND ESSAYS

BY THE LATE

WILLIAM KINGDON CLIFFORD, F.R.S.

LATE PROFESSOR OF APPLIED MATHEMATICS AND MECHANICS
IN UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, LONDON; AND SOMETIME
FELLOW OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

EDITED BY

LESLIE STEPHEN AND FREDERICK POLLOCK

WITH AN INTRODUCTION BY F. POLLOCK

"La vérité est toute pour tous."—PAUL-LOUIS COURIER

SECOND EDITION

London
MACMILLAN AND CO.
AND NEW YORK
1886

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION

LECTURES AND ESSAYS

...RTISEMENT TO THE SECOND EDITION

Edition the Introduction has been revised, and ...itions and omissions have been made in the ...here given. Two Essays are now omitted from ...ection as being rather mathematical than philo- ...namely, those on "Types of Compound State- ...id on "Instruments used in Measurement." ...e found a more fitting place in the volume of ...ical *Papers* published in 1882.

INTRODUCTION

PART I

BIOGRAPHICAL[1]

It is an open secret to the few who know it, but a mystery and a stumbling-block to the many, that Science and Poetry are own sisters; insomuch that in those branches of scientific inquiry which are most abstract, most formal, and most remote from the grasp of the ordinary sensible imagination, a higher power of imagination akin to the creative insight of the poet is most needed and most fruitful of lasting work. This living and constructive energy projects itself out into the world at the same time that it assimilates the surrounding world to itself. When it is joined with quick perception and delicate sympathies, it can work the miracle of piercing the barrier that separates one mind from another, and becomes a personal charm. It can be known only in its operation, and is by its very nature incommunicable and indescribable. Yet this faculty, when a man is gifted with it, seems to gather up the whole of his life, so that the man always transcends every work shapen and sent forth by him; his presence is full of it, and it lightens the air his friends breathe; it commands not verbal assent to propositions or intellectual acquiescence in arguments, but the conviction of being in the sphere of a vital force for which nature must make room. Therefore when, being happy

[1] Written in 1879. A few sentences have now (1886) been added. Some verbal alterations, mostly rendered necessary by the lapse of time, will explain themselves.—F. P.

in that we knew and saw these things, and have received the imperishable gifts, we must unhappily speak of the friend who gave them as having passed from us, it becomes nothing less than a duty to attempt the impossible task, to describe that which admits of no description, and communicate that for which words are but blundering messengers. And perhaps it may not be in vain; for a voice which is in itself weak may strengthen the kindred notes that vibrate in other memories touched by the same power, and those we know to be very many. For this power, when it works for fellowship and not ambition, wins for its wearer the love of all sorts and conditions of men, and this was marked in Clifford by all who had to do with him even a little. More than this, our words may peradventure strike further, though by no force or skill of their own, and stir some new accord in imaginations favourably attuned for the impulse. The discourses and writings collected in this book will indeed testify to the intellectual grasp and acuteness that went to the making of them. Clifford's earnestness and simplicity, too, are fairly enough presented to the reader, and the clearness of his expression is such that any comment by way of mere explanation would be impertinent. But of the winning felicity of his manner, the varied and flexible play of his thought, the almost boundless range of his human interests and sympathies, his writing tells—at least, so it seems to those who really knew him—nothing or very little. To say a word or two in remembrance of one's friend is but natural; and in these days excuse is hardly needed for saying it in public. But here this is the least part of the matter in hand. Personal desires and aims are merged in the higher responsibility of telling the world that it has lost a man of genius; a responsibility which must be accepted even with the knowledge that it cannot be adequately discharged.

Not many weeks had passed of my first year at Trinity when it began to be noised about that among the new minor scholars there was a young man of extraordinary mathematical powers, and eccentric in appearance, habits, and opinions. He was reputed, and at the time with truth, an ardent High Churchman. I think it was then a more remarkable thing at Cambridge than it would be now, the evangelical tradition

of Simeon and his school being still prevalent. This was the first I heard of Clifford; and for some two years he continued to be nothing more to me than a name and a somewhat enigmatic person. In the course of our third year circumstances brought us together: it is difficult to remember the beginnings of a friendship that seems as if it must always have been, but to the best of my recollection there was nothing very sudden or rapid in our closer approach. I should assign about six months as the interval filled by the transition from acquaintance to intimacy. At an early stage in my knowledge of him I remember being struck by the daring versatility of his talk. Even then there was no subject on which he was not ready with something in point, generally of an unexpected kind; and his unsurpassed power of mathematical exposition was already longing to find exercise. I shall be pardoned for giving a concrete instance which may be in itself trivial. In the analytical treatment of statics there occurs a proposition called Ivory's Theorem concerning the attractions of an ellipsoid. The text-books demonstrate it by a formidable apparatus of co-ordinates and integrals, such as we were wont to call a *grind*. On a certain day in the Long Vacation of 1866, which Clifford and I spent at Cambridge, I was not a little exercised by the theorem in question, as I suppose many students have been before and since. The chain of symbolic proof seemed artificial and dead; it compelled the understanding but failed to satisfy the reason. After reading and learning the proposition one still failed to see what it was all about. Being out for a walk with Clifford, I opened my perplexities to him; I think I can recall the very spot. What he said I do not remember in detail, which is not surprising, as I have had no occasion to remember anything about Ivory's Theorem these twelve years. But I know that as he spoke he appeared not to be working out a question, but simply telling what he saw. Without any diagram or symbolic aid he described the geometrical conditions on which the solution depended, and they seemed to stand out visibly in space. There were no longer consequences to be deduced, but real and evident facts which only required to be seen. And this one instance, fixed in my memory as the first that came to my knowledge, represents both Clifford's theory of what teaching ought to be,

and his constant way of carrying it out in his discourses and conversation on mathematical and scientific subjects. So whole and complete was the vision that for the time the only strange thing was that anybody should fail to see it in the same way. When one endeavoured to call it up again, and not till then, it became clear that the magic of genius had been at work, and that the common sight had been raised to that higher perception by the power which makes and transforms ideas, the conquering and masterful quality of the human mind which Goethe called in one word *das Dämonische*.

A soul eager for new mastery and ever looking forward cares little to dwell upon the past; and Clifford was not much apt to speak of his own earlier life, or indeed of himself at all. Hence I am indebted to his wife and to other friends for what little I am able to say of the time before I knew him. William Kingdon Clifford was born at Exeter on May 4, 1845; his father was a well-known and active citizen, and filled the office of justice of the peace. His mother he lost early in life; he inherited from her probably some of his genius, and almost certainly the deep-seated constitutional weakness, ill paired with restless activity of nerve and brain, which was the cause of his premature loss. He was educated at Exeter till 1860, when he was sent to King's College, London, not without distinction already won in the University Local Examinations. At school he showed little taste for the ordinary games, but made himself proficient in gymnastics; a pursuit which at Cambridge he carried out, in fellowship with a few like-minded companions, not only into the performance of the most difficult feats habitual to the gymnasium, but into the invention of other new and adventurous ones. But (as he once said himself of Dr. Whewell) his nature was to touch nothing without leaving some stamp of invention upon it. His accomplishments of this kind were the only ones in which he ever manifested pride. When he took his degree there was a paragraph in *Bell's Life* pointing out, for the rebuke of those who might suppose manly exercises incompatible with intellectual distinction, that the Second Wrangler, Mr. Clifford, was also one of the most daring athletes of the University. This paragraph gave him far more lively pleasure than any of the more serious and

academical marks of approval which he had earned. In 1869 he wrote from Cambridge :—"I am at present in a very heaven of joy because my corkscrew was encored last night at the assault of arms: it consists in running at a fixed upright pole which you seize with both hands and spin round and round descending in a corkscrew fashion." In after years he did not keep up his gymnastic practice with anything like regularity; but he was with great difficulty induced to accept the necessity of completely abandoning it when it was known to be positively injurious to his health. A friend who was his companion in gymnastics writes to me:—"His neatness and dexterity were unusually great, but the most remarkable thing was his great strength as compared with his weight, as shown in some exercises. At one time he could pull up on the bar with either hand, which is well known to be one of the greatest feats of strength. His nerve at dangerous heights was extraordinary. I am appalled now to think that he climbed up and sat on the cross bars of the weathercock on a church tower, and when by way of doing something worse I went up and hung by my toes to the bars he did the same."

At King's College Clifford's peculiar mathematical abilities came to the front, but not so as to exclude attention to other subjects. He was at various times and in various ways marked out for honourable mention in classics, modern history, and English literature. His knowledge of the classics, though he did not cultivate the niceties of scholarship, was certainly as sound and extensive as that of many professedly classical students; and, like all his knowledge, it was vital. If he made use of it for quotation or otherwise, it was not because the passage or circumstance was classical, but because it was the thing he wanted to illustrate his own thought. Of history he knew a good deal; he was fond of historical reading throughout his life, and had a ready command of parallels and analogies between widely remote times and countries, sometimes too ingenious to bear criticism. I doubt if he studied historical works critically; it seems to me that he regarded history in a poetical rather than a scientific spirit, seeing events in a series of vivid pictures which had the force of present realities as each came in turn before the mind's eye. Thus he threw himself into the past with a dramatic interest

and looked on the civilised world as a field where the destinies of man are fought out in a secular contest between the powers of good and evil, rather than as a scene of the development and interaction of infinite and infinitely complex motives. This indeed, in a meagre and far cruder form, is essentially the popular view; the sort of history upon which most people are still brought up divides men, actions, and institutions into good and bad according to the writer's present notions of what might and ought to be, and distributes blessing and cursing without more ado.[1] Only Clifford, accepting to some extent the popular or pictorial way of looking at history, took on most questions the unpopular side, and so found himself in collision with current opinions. He had a fair general knowledge of English literature (by which I mean considerably more than is yet supposed necessary for an Englishman's education), with a preference for modern poetry, and especially for such as gave expression to his own ideas. Milton's prose had also a special attraction for him. I do not think he cared much for the use of language as a fine art, though he had a great appreciation of arrangement and composition. His own style, always admirably clear and often eloquent, was never elaborate; for we cannot fairly count the studied ornament of his College declamations, which were not only produced while he was an undergraduate, but for an occasion which justified some special aiming at rhetorical effect. Much of his best work was actually spoken before it was written. He gave most of his public lectures with no visible preparation beyond very short notes, and the outline seemed to be filled in without effort or hesitation. Afterwards he would revise the lecture from a shorthand-writer's report, or sometimes write down from memory almost exactly what he had said. It fell out now and then, however, that neither of these things was done; and in such cases there is now no record of the lecture at all. Once or twice he tried writing part of the lecture beforehand, but found it only an embarrassment in the delivery. I believe the only one wholly put in writing in the first instance was "Ethics of Religion," which he was unable to deliver himself. I cannot find anything showing early aptitude for acquiring languages; but that he had it

[1] As children learning history say—"But was he a good man?"

and was fond of exercising it in later life is certain. One practical reason for it was the desire of being able to read mathematical papers in foreign journals; but this would not account for his taking up Spanish, of which he acquired a competent knowledge in the course of a tour to the Pyrenees. When he was at Algiers in 1876 he began Arabic, and made progress enough to follow in a general way a course of lessons given in that language. He read modern Greek fluently, and at one time he was curious about Sanskrit. He even spent some time on hieroglyphics. A new language is a riddle before it is conquered, a power in the hand afterwards: to Clifford every riddle was a challenge, and every chance of new power a divine opportunity to be seized. Hence he was likewise interested in the various modes of conveying and expressing language invented for special purposes, such as the Morse alphabet and shorthand. One of his ideas about education was that children might learn these things at an early age, perhaps in play, so as to grow up no less familiar with them than with common printing and writing. I have forgotten to mention his command of French and German, the former of which he knew very well, and the latter quite sufficiently; I think his German reading was mostly in the direction of philosophy and mathematics.

In 1863 Clifford came up with a minor scholarship to Trinity College, Cambridge; in his third year (to continue for the present on the line of his literary accomplishments) he won the College declamation prize[1] with a very brilliant discourse on Sir W. Raleigh, partly cast in the form of quasi-dramatic dialogues, and accordingly had to deliver the annual oration at the Commemoration of Benefactors in December. His subject was a panegyric of the late Master of the College, Dr. Whewell, whose death was then recent. It was treated in an original and unexpected manner, Dr. Whewell's claim to admiration and emulation being put on the ground of his intellectual life exemplifying in an eminent degree the active and creating faculty. "Thought is powerless except it make something outside of itself: the thought which conquers the world is not contemplative but active. And it is this that I

[1] He was bracketed with Mr. C. A. Elliott for the first prize; but (I now forget for what reason) the office of delivering the Oration fell to Clifford alone.

am asking you to worship to-day." Taking this oration as a whole, it must be considered as a *tour de force*, giving glimpses and undetermined promises of speculative power. But there occurred in it an apologue which caught the attention of some good judges at the time, and so well illustrates the fanciful and sportive side of Clifford's mind that I shall here transcribe it.

"Once upon a time—much longer than six thousand years ago—the Trilobites were the only people that had eyes; and they were only just beginning to have them, and some even of the Trilobites had as yet no signs of coming sight. So that the utmost they could know was that they were living in darkness, and that perhaps there was such a thing as light. But at last one of them got so far advanced that when he happened to come to the top of the water in the daytime he saw the sun. So he went down and told the others that in general the world was light, but there was one great light which caused it all. Then they killed him for disturbing the commonwealth; but they considered it impious to doubt that in general the world was light, and that there was one great light which caused it all. And they had great disputes about the manner in which they had come to know this. Afterwards another of them got so far advanced that when he happened to come to the top of the water in the night-time he saw the stars. So he went down and told the others that in general the world was dark, but that nevertheless there was a great number of little lights in it. Then they killed him for maintaining false doctrines: but from that time there was a division amongst them, and all the Trilobites were split into two parties, some maintaining one thing and some the other, until such time as so many of them had learned to see that there could be no doubt about the matter."

The interpretation was barely indicated on this occasion; but it is worked out in another Cambridge MS. of somewhat later date,[1] in which the apologue stands first as a kind of text. It was nothing less than a theory of the intellectual growth of mankind; and the position was that, as the physical

[1] It has now (1886) been ascertained that this MS., which was found among Clifford's papers fairly written out, but without title or indication of date, was used for a lecture delivered to a military audience at Woolwich in 1869. Still the ideas distinctly belong to an early and tentative stage.

senses have been gradually developed out of confused and uncertain impressions, so a set of intellectual senses or *insights* are still in course of development, the operation of which may ultimately be expected to be as certain and immediate as our ordinary sense-perceptions.

This theory may be traced in the discourse "On some of the Conditions of Mental Development," delivered in March, 1868, which stands first in the present collection; and for that reason I make special mention of it. Otherwise it was only one inventive experiment among many. I should far exceed my limits if I were to attempt any account of the various forms of speculation, physical, metaphysical, social, and ethical, through which Clifford ranged in the first few years after his degree. Not that he was constantly changing his opinions, as a superficial observer might have thought; he was seeking for definite principles, and of set purpose made his search various and widespread. He had a singular power of taking up any theory that seemed to him at all worth investigating, realising it, working it out, and making it completely his own for the time being, and yet all the while consciously holding it as an experiment, and being perfectly ready to give it up when found wanting.

Clifford's mathematical course at Cambridge was a struggle between the exigencies of the Tripos and his native bent for independent reading and research going far beyond the subjects of the examination; and the Tripos had very much the worst of it. If there was any faculty in which he was entirely wanting, it was the examination-faculty. On this subject I am not competent to speak with certainty, but it is my belief that, from the point of view to which the class-list is an end in itself, Clifford omitted most of the things he ought to have read, and read everything he ought not to have read. Nevertheless his powers of original work carried him so far that he came out Second Wrangler in the Tripos of 1867, and was also Second Smith's Prizeman. I am fortunately able to quote on this head the statement of one of our first living analysts, Professor Sylvester:—

"Like the late Dr. Whewell, Professor Clerk Maxwell, and Sir William Thomson, Mr. Clifford was Second Wrangler at the University of Cambridge. I believe there is little

doubt that he might easily have been first of his year had he chosen to devote himself exclusively to the University curriculum instead of pursuing his studies, while still an undergraduate, in a more extended field, and with a view rather to self-culture than to the acquisition of immediate honour or emolument."

This pursuit of knowledge for its own sake, and without even such regard to collateral interests as most people would think a matter of common prudence, was the leading character of Clifford's work throughout his life. The discovery of truth was for him an end in itself, and the proclamation of it, or of whatever seemed to lead to it, a duty of primary and paramount obligation. This had something to do with the fascination of his teaching; he never seemed to be imposing dogmas on his hearers, but to be leading them into the enjoyment of a common possession. He did not tell them that knowledge was priceless and truth beautiful; he made them feel it. He gave them not formulas, but ideas. Again I can appeal to a witness of undoubted authority. The following words were written in 1871 by a man who was in no way given to unmeasured expression of his mind, and who was as eminent in mathematical physics as the author of the statement I have already cited is in pure mathematics—I mean Clerk Maxwell:—

"The peculiarity of Mr. Clifford's researches, which in my opinion points him out as the right man for a chair of mathematical science, is that they tend not to the elaboration of abstruse theorems by ingenious calculations, but to the elucidation of scientific ideas by the concentration upon them of clear and steady thought. The pupils of such a teacher not only obtain clearer views of the subjects taught, but are encouraged to cultivate in themselves that power of thought which is so liable to be neglected amidst the appliances of education."

I shall not attempt to enter in more detail on the amount and character of Clifford's subsequent contributions to mathematical science. But in an introduction to his philosophical writings it is fitting to call attention to the manner in which he brought mathematical conceptions to bear upon philosophy. He took much pleasure in the speculative constructions of

imaginary or non-Euclidean systems of space-relations which have been achieved by Continental geometers, partly because they afforded a congenial field for the combined exercise of scientific intuition and unbridled fancy. He liked talking about imaginary geometry, as a matter of pure amusement, to any one interested in it. But at the same time he attached a serious import to it. He was the first in this country, as Helmholtz in Germany, to call attention to the philosophical importance of these new ideas with regard to the question of the nature and origin of geometrical knowledge. His opinion on this point is briefly expressed in the lectures "On the Philosophy of the Pure Sciences." He intended to recast and expand these, and doubtless would have amplified this particular discussion. It will be seen that he considered Kant's position in the matter of "transcendental æsthetic" to be wholly unassailable if it was once admitted that geometrical knowledge is really exact and universal. The ordinary arguments for the derivative nature of axioms appeared to him ingenious but hopeless attempts to escape from this fatal admission. And it may be said in general terms that he had a much fuller appreciation of the merit and the necessity of Kant's work than most adherents of the English school of psychology. Of course I do not include Professor Huxley, whose testimony to Kant in his little book on Hume is as unmistakable as it is weighty.

Few words will suffice to set down the remaining facts of Clifford's life, or what we are accustomed to call facts because they can be dated and made equally known to everybody, as if that made them somehow more real than the passages and events which in truth decide the issues of life and fix the courses of a man's work. In 1868 he was elected a Fellow of Trinity College, and after spending rather more than two years at Cambridge, he was in 1871 appointed to the Professorship of Applied Mathematics at University College, London. Meanwhile he had taken part in the English Eclipse expedition of 1870: his letters of that time show keen enjoyment of the new experience of men and cities, and of the natural beauty of the Mediterranean coasts, which he was to visit again, as fate would have it, only on the sad and fruitless errand of attempting to recover strength when it was too late. In June 1874 he was elected a Fellow of the

Royal Society; he might have been proposed at a much earlier time, but had then declined, turning it off with the remark that he did not want to be respectable yet. And such was the absence in him of anything like vanity or self-assertion, that when his scruples were overcome, and his election took place, he was the last person from whom his friends heard of it. I did not know it myself till several months later. On April 7, 1875, he married Lucy, daughter of Mr. John Lane, formerly of Barbados. This was the occasion of the only voluntary leave of absence he ever took from his lectures at University College, when he characteristically informed his class that he was obliged to be absent on important business which would probably not occur again. Clifford's house was thenceforward (as, indeed, his rooms, both at Cambridge and in London, had already been) the meeting-point of a numerous body of friends, in which almost every possible variety of taste and opinion was represented, and many of whom had nothing else in common. The scientific element had naturally a certain predominance; and with Clifford, as with other men, a close friendship implied, as a rule, some sort of general coincidence in sentiments and aims, personal and intellectual concord being apt to go together. But he cared for sympathy, not for agreement; coincidence in actual results was indifferent to him. He wrote of a very near and dear friend (G. Crotch, of St. John's College, Cambridge), whose death preceded his own by some years: "We never agreed upon results, but we always used the same method with the same object." Much more would it be a mistake to suppose that Clifford was a scientific fanatic who reserved his social qualities for such persons as happened to accept his theories, or that he could not be at his ease and make the charm of his presence felt among those who did not care for theories at all. It was possible to take offence at certain passages in his writings, but impossible not to like the man; and some of those to whom Clifford's published opinions were naturally most repugnant, but who had the opportunity of personal intercourse with him, were by no means the last to express their sympathy and anxiety when the threatenings of the disease which carried him off became apparent. This charm remained with him to his very last

days; even when he was in an enfeebled and almost prostrate condition there were those who conceived for him and his, upon sudden and casual acquaintance, an affection and good-will which bore such fruit of kindly deeds as men usually look for only from the devotion ripened by long familiarity. Something of this was due to the extreme openness and candour of his conversation; something to the quickness with which he read the feelings of others, and the delicacy and gentleness with which he adapted himself to them; something, perhaps most, to a certain undefinable simplicity in which the whole man seemed to be revealed, and the whole moral beauty of his character to be grounded. It was by this simplicity, one may suppose, that he was endeared from his early days to children. He always took delight in being with them, and appeared to have a special gift of holding their attention. That he did not live to teach his own children is deeply to be regretted not only for their sake, but in the interest of education as a science and an art. What he could do for the amusement of children (and of all persons healthy enough not to be ashamed of childishness) was shown to the world in his contributions to a collection of fairy tales called *The Little People.* One of these ("The Giant's Shoes"), is one of the choicest pieces of pure nonsense ever put together; and he doubtless enjoyed writing it as much as any child could enjoy hearing it. A children's party was one of Clifford's greatest pleasures. At one such party he kept a wax-work show, children doing duty for the figures; but he reproached himself for several days afterwards because he had forgotten to wind up the Siamese twins. He seemed to have an inexhaustible store of merriment at all times: not merely a keen perception of the ludicrous, but an ever fresh gaiety and gladness in the common pleasures of life. His laughter was free and clear like a child's, and as little restrained by any consideration of conventional gravity. And he carried his mirth and humour into all departments of life, by no means excepting philosophy. When he came home from the meetings of the Metaphysical Society (attending which was one of his greatest pleasures, and most reluctantly given up when going abroad after sunset was forbidden him), he would repeat the discussion almost at length, giving not only the

matter but the manner of what had been said by every speaker, and now and then making his report extremely comic by a touch of plausible fiction. There was an irresistible affectation of innocence in his manner of telling an absurd story, as if the drollery of it were an accident with which he had nothing to do. It was hardly possible to be depressed in his company: and this was so not only in his best days, but as long as he had strength to sustain conversation at all. The charm of his countenance and talk banished for the time the anxiety we felt for him (only too justly) whenever we were not with him.

On the intellectual side this character of simplicity manifested itself in the absolute straightforwardness of everything he said and did; and this, being joined to subtlety and a wide range of vision, became in speculation and discussion a very formidable power. If there was anything for which he had no toleration, and with which he would enter into no compromise, it was insincerity in thought, word, or deed. He expressed his own opinions plainly and strongly because he held it the duty of every man so to do; he could not discuss great subjects in a half-hearted fashion under a system of mutual conventions. As for considerations of policy or expediency that seemed to interfere in any way with the downright speaking of truth for the truth's sake, he was simply incapable of entertaining them. "A question of right and wrong," he once wrote to me, "knows neither time, place, nor expediency." Being always frank, he was at times indiscreet; but consummate discretion has never yet been recognised as a necessary or even a very appropriate element of moral heroism. This must be borne in mind in estimating such passages of his writings as, judged by the ordinary rules of literary etiquette, may seem harsh and violent.

Personal enmity was a thing impossible to Clifford. Once he wrote: "A great misfortune has fallen upon me; I shook hands with ——. I believe if all the murderers and all the priests and all the liars in the world were united into one man, and he came suddenly upon me round a corner and said, '*How do you do?*' in a smiling way, I could not be rude to him upon the instant." And it was the bare truth. Neither did he ever make an enemy that I know of; I do

not count one or two blundering attacks which, however far they might go beyond the fair bounds of controversy or satire, were made by people who only guessed at the man from a superficial inspection of his writings, and were incapable of understanding either. Yet he carried about with him as deadly a foe as could have been wished him by any of those who fear and hate the light he strove so manfully to spread abroad. This was the perilous excess in his own frame of nervous energy over constitutional strength and endurance. He was able to call upon himself, with a facility which in the result was fatal, for the expenditure of power in ways and to an extent which only a strong constitution could have permanently supported; and here the constitution was feeble. He tried experiments on himself when he ought to have been taking precautions. He thought, I believe, that he was really training his body to versatility and disregard of circumstances, and fancied himself to be making investments when he was in fact living on his capital. At Cambridge he would constantly sit up most of the night working or talking. In London it was not very different, and once or twice he wrote the whole night through; and this without any proportionate reduction of his occupations in more usual hours. The paper on "The Unseen Universe" was composed in this way, except a page or two at the beginning, at a single sitting which lasted from a quarter to ten in the evening till nine o'clock the following morning. So, too, was the article on Virchow's address. But Clifford's rashness extended much further than this one particular. He could not be induced, or only with the utmost difficulty, to pay even moderate attention to the cautions and observances which are commonly and aptly described as taking care of one's self. Had he been asked if it was wrong to neglect the conditions of health in one's own person, as well as to approve or tolerate their neglect on a larger scale, he would certainly have answered yes. But to be careful about himself was a thing that never occurred to him. Even when, in the spring of 1876, distinct and grave indications of pulmonary disease were noted, his advisers and friends could hardly persuade him that there was anything more serious than could be set right by two or three weeks' rest in the country.

Here, however, there came into play something more than incredulity or indifference; the spirit of the worker and inventor rebelled against thus being baffled. His repugnance was like that of a wounded soldier who thinks himself dishonoured if he quits the field while his limbs can bear him. Reluctantly and almost indignantly he accepted six months' leave of absence, and spent the summer of that year in a journey to Algiers and the south of Spain. He came back recruited for the time, and was allowed to winter in England on pledges of special care and avoidance of exposure. These were in the main observed, and so matters went on for a year and a half more, as it seemed with fair prospects of ultimate recovery and tolerably secure enjoyment of life. What mischief was already done could not be undone; but the spread of it seemed in a way to be permanently arrested. But in the early months of 1878 there came a sudden change for the worse. His father's death, which happened at this time, was a grievous blow, and the conjunction of this with exciting literary work, done under pressure of time, threw upon him a strain which he was wholly unable to resist. The essay on Virchow's address, which closes the present collection, is both in my opinion and in that of other and more competent judges one of Clifford's best and most mature performances. But it was produced at a fearful cost, we have already seen in what manner. A few days after the MS. had left his hands he received a peremptory warning that he was in a state of such imminent danger that he must give up all work and leave England forthwith. This time the warning was too stern to admit of doubt or even delay. Yet, while the necessary preparations were in hand, he would not leave his official duties until he actually broke down in the attempt to complete a lecture. He was now suffering, not from any inroad of specific local disease, but from a rapid and alarming collapse of general strength which made it seem doubtful if he could live many weeks. But his constitutional frailty was accompanied withal by a wonderful power of rallying from prostration; and one could not help entertaining a dim hope, even to the last, that this vitality was somehow the deepest thing in his nature, and would in the long run win the day. In April that year, Clifford and

his wife left England for the Mediterranean; the accounts they sent home were various and often anxious; but after voyages and short halts which embraced Gibraltar, Venice, and Malta, they rested for some weeks at Monte Generoso, and there for the first time there was the appearance of steady improvement setting in. From this place Clifford wrote long letters with his own hand, full of his usual spirit and manifold interest in everything about him. I may mention here that his letters were the more valuable because they were always spontaneous and could seldom be counted on beforehand. He wrote quickly and easily; and yet for some obscure reason letter-writing, especially as a matter of business, was beyond measure irksome and difficult to him. He would rather take almost any trouble than answer a letter, and the painfulness of answering was at its height when (as pretty often happened) old acquaintances applied to him for testimonials. For in this case it was aggravated by the utter impossibility of lending himself to the petty exaggerations and dissimulations which custom allows to pass current for such purposes, and which are almost thought to be required by civility. One such application, from a man he had known before but had lost sight of, vexed him extremely; he did not know what to do with it, for he could honestly have certified only as to the past, and he carried the letter about with him till it was ragged, being newly vexed every time he saw it. There were many letters of friends which he regretted to the last not having answered. Several received in the last months or weeks of his life he intended to answer if he had ever become strong enough. Yet now and then he would write unsought to some one he was intimate with, and throw himself completely into his letter; and then his descriptions were so full of life and colour that they might well be taken as models by any one minded to study the art of correspondence, not uncommonly alleged to be lost since the introduction of cheap and rapid communications. Such letters he sent to England from Spain and Sicily in 1870, and from Algiers in 1876. Some of them are printed farther on.

In August 1878, there being signs of improvement, and a warm climate not being judged necessary or very desirable at

that season, leave was given for a short return to England. Clifford came home looking very ill and feeble to ordinary observation, but much better to those who had seen him before he started. He was incapable of continuous exertion of any kind, but much of the old animation had come back, and his conversation had lost nothing of its vigour and brilliancy. The object of the summer journey had been rest and freedom from care above all things: now it was planned that with the first days of autumn he should again go in search of conditions which might be not only rest-giving but curative. But all plans were cut short by a relapse which took place late in September, induced by fatigue. From that day the fight was a losing one, though fought with such tenacity of life that sometimes the inevitable end seemed as if it might yet be put far off. Clifford's patience, cheerfulness, unselfishness, and continued interest in his friends and in what was going on in the world, were unbroken and unabated through all that heavy time. Far be it from me, as it was far from him, to grudge to any man or woman the hope or comfort that may be found in sincere expectation of a better life to come. But let this be set down and remembered, plainly and openly, for the instruction and rebuke of those who fancy that their dogmas have a monopoly of happiness, and will not face the fact that there are true men, ay and women, to whom the dignity of manhood and the fellowship of this life, undazzled by the magic of any revelation, unholpen of any promises holding out aught as higher or more enduring than the fruition of human love and the fulfilment of human duties, are sufficient to bear the weight of both life and death. Here was a man who utterly dismissed from his thoughts, as being unprofitable or worse, all speculations on a future or unseen world; a man to whom life was holy and precious, a thing not to be despised, but to be used with joyfulness; a soul full of life and light, ever longing for activity, ever counting what was achieved as not worthy to be reckoned in comparison of what was left to do. And this is the witness of his ending, that as never man loved life more, so never man feared death less. He fulfilled well and truly that great saying of Spinoza, often in his mind and on his lips: *Homo liber de nulla re minus quam de morte cogitat.*

One last stand was made, too late to be permanently successful (if ever it could have so far availed), but yet not wholly in vain. At the opening of the year 1879 Clifford's remnant of strength was visibly diminishing. The peril of attempting a journey was great, but no peril could be greater than that which he already lay in. Medicine had no new thing to recommend, and almost nothing to forbid: a last experiment could only be tried. Clifford sailed for Madeira, his friends hardly expecting him to live out the voyage. Of the friendship and devotion that accompanied and tended him there it is not fitting that I should speak. So it was, however, that he arrived safely in the island, and some weeks were added to his life. The change from the bitterest of recent English winters to the fair and temperate air of Madeira had no power to restore the waning forces; but it enabled him to spend his last days in ease and comparative enjoyment. He could once more look on the glories of a bountiful world, and breathe under a free sky. Something of spirit and even of strength revived; his powers of conversation, which had been restrained by mere physical weakness in his last days in England, returned to some extent, and in that short time, with all the disadvantages of a stranger and an invalid, he made new friends: one such (though in spirit not a stranger before) of whose friendship even he might have been proud. There was a glimmer of hope, faint, uncertain, but perceptible; there was a possibility that if amendment once began, it might go further than we had dared to speculate upon. But it was not to be. In the last days of February we learnt that his condition was hopeless; on the 3d of March the end came. For a week he had known that it might come at any moment, and looked to it steadfastly. So calmly had he received the warning which conveyed this knowledge that it seemed at the instant as if he did not understand it. He gave careful and exact directions as to the disposal of his works, which are partly carried out in this volume, and have been substantially fulfilled as to his mathematical remains also. His work was, indeed, the only thing personal to himself that he took much thought for; and that not because it was his own possession, but because he felt that it was his own to do and to make a possession for others. He loved it for the work's and the truth's sake, not for his

own. More than this, his interest in the outer world, his affection for his friends and his pleasure in their pleasures, did not desert him to the very last. He still followed the course of events, and asked for public news on the morning of his death: so strongly did he hold fast his part in the common weal and in active social life.

It has been mentioned how unwilling Clifford was to throw up, even under necessity, his work at University College. His friends and colleagues there were equally unwilling to lose him; and when it became evident that he could never permanently resume his lectures, they still cast about for means to retain him as one of their number. In 1879 the Senate, in reviewing the whole question of the teaching of mathematics and physics, recommended that Clifford should "remain in possession of his chair, and that if, against the expectation, but in accordance with the most earnest desire of his colleagues, he should so far recover health as to be able to lecture, he should be invited to lecture upon special subjects in mathematics, to which he could bring his own rare qualities of mind without being subjected to any strain of constant necessary work." This recommendation only awaited the assent of the Council to take effect, and that assent would almost certainly have been given; but before the matter could be submitted to the Council it was known that the time of expectation was over, and desire quelled by the final certainty of loss.

The essays here brought together represent, with few if any exceptions, the general view of the world and human knowledge which Clifford had definitely arrived at in his later years. I do not mean that he had got a fixed set of results and meant to rest in them; he admitted no finality of that sort. But he did believe very decidedly that the difference between right and wrong method is everywhere important, and that there is only one right method for all departments of knowledge. He held that metaphysical and theological problems ought to be discussed with exactly the same freedom from preconceived conclusions and fearlessness of consequences as any other problems. And he further held that, as the frank application of the right method of search to the physical sciences has put them on a footing of steady

progress, though they differ in the amount and certainty of the knowledge already won in their respective fields, so the like effects might be expected when philosophical speculation was taken in hand by the light of science and with scientific impartiality and earnestness. For the popular or unscientific rhetoric which frequently assumes the name of philosophy Clifford had as much contempt as he permitted himself to feel for anything. Once he said of an acquaintance who was believed to be undertaking something in this kind: "He is writing a book on metaphysics, and is really cut out for it; the clearness with which he thinks he understands things and his total inability to express what little he knows will make his fortune as a philosopher." But he never accepted, and I do not think he was ever tempted to accept, the doctrine that all metaphysical inquiries ought to be put aside as unprofitable. Indeed he went beyond most English psychologists, though in a general way he must be classed with the English school, in his estimate of the possibility of constructing a definite metaphysical system on scientific principles. With regard to the application of his philosophical ideas to theological conceptions, it may perhaps be said that he aimed at doing for dogmatic and natural theology something like what the Tübingen school in Germany have done for historical theology, namely, bringing them to the light of unbiassed common sense, including therein as an important element the healthy moral sense of civilised men. Whether Clifford had any feeling that his line of work was complementary to the historical criticism of dogmas I cannot say: but so it was that he paid no special attention to the historical side of these questions, either because it did not particularly interest him, or because he thought it outside his competence. In ethics, on the other hand, he attached the utmost importance to the historical facts of moral culture as affording the key of the speculative position and indicating the profitable directions of inquiry. And it may be noted as an instance of the freshness and openness of his mind that the importance of this point of view, set forth in "The Scientific Basis of Morals" and the papers following it, was perceived by him only after he left Cambridge. The main points of the last-named essay were stated by Clifford himself in a letter written when he had nearly finished it.

He described it as "showing that moral maxims are ultimately of the same nature as the maxims of any other craft: if you want to live together successfully, you must do so-and-so. . . . That conscience is developed out of experience by healthy natural processes. . . . That responsibility is founded on such order as we can observe, and not upon such disorder as we can conjecture." This is quite a different line from that which his speculations on the nature of duty were wont to take at Cambridge, both in the conversations I remember, and in various MS. fragments of that period which are now before me.

A letter of the autumn of 1874, written by Clifford to his wife during their engagement, bears upon his practical conception of ethics and is otherwise interesting. "At the Savile I found C., who had just done dinner, but sat down while I ate mine, and we solved the universe with great delight until A. came in and wanted to take him off to explain coins to somebody. Of course I would not let him go. . . . We walked about in the New Road solving more universe. He says the people in the middle ages had a closer connection between theory and practice; a fellow would get a practical idea into his head, be cock-sure it was right, and then get up and snort and just have it carried through. Nowadays we don't have prophets with the same fire and fervour and insight. To which it may be said that our problems are infinitely more complex, and that we can't be so cock-sure of the right thing to do. He quoted the statesmanship of the great emperors, *e.g.* Frederic II.; and some of the saints, as St. Francis and St. Catherine of Siena. Still there is room for some earnest person to go and preach around in a simple way the main straightforward rules that society has unconsciously worked out and that are floating in the air; to do as well as possible what one can do best; to work for the improvement of the social organisation; to seek earnestly after truth and only to accept provisionally opinions one has not inquired into; to regard men as comrades in work and their freedom as a sacred thing; in fact, to recognise the enormous and fearful difference between truth and falsehood, right and wrong, and how truth and right are to be got at by free inquiry and the love of our comrades for their own sakes and nobody else's. Mazzini has done a great deal in

this direction, and formed the conception of the world as a great workshop where we all have to do our best to make something good and beautiful with the help of the others. Such a preaching to the people of the ideas taught by the great Rabbis was (as near as we can make out) the sort of work that Christ did; but he differed from the Rabbis and resembled all other Jew prophets in not being able to stand priests."

It will not be amiss to go back to the time when we left Clifford celebrating the late Master of Trinity in parables, and to take up more continuously than we have yet done the growth of his philosophic ideas. Before he took his degree, and I think for some little time after, he was (as before mentioned) a High Churchman; but there was an intellectual and speculative activity about his belief which made it impossible that it should remain permanently at that stage. On the one hand he acquired a far more accurate knowledge of Catholic theology than is often met with in England even among those who discuss theological questions; he was pretty well read in St. Thomas Aquinas, and would maintain the Catholic position on most points with extreme ingenuity, not unfrequently adding scientific arguments and analogies of his own. On the other hand, believing from the first in the unity or at least the harmony of all truth, he never slackened in the pursuit of scientific knowledge and ideas. For a while he experimented in schemes for the juxtaposition of science and dogma. Religious beliefs he regarded as outside the region of scientific proof, even when they can be made highly probable by reasoning; for, as he observes in a MS. fragment of this time, they are received and held not as probable but as certain. And he actually defined superstition as "a belief held on religious or theological grounds, but capable of scientific proof or disproof." He also held that there was a special theological faculty or insight, analogous to the scientific, poetic, and artistic faculty; and that the persons in whom this genius is exceptionally developed are the founders of new religions and religious orders. He seems to have been always and equally dissatisfied with attempts at proving theological propositions, especially in the usual manner of Protestant divinity, and with the theological version of natural history

commonly called Natural Theology. There are indications in his note-books of that which might have become, under other conditions, a spiritual vocabulary no whit less original than William Blake's. Underlying all these experiments and endeavours there was a permanent element of active intellectual faith by which Clifford was akin to a philosophic scholar in most external respects exceedingly unlike him, Mark Pattison. This faith is summed up by Pattison in a saying not known to Clifford, I think, in its terms, but wholly after his heart: "The learning of true propositions, dogmatically delivered, is not science." When or how Clifford first came to a clear perception that his position of quasi-scientific Catholicism was untenable I do not exactly know; but I know that the discovery cost him an intellectual and moral struggle, of which traces may be found here and there in his essays. It is not the case, however, that there was any violent reaction or rushing to an opposite extreme. Some time elapsed before his philosophical opinions assumed their final consistency; and in truth what took place was not a reaction, but the fuller development of principles which had been part of his thoughts ever since he began to think for himself.

Meanwhile he was eagerly assimilating the ideas which had been established as an assured possession of biological science by Mr. Darwin, and the kindred ones already at an earlier time applied and still being applied to the framing of a constructive science of psychology, and to the systematic grouping and gathering together of human knowledge, by Mr. Herbert Spencer; who had, in Clifford's own words, "formed the conception of evolution as the subject of general propositions applicable to all natural processes." Clifford was not content with merely giving his assent to the doctrine of evolution: he seized on it as a living spring of action, a principle to be worked out, practised upon, used to win victories over nature, and to put new vigour into speculation. For two or three years the knot of Cambridge friends of whom Clifford was the leading spirit were carried away by a wave of Darwinian enthusiasm: we seemed to ride triumphant on an ocean of new life and boundless possibilities. Natural Selection was to be the master-key of the universe; we expected it to solve all riddles and reconcile all contradictions.

Among other things it was to give us a new system of ethics, combining the exactness of the utilitarian with the poetical ideals of the transcendentalist. We were not only to believe joyfully in the survival of the fittest, but to take an active and conscious part in making ourselves fitter. At one time Clifford held that it was worth our while to practise variation of set purpose; not only to avoid being the slaves of custom, but to eschew fixed habits of every kind, and to try the greatest possible number of experiments in living to increase the chances of a really valuable one occurring and being selected for preservation. So much of this theory as he ever gave to the world will be found in the discourse "On Some Conditions of Mental Development;" and I do not know that he would ever have deliberately committed himself to anything more than is there propounded. One practical deduction was that education ought to be directed not to mere instruction, but to making people think and act for themselves; and this Clifford held to be of special importance in the case of women, where the cultivation of independent power is too commonly neglected or even purposely discouraged. "It seems to me," he once wrote, "that the thing that is wanting in the education of women is not the acquaintance with any facts, but accurate and scientific habits of thought, and the courage to think that true which appears to be unlikely. And for supplying this want there is a special advantage in geometry, namely that it does not require study of a physically laborious kind, but rather that rapid intuition which women certainly possess; so that it is fit to become a scientific pursuit for them."

The duty of independence and spontaneous activity conceived by Clifford as being revealed by the philosophy of evolution was reinforced from another side by the reading of Mazzini; and the result was a conception of freedom as the one aim and ideal of man. This freedom was a sort of transfigured blending of all powers of activity and progress; it included republicanism as opposed to the compulsory aspect of government and traditional authority in general, but was otherwise not bound to any particular theory in politics. Indeed it forbade binding one's self irrevocably to any theory whatever; and the one commandment of freedom was thus

expressed, *Thou shalt live and not formulise.* That alone was right which was done of one's own inner conviction and mere motion; that was lifeless and evil which was done out of obedience to any external authority. "There is one thing in the world," Clifford wrote about this time, "more wicked than the desire to command, and that is the will to obey." Now this doctrine of individual and independent morality may look on the face of it anarchical, and therefore it may be worth while to observe that the Catholic doctrine of the duty of following conscience is essentially at one with it. The conscience may or may not be rightly informed. It may be wrongly informed without one's own fault, as in the case of invincible ignorance, or with it, as in the case of culpable ignorance or perversity. But even in this last case we are told that the sin of doing an absolutely wrong thing in obedience to the voice of conscience, however misguided, is infinitely less than the sin of doing the absolutely right thing against one's conscience. The conscience must be rightly informed before a completely right action is possible.[1] Again, Fichte treats the sense of will and duty (from which he deduces not only morality but the existence of other men and of the world, in fact all knowledge and reality whatever) as absolutely personal and individual. Clifford's early doctrine of freedom was ardent and immature; but whoever should call it immoral would find himself committed to applying the same language to some of the greatest moralists of the world. The social theory of morality stated and partly worked out in the ethical portion of Clifford's essays is quite independent of this earlier phase. At the same time it is not necessarily inconsistent with it; for the determination of social morality is apart from the assignment of motives for individual morality, and leaves untouched the cultivation of individual perfection. Clifford, however, does in his later writings freely and distinctly recognise the validity of the social, or, as he sometimes calls it, the tribal judgment, on the moral

[1] See the authorities collected in Dr. Newman's *Letter to the Duke of Norfolk*, pp. 65, 66:—"Secundum sententiam, et certam, asserentem esse peccatum discordare a conscientia erronea, invincibili aut vincibili, tenet D. Thomas, quem sequuntur omnes Scholastici." "In no manner is it lawful to act against conscience, even though a law or a superior commands it." Some writers even say that this opinion is *de fide*.

character of individual acts regarded as an external quality; and there was a time when he would probably have hesitated to allow this.

In a note-book of Clifford's later Cambridge time there are some speculations on the compensating intellectual pleasures that help to break the shock of parting with old beliefs. I make an extract from one of these pages. "Whosoever has learnt either a language or the bicycle can testify to the wonderful sudden step from troublesome acquirement to the mastery of new powers, whose mere exercise is delightful, while it multiplies at once the intensity and the objects of our pleasures. This, I say, is especially and exceptionally true of the pleasures of perception. Every time that analysis strips from nature the gilding that we prized, she is forging thereout a new picture more glorious than before, to be suddenly revealed by the advent of a new sense whereby we see it—a new creation, at sight of which the sons of God shall have cause to shout for joy.

"What now shall I say of this new-grown perception of Law, which finds the infinite in a speck of dust, and the acts of eternity in every second of time? Why, that it kills our sense of the beautiful, and takes all the romance out of nature. And moreover that it is nothing more than a combining and reorganising of our old experiences, never can give us anything really new, must progress in the same monotonous way for ever. But wait a moment. What if this combining and organising is to become first habitual, then organic and unconscious, so that the sense of law becomes a direct perception? Shall we not then be really seeing something new? Shall there not be a new revelation of a great and more perfect cosmos, a universe freshborn, a new heaven and a new earth? *Mors janua vitæ;* by death to this world we enter upon a new life in the next. A new Elysium opens to our eager feet, through whose wide fields we shall run with glee, stopping only to stare with delight and to cry, 'See there, how beautiful!' for the question, 'Why?' shall be very far off, and for a time shall lose its meaning."

"For a time? It may well be that the new world also shall die. Doubtless there shall by and by be laws as far trans-

cending those we know as they do the simplest observation. The new incarnation may need a second passion; but evermore beyond it is the Easter glory."

Even at the time of these half-poetical meditations I think Clifford must have felt them to be too poetical for scientific use. Later in life, as we have seen above and may see in the Essays, he chose to make sure of a solid foundation in experience at the cost of sacrificing ornament and rhetoric, and his admiration of Mazzini became compatible with practical empiricism in politics. "On the whole I feel confirmed," he wrote in a letter, "that the English distrust of general principles in a very complex affair like politics is a sound scientific instinct, and that for some time we must go blundering on, finding out by experience what things are to be let alone and what not."

The command, "thou shalt not formulise," was expressed in an amusing shape in a review of *Problems of Life and Mind*, published in 1874. "Rules of philosophising are admirable things if two conditions are satisfied: first, you must philosophise before you make your rules; secondly, you should publish them with a fond and fervent hope that no philosophiser will attend to them."

As to Clifford's ideas on metaphysics proper I have not much to say beyond what is disclosed in the Essays themselves. His interest in philosophy grew up rapidly after he took his degree, as is generally the case with men who have any bent that way. I remember many long talks with him on metaphysical questions, but not much of the substance of them. One evening in the Long Vacation of 1868, when we were up for the Fellowship examination, we discussed the Absolute for some couple of hours, and at last defined it to our own exceeding content as that which is in necessary relation to itself. Probably we laughed at our definition the next morning, or soon after; but I am still of opinion that, as definitions of the Absolute go, this will do quite as well as any other. Clifford's philosophical reading was rather select than wide. He had a high admiration for Berkeley, next only to Hume, and even more, perhaps, for the *Ethics* of Spinoza. The interpretation of Spinoza's philosophy which I have put forward on one or two occasions was common to

Clifford and myself, and on that subject (as, indeed, on everything we discussed together) I owe very much to him. He was to have lectured on Spinoza at the London Institution in 1877, but his health would not allow it. There is little doubt that this would have been one of his most brilliant and original discourses. Students of Spinoza will easily trace the connection between his theory of mind and matter and the doctrine set forth in Clifford's Essays on "Body and Mind," and "The Nature of Things-in-themselves." This was arrived at, to the best of my recollection, in 1871 or 1872; certainly before 1874, in which year the last-mentioned paper was read at a meeting of the Metaphysical Society. Briefly put, the conception is that mind is the one ultimate reality; not mind as we know it in the complex forms of conscious feeling and thought, but the simpler elements out of which thought and feeling are built up. The hypothetical ultimate element of mind, or atom of *mind-stuff*, precisely corresponds to the hypothetical atom of matter, being the ultimate fact of which the material atom is the phenomenon. Matter and the sensible universe are the relations between particular organisms, that is, mind organised into consciousness, and the rest of the world. This leads to results which would in a loose and popular sense be called materialist. But the theory must, as a metaphysical theory, be reckoned on the idealist side. To speak technically, it is an idealist monism. Indeed it is a very subtle form of idealism, and by no means easy of apprehension at first sight. Nevertheless there are distinct signs of a convergence towards it on the part of recent inquirers who have handled philosophical problems in a scientific spirit, and particularly those who have studied psychology on the physiological side. Perhaps we shall be told that this proves the doctrine to be materialism in disguise; but it is hardly worth while to dispute about names while more serious things remain for discussion. And the idea does require much more working out; involving, as it does, extensive restatement and rearrangement of metaphysical problems. It raises not only several questions, but preliminary (and really fundamental) problems as to what questions are reasonable. For instance, it may be asked why, on this hypothesis, mind should become conscious at a

particular degree of complexity, or be conscious at all. I should myself say that I do not know and do not expect ever to know, and I believe Clifford would have said the same. But I can conceive some one taking up the theory and trying to make it carry further refinements and explanations. Again, a more subtle objection, but in my opinion a fallacious one, would be that it is not really a monism but a dualism, putting mind (as the undetermined *mind-stuff*) and consciousness in place of the old-fashioned matter and mind. This, however, is not the place to pursue the subject; and I do not think the outline of the hypothesis can be made clearer by any explanation of mine than Clifford has already made it. Looking back on this brilliant piece of speculation after seven years, I suppose my sight is more impartial. I alter nothing of what I wrote in the first edition, but feel bound in sincerity to add that I cannot now accept *mind-stuff*. The atom of mind-stuff is a "thing in itself": Clifford so described it. But the purpose of modern philosophy is to abolish things in themselves. Kant proved them unknowable: the inevitable step onward is to cast them out as illusions, though Kant would not take it. By no amount of ingenious manipulation can psychology henceforth be made to serve instead of metaphysics. Mind *per se*, or mind-stuff, abstracted by Clifford's or any like method from the intelligible world, is no more intelligible than matter *per se*. We have simplified a scientific statement, not solved a philosophical problem.

After all I have wished to speak of the man rather than his opinions; but the speculative interests I shared with him, being in a manner part of himself, have claimed their due, and perhaps obtained rather more. Let us now gather up a few matters of personal habit and character which have not yet been noticed. The predominance of light as a figure and a symbol in Clifford's writing will be remarked: he associates it with the right and all things good so constantly and naturally that it is one of the marks of his style. He had physically a great love of light, and chose to write, when he could, in a clear and spacious room, with the windows quite free of curtains. Though he was not for most ordinary purposes a business-like man, and was careless of his own

attire, he was neat and exact in his literary work. He would not allow books to be misused or carelessly cut, and his own MS. was very fair, regular, and free from erasures. He was careful about punctuation, and insisted on having his own way in it, and he especially disliked superfluous commas. At the same time he was fond of handicraft, and his thoughts often ran upon mechanical invention. He speculated much on the practicability of constructing a flying machine, and began experiments at sundry times, which, however, never led to anything definite. Indeed it is pretty obvious that if a successful flying machine is ever made (and there is no impossibility in it), the inventor will be some one who combines theoretical knowledge of mechanics with familiar knowledge of machinery and the strength of materials and ready command of the various resources of engineering. At one time the notion of the flying machine turned Clifford's attention to kites, and this led to a ludicrous accident. It was in the Long Vacation of 1877, when Clifford and his wife were Mrs. Crawshay's guests in Wales. A kite of unusual dimensions, with tail in proportion, had been made ready for a flight which was to exceed everything achieved by kites before. It was to be flown with a great length of string, and it cost a morning's work to lay out the string in a field so that the kite might rise easily when started. Having accomplished this, the party went in to luncheon, and were presently called out by the announcement that a flock of sheep had been turned into the field. Clifford rushed out to prevent the disaster, but it was too late. Shepherd and sheep were caught as in a snare, and when they were extricated the string was left hopelessly entangled. Another piece of engineering undertaken at the same time and place was the construction of a duck-pond for the benefit of a family of ducklings who frequented a narrow ditch by the roadside. The little stream that trickled in the ditch was dammed according to the rules of art, and in course of time a complete pond was formed, and the ducks were happy for a season: till one day some over-zealous minister of local authority, conceiving the pond, as it was supposed, to be an encroachment on the highway, restored the ancient state of things with a few strokes of the spade. Clifford regretted

the duck-pond even more than the kite. Other amusing and characteristic anecdotes might be added; but I forbear.

No enumeration of tastes and occupations can adequately represent the variety and flexibility of Clifford's intellect, and still less the tender, imaginative, poetical side of his mind. Now and then he wrote verses in which this partly found expression. They were mostly of a private or occasional nature, or else too fragmentary for publication. One very graceful song is to be found in the volume of fairy tales already spoken of. But the real expression of Clifford's varied and fascinating qualities was in his whole daily life and conversation, perceived and felt at every moment in his words and looks, and for that very reason impossible to describe. Nor can portraits go very far to supply that part of it which fell to the sight; for the attractive animation and brightness of his countenance depended on very slight, subtle, and rapidly succeeding changes. His complexion was fair; his figure slight, but well-knit and agile; the hands small, and, for a man, singularly slender and finely formed. The features were of a massive and irregular type which may be called Socratic; in a bust they might have looked stern, in the living face they had an aspect not only of intellectual beauty but of goodwill and gentle playfulness. But I began with declaring my task impossible, and at the end I feel still more keenly that all words fall short of what I would convey. The part has fallen to me of doing to a loved and honoured friend such honour as I could: the will at least will be accepted.

Purpureos spargam flores . . et fungar inani
munere.

PART II

SELECTIONS FROM LETTERS, ETC.

THE following is a selection from letters written by Clifford at various times, partly to my mother and partly to myself. I begin with some philosophical passages.

[*To F. Pollock.*]

"Trinity College, Cambridge, April 2, 1870.

"Several new ideas have come to me lately: first, I have procured Lobatschewsky, *Études Géométriques sur la Théorie des Parallèles* . . . a small tract, of which Gauss, therein quoted, says, 'L'auteur a traité la matière en main de maître et avec le véritable esprit géométrique. Je crois devoir appeler votre attention sur ce livre, dont la lecture ne peut manquer de vous causer le plus vif plaisir.' It is quite simple, merely Euclid without the vicious assumption, but the way the things come out of one another is quite lovely. . . .

"I am a dogmatic nihilist, and shall say the brain is conscious if I like." (This in reply to some verbal criticism of mine.) "Only I do not say it in the same sense as that in which I say that *I* am conscious. It seems to me that not even Vogt, however you fix it, can talk about matter for scientific purposes except as a phenomenon; that in saying the brain is conscious—or, better, that *you* are conscious, I only affirm a correlation of two phenomena, and am as ideal as I can be; that, consequently, a true idealism does not want to be stated, and, conversely, an idealism that requires to be stated must have something wrong about it. In the same way to say that

there is God apart from the universe is to say that the universe is not God, or that there is no real God at all; it may be all right, but it is atheism. And an idealism which can be denied by any significant aggregation of words is no true idealism."

The following is on the recent edition of Hume by Messrs. Green and Grose:—

[*To F. Pollock.*]

"Exeter, September 11, 1874.

". . . I hope you have seen Sidgwick's remarks (I think in the *Academy*);[1] he points out that to prove Hume insufficient is not to do much in the present day. It should, I think, be brought out clearly that if we pay attention only to the scientific or empirical school, the theory of consciousness and its relation to the nervous system has progressed in exactly the same way as any other scientific theory; that no position once gained has ever been lost, and that each investigator has been able to say 'I don't know' of the questions which lay beyond him without at all imperilling his own conclusions. Green, for instance, points out that Hume has no complete theory of the *object*, which is of course a very complex thing from the subjective point of view, because of the mixture of association and symbolic substitution in it; and in fact I suppose this piece of work has not yet been satisfactorily done. But it seems merely perverse to say that the scientific method is a wrong one, because there is yet something for it to do; and to find fault with Hume for the omission is like blaming Newton for not including Maxwell's Electricity in the *Principia.*"

The following suggestions on education were sent from Algiers in June 1876:—

[*To F. Pollock.*]

". . . I have a scheme which has been communicated in part to Macmillan, and which grows like a snowball. It is founded on *Pleasant Pages*, the book I was taught out of;

[1] May 30, 1874, vol. v. p. 608.

which is a series of ten minutes' lessons on the Pestalozzian plan of making the kids find out things for themselves: history of naughty boys on Monday, animals on Tuesday, bricks on Wednesday, Black Prince on Thursday, and so on. In the book it was very well done, by a man who had a genius for it. If you go to see Macmillan in Bedford Street he will show you the book, which he got on my recommendation—he is also himself newly interested in the question. His partner Jack read part of it and was struck. Well, I first want that brought up to to-day, both in choice of subject and in accuracy; adding, *e.g.* a series of object lessons on man (papa, mamma, house, street, clothes, shop, policeman, 'wild and field'). Then I want it taught on the Russian system, in different languages on successive days; no direct teaching of language until there are facts enough to make Grimm's law intelligible, for which English, German, and the Latin element in French would be enough; no grammar at all till very late, and then as analysis of sentences and introductory to logic. This is the difficult part; it would require a French and German teacher, both trained and competent, besides the English one. So far as the book is concerned it would of course be easy to print it in the three languages. Lastly, I have bought twelve volumes of the *Bibliothèque Nationale* for three francs—Rabelais, five volumes, and Montesquieu, Pascal, Diderot, and Vauvenargues. They are twenty-five centimes each, admirable for the pocket—and of course you know them. There are two or three hundred volumes. Whereupon we must of course get the same thing done for English literature, and the setting forth of all literature in English (*e.g.* I have *Les Maximes d'Epictète*), but more particularly we must get published excellent little manuals at twopence or threepence for the use of Board and other primary schools. I do not even know that penny schoolbooks would not be a successful move—the size of a *Daily News*, say, printed by the million in a Walter press, folded and sewed by machinery to about the size of the *Bibliothèque*.

"A *Daily News* would just make one of these volumes. Fancy the *Pensées* of Pascal, with the notes of Voltaire, Fontenelle, and Condorcet, a good life at the beginning, etc., all well printed on a sheet of the *Daily News*! But of such

a size could be made a very good elementary schoolbook of arithmetic, geometry, animals, plants, physics, etc.—rather larger than Macmillan's primers, but of the same sort."

The remaining letters and extracts are chiefly descriptive, and will be given without further remark, except such brief note of dates and circumstances as may seem necessary.

[*To Lady Pollock.*]

"Cambridge, September 26, 1871.

". . . My ideal theory is quite different from yours. In the case of persons I worship the actual thing always; this is the only way to be trusted. The one advantage of having indestructible family relations is that, whatever you do and whatever anybody thinks of you, there are always one or two people who will love you exactly as much as (if not more than) if you were blameless and universally respected. I used to recognise an exception, viz. that in certain cases what had been a person might cease to be one, and become a thing, towards which one could have no moral relations, and which might be set aside by safe means, or used as the occasion served. But the more people I know and the better I know each, the further off this possibility seems to be. I want to take up my cross and follow the true Christ, humanity; to accept the facts as they are, however bitter or severe, to be a student and a lover, but never a lawgiver. But then besides this I do look for an ideal which is at some time to be created or awakened out of potentialities—like the lady that Phantastes set free from the block of marble. Meanwhile I chip various blocks, and generally set free something; not hitherto I think quite the right one; when I do she will probably go straight off to somebody else. All this, by the way, is only theory; my practice is just like other people's."

[*To Lady Pollock.*]

"Florence, December 1870.

(Clifford was one of the English Eclipse expedition: the *Psyche*, with the expedition on board, struck on a rock near

Catania. All hands and the instruments were saved, the ship was lost.)

"No ink, no paper, no nothing—Florence, Thursday 5th. The above[1] you guess. After that somehow to Catania, some in boats and some in holy carts of the country, all over saints in bright shawls—well, if ever a shipwreck was nicely and comfortably managed, without any fuss—but I can't speak calmly about it because I am so angry at the idiots who failed to save the dear ship—alas! my heart's in the waters close by Polyphemus's eye, which we put out. At Catania, orange groves and telescopes; thence to camp at Augusta; Jonadab, son of Rechab, great fun, natives kept off camp by a white cord; 200 always to see us wash in the morning—a performance which never lost its charm—only five seconds totality free from cloud, found polarisation on moon's disk, agree with Pickering, other people successful. Then by Catania to Messina, no steamers, kept five days, Mediterranean stormy, we also at last to Naples, very bad night, everybody ill but me, and I have been out of sorts ever since. Called on Mrs. Somerville, and came on to Rome after seeing Pompeii. At Rome 2½ days, pictures, statues, Coliseum by moonlight. Both of us sneezed awfully next morning. The shops are in the streets where the Tiber left them—nice for purchasing but not so convenient for walking about. This morning arrive in Florence—Pitti palace—spent all my money, and shall get stranded between Cologne and Ostend unless I can live on one egg every other day, and thereout suck no small advantage,—be better off in Paris. Addio."

[*To Lady Pollock.*]

"Sunday, July 2, 1876.

"This comes from Oran in the west of Algeria, a sad place, with too many Spaniards in it. We came here yesterday after a long and tiresome journey from Blidah, near Algiers. The train is somewhat amusing because the carriages are open at the ends and you can sit in the air as if it was a tram-car. You have then to be careful not to

[1] A grotesque fancy sketch of the shipwreck.

let the very large grasshoppers eat you up. Playfair, the English Consul at Algiers, told us to go to Bougie to see the gorge of the Chabet; so we got a *Murray's Guide* and started off obediently. It was the steamer that had brought us from Marseilles, and the captain, who is very fond of us, gave us the ladies' cabin all to ourselves. There was on board a little Frenchman who had observed us in a restaurant at Algiers. He made great love to us, and said he wanted to marry an Englishwoman, but we think he lied a good deal about his town and country house, and his carriage and his good family. However, he woke us up in time for the diligence at Bougie, and there is no harm in him, though indeed very little else. All this expedition was undertaken for the sake of the road from Bougie to Sétif, and it was well worth it. There is a narrow rent made by the stream which winds in and out for miles among the hills; these are splendidly wooded, and rise to an enormous height on either side, while the torrent roars away down below. The road is cut in one side of the gorge. The cochon who drove the diligence tried every ruse to get us inside, that he might have a friend of his on the front seat; but we stuck to our places till the scenery was finished, and then a great rain came and drenched both of them well. Sétif is a complete French town, stuck in the middle of an African plain with its cafés and boulevards, just as if it had never lived anywhere else. We saw more Arabs there than anywhere else, and the native market pleased us much. On the way back we travelled with an Arab who had a gazelle in a basket which he was taking to somebody at Bougie; he said you might buy them occasionally in the market at Sétif for twenty-five francs: we pitied the sweet little thing, which baaed like a sheep and struggled hard to get out, but he was pacified with some bread and some flowers which I had picked, and went to sleep with his head on my arm. On waking up he saw Lucy's straw hat near him and tried to eat it. We saw the most exquisite masses of maiden-hair fern, as large as the side of a room (the masses I mean, not the fern), where the streams came down near the side of the road. Our little Frenchman was still at Bougie and came back with us in the boat. The next day but one we had an amusing experience

in the Jardin d'Acclimatation. We were taking coffee in an Arab café, and there was a boy there with an instrument of two strings, whose sounding board was made of bladder stretched over the shell of a tortoise—quite the Apollo. We asked him to play something to us, and then a flute painted red and blue was given to an old man who had been smoking quite still. I couldn't make out the music because the little Frenchman kept on chattering; but the old man gradually became excited; he had been sitting European fashion with his feet on the ground, but one of his great toes got restive and then all the others, until his shoe was too much for that foot; so he dropped the shoe and laid the foot on his knee, where it could wriggle comfortably. Then the other foot became excited and went through the same process. When his agony grew still more intense, he put one foot down and bent the shoe about with it to get more resistance. All this time the upper part of his body, except the fingers playing on the pipe, was perfectly still, and his face had a rapt expression. Meanwhile a pipe of *kif* had been got ready and was handed round, and a whiff of that seemed to calm him. I tried it also, and it brought the tears into my eyes, I was so nearly suffocated. I went to a lecture of the Arabic course which is given at Algiers in the Museum. It consisted in the translation of an article from a Constantinople paper, passages from which were written up on a black board, read out, and translated. The point of interest was the quotation from a passage in the Koran in support of the constitution, to the effect that 'the Government shall not be absolute but consultative.' The lecturer said that absolutism was a Turkish institution, not Arabic, and that the Caliphate had been a sort of republic, with a president elected for life. Also that when a certain Caliph boasted that he had never swerved from the path of justice, a soldier looked up and said 'Inshallah! (or words to that effect, meaning, By Jove!) our swords would have speedily brought you back.' This appears interesting if true. Already a Parisian scent is sold in the Moorish bazaars as a perfume of the Sultana Valide.

"We felt very much injured at only seeing two monkeys in the woods at La Chiffa the day before yesterday, but there were some green parrots on the bushes near the railway.

"To-morrow we go by a Spanish boat to Almeira, and thence by diligence or another boat to Malaga. The Spanish boat will be nasty, but it is only twelve hours or so. I am very much better, and shall be glad of a rest at Granada after this gadding about.

"*P.S.*—I wrote to Fred about the education of our infants. I am very glad we have both begun with girls, because it will be so good for the other children to have an elder sister. How very fond those kids will be of each other and of Fred and me! because girls always like their fathers best, you know. I have thought of a way to make them read and write shorthand by means of little sticks (not to whop them with but to put together on a table and make the shorthand signs). Ask G. whether she thinks they had better learn to sing on the sol-fa system; it is very amusing and seems to me more adapted for children than the other. Of course I can teach them to stand on their heads.

"We have seen the Spanish boat, which is called *La Encarnacion*, and that rightly; for it is the incarnation of everything bad."

[The *Encarnacion* aforesaid more than justified the worst expectations: the engines broke down at sea, nobody on board was competent to repair them, and the ship lay helpless till a vessel was hailed which had a French engineer on board.]

[*To F. Pollock.*]

"Malaga, Saturday, July 15, 1876.

". . . As for this country, I think it requires to be colonised by the white man. The savages would gradually die out in his presence. The mark of a degraded race is clear upon their faces; only the children have a look of honesty and intelligence, a fact which is also observed in the case of the negro, and is a case of Von Bär's law, that the development of the individual is an epitome of that of the race. It is instructive also to contrast the politeness fossilised in their language with the brutal coarseness of their present manners, of which I may some time tell you what I will not soil paper with. I think it possible that one Spaniard may

have told me the truth: he had lost so many teeth that he left out all his consonants, and I could not understand a word he said. When we went on board the *Rosario* at 11 P.M. the boatmen stood in the way to keep us from the ladder, and threatened us for the sake of another peseta over the regular charge. The steward tried to cheat me over the passage-money, but I appealed to the authorities who came on board at Malaga and got the money back (there are many strangers here). Then he made another grab in the matter of our breakfasts, in the face of a tariff hung up in the cabin. It is tiring to have to think that every man you meet is ready to be your enemy out of pure cussedness. I don't understand why one is expected to be polite and reticent about the distinction between the Hebrew piety and Roman universalism attributed to Jesus and Paul, and the ecclesiastical system which is only powerful over men's lives in Spain, the middle and south of Italy, and Greece—countries where the population consists chiefly of habitual thieves and liars, who are willing opportunely to become assassins for a small sum. I suppose it frightens people to be told that historical Christianity as a social system invariably makes men wicked when it has full swing. Then I think the sooner they are well frightened the better."

[*To F. Pollock.*]

"Washington Irving Hotel, Granada, August 3, 1876.

"You are quite right, and one ought not to despair of the Republic. These folks are kind and rather pleasant when one is *en rapport* with them, and they have a deal of small talk. We found a jolly old couple one morning when we were coming back from a hot walk in the Vega of Almeira (*vega* = cultivated plain surrounding a town which feeds it); we asked for some milk, which they had not, but they gave us a rifresco of syrup and cold water, not at all bad, and the old woman showed Lucy all over her house while the man smoked a cigarette with me. Lucy's passport is the baby's portrait, with which she gains the hearts of all the women and most of the men. What made it more surprising was

that they took us for Jews. Wilkinson, our Consul at Malaga, who has been here with his wife and daughter (awfully nice people and cheered us up no end), says that the country people are better than those in the towns.

". . . But although we have been nearly a fortnight at Granada, only one murder has been even attempted, so far as I know, within a hundred yards of the hotel. A. had been making love to B.'s wife, and so she was instructed to walk with him one evening under these lovely trees. She took occasion to borrow his sword-stick, and stuck him in the back with it while her husband fired at his head with a revolver. One ball grazed his temple, and another went in at his cheek and out of his mouth, carrying away some teeth and lip. He came round to the Spanish hotel opposite and was tied up on the doorstep; they dared not let him come in because the police are so troublesome about these affairs. The defence was that A. was a Republican, and had been a Protestant; so you see B.'s love of order was such that he did not think jealousy a sufficient justification. Wilkinson had just received a report of the last quarter of 1875; in those three months there had been only a few more than 400 murder cases in the whole province of Granada. The hot weather seems to try them; a paragraph in the Malaga paper, headed 'Estadístico Criminal de Domingo, 30,' gives 15 cases of shooting and stabbing last Sunday in Malaga, but only five appear to have been fatal. This is not assassination, but is merely an accompaniment of their somewhat boisterous conviviality; they get drunk together and then draw their knives and go in for a hacking match. It is not even quarrelling in all cases; in Granada the other day three men shut themselves up and fought till they were all dead. They might, to be sure, have disliked each other mutually all round, but I am inclined to think it was a party of pleasure rather than of business. They do not attack strangers in this way (*i.e.* with knives and revolvers), unless, of course, there is a reason for it; but when anything offends their delicate sense of propriety one cannot expect them not to show it a little. Thus they threw stones in Seville and Cordova at a lady who is now staying here, because she went into the street by herself, and they do not approve of that. I am afraid my

Norfolk jacket hurts their feelings in some way, but they have been very forbearing, and have only stoned me once, and then did not hit me. Another time a shopkeeper set his dog at me, but although this was rather alarming, with temperature 92° in the shade, it must have been meant as a joke, for Spanish dogs only bite cripples of their own species —except, indeed, the great mastiffs that are kept to bait bulls that won't fight. Of course one is not so insular as to think there is only one way of giving a welcome to the stranger; and the ''eave 'arf a brick at 'im' method is improved by variety. What generally happens is this: the grown people stop suddenly at the sight of you, and wheel round, staring with open mouths until you are out of sight; while the children, less weighted with the cares of this world, form a merry party and follow at your heels. When you go into a shop to buy anything, they crowd round the door so that it is rather difficult to get out. The beggars come inside and pull you by the arm while you are talking to the shopman. I have invented a mode of dealing with the crowd of children; it is to sit on a chair in the shop door and tickle their noses with the end of my cane. I fear that universal sense of personal dignity which is so characteristic of this country is in some way injured by my familiarity; the more so as it cannot be resented, for the other end of my cane is loaded, and I do not try it on in a macadamised street. Anyhow they go a little way off. In Malaga the people seemed more accustomed to the sight of strangers, and contented themselves with shouting abusive epithets. . . . Everybody says there will be a revolution before long. . . . If Castelar returns to power, I hope among other little reforms that he will prevent the post-office officials from stealing letters for the sake of the stamps on them; it is a great interruption to business and must be a laborious way of earning money. One of them was caught in Malaga because a packet of letters which he had thrown into the sea was accidentally fished up; but he was shielded from punishment by the authorities.

"We are very happy here, with a Swiss cook and an Italian landlord. There are some English, Germans, and Italians staying over the way, and in a few minutes we can

be among the memorials of a better time. I am too tired now to talk about the Alhambra, but it seems to me to want that touch of barbarism which hangs about all Gothic buildings. One thinks in a Cathedral that since somebody has chosen to make it it is no doubt a very fine thing in its way; but that, being a sane man, one would not make anything like it for any reasonable purpose. But the Alhambra gives one the feeling that one would wish to build something very like it, *mutatis mutandis*, and the more like it the more reasonable the purpose was. Moreover, I think it must be beautiful, if anything ever was; but then I have no taste."

Clifford's verses, as has been said, were mostly fragmentary or intimate. Two songs, however, may here be given, of which one is unpublished elsewhere.

Song from "The Little People."

THIS is the song that Daisy sang; and it is about a water-lily bud that saw a reflection of herself in the surface of the water while she was under it.

You grow through the water apace, lily;
  You'll soon be as tall as the pond,
There is fresh hope high in your face, lily,
  Your white face so firm and so fond.
    Ah, lily, white lily,
      What can you see
    Growing to meet lily
      Graciously?

There's a face looks down from the sky, lily;
  It grows to me dim from above.
If I ever can reach me so high, lily,
  I shall kiss—ah! the face of my love.
    Ah, lily, white lily,
      That can I see,
    Giving me light, lily,
      Lovingly.

The lily-bud met with her mate, ah me!
  And her flower came through to the air,
And her bright face floated in state, ah me!
  But the shadow-love never was there!
    Ah, lily, great lily,
      Queenly and free,
    Float out your fate, lily,
      Friendlessly.

Verses sent to George Eliot with a Copy of "The Little People."[1]

Baby drew a little house,
  Drew it all askew;
Mother saw the crooked door
  And the window too.

Mother-heart, whose wide embrace
  Holds the hearts of men,
Grows with all our growing hopes,
  Gives them birth again,

Listen to this baby-talk;
  'Tisn't wise or clear;
But what baby-sense it has
  Is for you to hear.

The bibliographical sketch of Clifford's work which formed part of this Introduction in the first edition is considered to have served its turn, and is not now reproduced. The editors have not received any later information capable of giving definite results.

[1] Now (1886) first printed.

LECTURES AND ESSAYS

ON SOME OF THE CONDITIONS OF MENTAL DEVELOPMENT[1]

IF you will carefully consider what it is that you have done most often during this day, I think you can hardly avoid being drawn to this conclusion: that you have really done nothing else from morning to night but *change your mind.* You began by waking up. Now that act of waking is itself a passage of the mind from an unconscious to a conscious state, which is about the greatest change that the mind can undergo. Your first idea upon waking was probably that you were going to rest for some time longer; but this rapidly passed away, and was changed into a desire for action, which again transformed itself into volition, and produced the physical act of getting up. From this arose a series of new sensations; that is to say, a change of mind from the state of not perceiving or feeling these things to the state of feeling them. And so afterwards. Did you perform any deliberate action? There was the change of mind from indecision to decision, from decided desire to volition, from volition to act. Did you perform an impulsive action? Here there is the more sudden and conspicuous change marked by the word *impulsive;* as if your mind were a shuttlecock, which has its entire state of motion suddenly changed by the *impulse* of the battledore: conceive the shuttlecock descending quite regularly with a gentle corkscrew motion—the battledore intervenes—instantaneously the shuttlecock flies off in a totally unexpected direction, having apparently no relation to its previous motion; and you will see how very apt and expressive a simile you use when you speak of certain people as having

[1] Discourse delivered at the Royal Institution, March 6, 1868.

an *impulsive temperament*. Have you felt happy or miserable? It was a change in your way of looking at things in general; a transition, as Spinoza says, from a lower to a higher state of perfection, or *vice versâ*. In a word, whatever you have done, or felt, or thought, you will find upon reflection that you could not possibly be conscious of anything else than a change of mind.

But then, you will be inclined to say, this change is only a small thing after all. It does not penetrate beyond the surface of the mind, so to speak. Your character, the general attitude which you take up with regard to circumstances outside, remains the same throughout the day: even for great numbers of days. You can distinguish between individual people to such an extent that you have a general idea of how a given person will act when placed in given circumstances. Now for this to be the case, it is clear that each person must have retained his individual character for a considerable period, so as to enable you to take note of his behaviour in different cases, to frame some sort of general rules about it, and from them to calculate what he would do in any supposed given case. But is it true that this character or mark by which you know one person from another is absolutely fixed and unvarying? Do you not speak of the character of a child growing into that of a man: of a man in new circumstances being quite a different person from what he was before? Is it not regarded as the greatest stroke of art in a novelist that he should be able not merely to draw a character at any given time, but also to sketch the growth of it through the changing circumstances of life? In fact, if you consider a little further, you will see that it is not even true that a character remains the same for a single day: every circumstance, however trivial, that in any way affects the mind, leaves its mark, infinitely small it may be, imperceptible in itself, but yet more indelible than the stone-carved hieroglyphics of Egypt. And the sum of all these marks is precisely what we call the character, which is thus itself a history of the entire previous life of the individual; which is therefore continually being added to, continually growing, continually in a state of change.

Let me illustrate this relation by the example of the

motion of a planet. People knew, ages and ages ago, that a planet was a thing constantly moving about from one place to another; and they made continual attempts to discover the *character* of its motion, so that by observing the general way in which it went on, they might be able to tell where it would be at any particular time. And they invented most ingenious and complicated ways of expressing this character:

"Cycle on epicycle, orb on orb,"

till a certain very profane king of Portugal, who was learning astronomy, said that if *he* had been present at the making of the Solar System, he would have tendered some good advice. But the fact was that they were all wrong, and the real case was by no means so complicated as they supposed it to be. Kepler was the first to discover what was the real character of a planetary orbit; and he did this in the case of the planet Mars. He found that this planet moved in an ellipse or oval curve round the sun which was situated rather askew near the middle. But upon further observation, this was found to be not quite exact; the orbit itself is revolving slowly round the sun, it is getting elongated and then flattened in turns, and even the plane in which the motion takes place sways slowly from side to side of its mean position. Thus you see that although the elliptic character of the motion does represent it with considerable exactness for a long time together, yet this character itself must be regarded as incessantly in a state of gradual change. But the great point of the comparison—to aid in the conception of which, in fact, I have used the comparison at all—is this: that for no two seconds together does any possible ellipse *accurately* represent the orbit. It is impossible for the planet to move a single inch on its way, without the oval having slightly turned round, become slightly elongated or shortened, and swayed slightly out of its plane; so that the oval which accurately represented the motion at one end of the inch would not accurately represent the motion at the other end. The application is obvious. In like manner it is true that the character which will *roughly* represent the law of a man's actions for some considerable time, will not *accurately* represent that law for two seconds together. No action can

take place in accordance with the character without modifying the character itself; just as no motion of a planet could take place along its orbit without a simultaneous change in the orbit itself.

But I will go even further. Historians are accustomed to say that at any given point of a nation's history there is a certain general type which prevails among the various changes of character which different men undergo. There is some kind of law, they say, which regulates the slow growth of each character from childhood to age; so that if you compared together all the biographies you would find a sort of family likeness suggesting that some common force had acted upon them all to make these changes. This force they call the Spirit of the Age. The spirit, then, which determines all the changes of character that take place, which is, therefore, more persistent than character itself,—is this, at last, a thing absolutely fixed, permanent, free from fluctuations? No: for the entire history of humanity is an account of its continual changes. It tells how there were great waves of change which spread from country to country, and swept over whole continents, and passed away; to be succeeded by similar waves. No history can be philosophical which does not trace the origin and course of these: things far more important than all the kings and rulers and battles and dates which some people imagine to be history.

To recapitulate. The mind is changing so constantly that we only know it by its changes. The law of these changes, which we call character, is also a thing which is continually changing, though more slowly. And that law of force which governs all the changes of character in a given people at a given time, which we call the Spirit of the Age, this also changes, though more slowly still.

Now it is a belief which, whether true or not, we are all of us constantly acting upon, that these changes have some kind of fixed relation to the surrounding circumstances. In every part of our conduct towards other people we proceed constantly upon the assumption that what they will do is to a certain extent, and in some way or other, dependent upon what we do. If I want a man to treat me with kindness and respect, I have to behave in a certain way towards him.

If I want to produce a more special and defined effect, I have recourse to threats or promises. And even if I want to produce a certain change of mind in myself, I proceed upon the same assumption that in some way or other, and to a certain extent, I am dependent on the surrounding circumstances. People tie knots in their handkerchiefs to make themselves remember things; they also read definite books with a view of putting themselves into definite mental states or moods; and attempts are constantly made to produce even a further and more permanent effect, to effect an alteration in character. What else is the meaning of schools, prisons, reformatories, and the like? Some have actually gone further than this: there have not been wanting enterprising and far-seeing statesmen who have attempted to control and direct the Spirit of the Age. Now in all these cases in which we use means to an end, we are clearly proceeding on the assumption that there is some fixed relation of cause and effect, in virtue of which the means we adopt may be antecedently expected to bring about the end we are in pursuit of. We are all along assuming, in fact, that changes of mind are connected by some fixed laws or relations with surrounding circumstances. Now this being so, since every mind is thus continually changing its character for better or worse, and since the character of a race or nation is subject to the same constant change; since also these changes are connected in some definite manner with surrounding circumstances; the question naturally presents itself, What is that attitude of mind which is likely to change for the better? All the individuals of a race are changing in character, all changing in different directions, with every possible degree of divergence; also the average character itself, the Spirit of the Age, is either changing in some one definite direction, or tending to split into two different characters: an individual, therefore, may be going with the race or dropping out of it; a portion of the race may be going right or wrong. Let us suppose that some portion of the race is going right and improving: the question is, In what way are we to distinguish that individual who is improving with the race, from the others who are either dropping out of the march altogether or going wrong?

Now what I have proposed to myself to do to-night is this, merely to suggest a method by which this question may ultimately be answered. I shall also endeavour afterwards to point out what I conceive to be one or two results of this method: but this part will be of minor importance; the results depend upon my application of the method, can be only partially true, and may be wholly false; the method itself I believe to be altogether a true one, and one which must ultimately lead to the correct results.

It consists in observing and making use of a certain analogy, namely, the analogy between the mind and the visible forms of organic life. You know that every animal and every plant is constantly going through a series of changes. The flower closes at night and opens in the morning; trees are bare in winter and covered with leaves in summer; while the growth of every organism from birth to maturity cannot fail to strike you as a forcible illustration of the gradual change of character in the human mind. In fact, it is the peculiarity of living things not merely that they change under the influence of surrounding circumstances, but that any change which takes place in them is not lost but retained, and, as it were, built into the organism to serve as the foundation for future actions. If you cause any distortion in the growth of a tree and make it crooked, whatever you may do afterwards to make the tree straight, the mark of your distortion is there; it is absolutely indelible; it has become part of the tree's nature, and will even be transmitted in some small degree to the seeds. Suppose, however, that you take a piece of inanimate matter—a lump of gold, say, which is yellow and quite hard—you melt it, and it becomes liquid and green. Here an enormous change has been produced; but let it cool; it returns to the solid and yellow condition, and looks precisely as before—there is no trace whatever of the actions that have been going on. No one can tell by examining a piece of gold how often it has been melted and cooled in geologic ages by changes of the earth's crust, or even in the last year by the hand of man. Any one who cuts down an oak can tell by the rings in its trunk how many times winter has frozen it into widowhood and summer has warmed it into life. A living being must always contain

within itself the history not merely of its own existence but of all its ancestors. Seeing then that in its continual changes and in the preservation of the records of those changes every organism resembles the mind, so that to this extent they belong to the same order of phenomena, may we not reasonably suppose that the laws of change are alike, if not identical, in the two cases? This is of course a mere supposition, not deducible from anything which we have yet observed, which requires therefore to be tested by facts. I shall endeavour to show that the supposition is well founded; that such laws of change as have been observed in animals and plants do equally hold good in the case of the mind. I shall then endeavour to find out what we mean by higher and lower in the two cases, and to show, in fact, that we mean much the same thing. Supposing all this to have been done, the question will have been stated in a form which it is possible to answer. I shall then make an attempt to give part of the answer to it.

In investigating the laws of change of organic beings I shall make use of what is called the Evolution-hypothesis, which, as applied to this subject, is much the same thing as the Darwinian theory, though it is not by any means tied down to the special views of Mr. Darwin. But I shall use this merely as an hypothesis; and the validity of the method of investigation which I have suggested is entirely independent of the truth of that hypothesis. If you will pardon me for a short time, I should like to illustrate somewhat further what I mean by this.

When Kepler found out what was the form of the orbit described by the planet Mars, he thought that the planet was driven by some force which acted in the direction in which the planet was going. I have known people who learned a certain amount of astronomy for nautical purposes, whose ideas were very similar to those of Kepler. They thought that the sun's rotation was what caused the planets to revolve about him, just as if you spin a teaspoon in the middle of a cup of tea, it makes the bubbles go round and round. But Newton discovered that the real state of the case was far different. If you fasten a ball on to the end of an elastic string, and then swing it round and round, you can make the

ball describe an orbit very similar to that of the planet, so that your hand is not quite in the centre of it. Now here the pulling force does not act in the direction in which the ball is going, but always in the direction of your hand, and yet the ball revolves about your hand and never actually comes to it. Newton supposed that the case of the planet was similar to that of the ball; that it was always pulled in the direction of the sun, and that this attraction or pulling of the sun produced the revolution of the planet, in the same way that the traction or pulling of the elastic string produces the revolution of the ball. *What* there is between the sun and the planet that makes each of them pull the other, Newton did not know; nobody knows to this day; and all we are now able to assert positively is that the known motion of the planet is precisely what would be produced if it were fastened to the sun by an elastic string, having a certain law of elasticity. Now observe the nature of this discovery, the greatest in its consequences that has ever yet been made in physical science:—

I. It begins with an hypothesis, by supposing that there is an analogy between the motion of a planet and the motion of a ball at the end of a string.

II. Science becomes independent of the hypothesis, for we merely use it to investigate the properties of the motion, and do not trouble ourselves further about the cause of it.

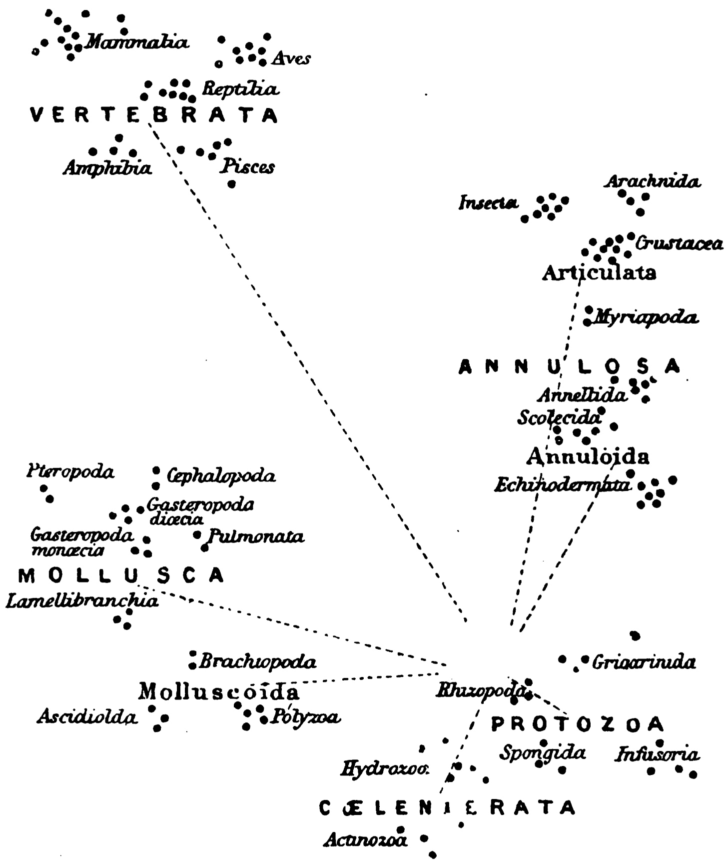
I will take another example. It has been supposed for a long time that light consists of waves transmitted through an extremely thin ethereal jelly that pervades all space; it is easy to see the very rapid tremor which spreads through a jelly when you strike it at one point. From this hypothesis we can deduce laws of the propagation of light, and of the way in which different rays interfere with one another, and the laws so deduced are abundantly confirmed by experiment. But here also science kicks down the ladder by which she has risen. In order to explain the phenomena of light it is not necessary to assume anything more than a periodical oscillation between two states at any given point of space. *What* the two states are nobody knows; and the only thing we can assert with any degree of probability is that they are *not* states of merely mechanical displacement like the tremor of a

jelly; for the phenomena of fluorescence appear to negative this supposition. Here again, then, the same two remarks may be made. The scientific discovery appears first as the hypothesis of an analogy; and science tends to become independent of the hypothesis.

The theory of heat is another example. If you hold one end of a poker in the fire, the other end becomes hot, even though it is not exposed to the rays of the fire. Fourier, in trying to find the laws of this spread of heat from one part of a body to another part, made the hypothesis that heat was a fluid which flowed from the hot end into the cold as water flows through a pipe. From this hypothesis the laws of conduction were deduced; but in the process it was found that the very same laws would flow from other hypotheses. In fact, whatever can be explained by the motion of a fluid can be equally well explained either by the attraction of particles or by the strains of a solid substance; the very same mathematical calculations result from the three distinct hypotheses; and science, though completely independent of all three, may yet choose one of them as serving to link together different trains of physical inquiry.

Now the same two remarks which may be made in all these cases apply equally to the evolution-hypothesis. It is grounded on a supposed analogy between the growth of a species and the growth of an individual. It supposes, for instance, that the race of crabs has gone through much the same sort of changes as every crab goes through now, in the course of its formation in the egg; changes represented by its pristine shape utterly unlike what it afterwards attains, and by its gradual metamorphosis and formation of shell and claws. By this analogy the laws of change are suggested, and these are afterwards checked and corrected by the facts. But as before, science tends to become independent of hypothesis. The laws of change are established for present and finitely distant times; but they give us no positive information about the origin of things. So, therefore, if I make use of this hypothesis to represent to you the laws of change that are deduced from it, you will see that the truth of those laws and the conclusions which may be drawn from them are in no way dependent on the truth of the hypothesis.

There are certain errors current about the nature of the evolution-theory which I wish particularly to guard against. In the first place it is very commonly supposed that all existing animals can be arranged in one continuous chain, from the



highest to the lowest; that the transition is gradual all through, and that nature makes no jumps. This idea was worked out into a system of classification by Linnæus, and survived among

naturalists until the time of Cuvier. "They were bent," says Agassiz, "upon establishing one continual uniform series to embrace all animals, between the links of which it was supposed there were no unequal intervals." . . . "They called their system *la chaîne des êtres.*" The holders of the Darwinian theory are then supposed to believe that all these forms grew out of one another, beginning with the lowest and ending with the highest; so that any one animal of the series has in the course of its evolution passed through all the lower forms. And as the species is thus supposed to have grown up through the chain, and the lower species to be continually growing into the higher, so it is imagined that every individual creature, in the course of its production, passes through the lower adult forms; that a chicken, for instance, while it is being formed in the egg, becomes in succession a snail, an insect, a fish, and a reptile, before it becomes a bird. Now that all these ideas are entirely wrong, I need hardly remind you; and I have mentioned them in order that there may be no mistake about the theory which I am using as an analogy. So far is it from being possible to arrange existing organisms in a single line or chain, that they cannot be adequately represented even in the manner which is attempted in the preceding diagram, taken from Spencer's *Principles of Biology*, vol. i. p. 303.

In the next place, no existing organism could possibly grow into any other. What is really supposed is this:—that if you went back a million years or so, and made a picture like this one, representing the forms that existed then, no single spot which is covered in one figure would be covered in the other; but the general arrangement would be very similar, except that all the groups would be nearer to the centre or radiant point, and therefore nearer to each other. And if you made a third picture, representing the state of things another million years or so further back, then they would be still nearer together; and at a distance of time too vast to be represented, they would all converge into this radiant point. So the theory is that at that stupendous distance of time all species were alike, mere specks of jelly; that they gradually diverged from each other and got more and more different, till at last they attained the almost infinite variety that we now find. If you will imagine a tree with spreading branches,

like an oak; then the outside leaves at any time may be taken to represent all the existing species at a given time. It is quite impossible to arrange them in any serial order. As the tree grows, the outer leaves diverge, and get further from the trunk and from each other; and two extremities that have once diverged never converge and grow together again. But even this simile is insufficient; for species may diverge in a far greater variety of directions than the branches of a tree. Space has not dimensions enough to represent the true state of the case.

Von Baer's doctrine of development is illustrated by the same figure. If you took embryos of polypes, and snails, and cuttle-fish, and insects, and crabs, and fish, and frogs, and if you could watch their gradual growth into these several animals: at first they would be all absolutely alike and indistinguishable. Then, after a little while, you would find that they might be sorted off into these four great classes. Afterwards these groups might be divided into smaller groups, representing orders; then these into families and genera; last of all would appear those differences which would separate them into species.

The evolution-hypothesis, then, represents a *race* of animals or plants as a thing slowly changing: and it also represents these changes as connected by fixed laws with the action of the surrounding circumstances, or, as it is customary to say, the environment. Now the action of the environment on a race is of two kinds, direct and indirect. That part which is called direct action is very easily understood. There is no difficulty in seeing how changes of climate might produce changes in the colour of the skin, or how new conditions which necessitated the greater use of any organ would lead to the increase of that organ, as we know that muscles may be made to swell with exercise; and changes thus made habitual would in time be inherited. But the indirect action of the environment, which is called natural selection, is still more important. The mode of its operation may be seen from an example. There are two butterflies in South America, nearly resembling one another in form, but one of which has a very sweet taste and is liked by the birds, while the other is bitter and distasteful to them. Now suppose that, for some reason

or other, sweet butterflies were occasionally produced with markings similar to the bitter ones, these, being mistaken by the birds for bitter ones, would run less chance of being eaten, and therefore more chance of surviving and leaving offspring. If this peculiarity of marking is at all inheritable, then the number of sweet butterflies with bitter marks will in the next generation be greater in proportion to the whole number than before; and, as this process goes on, the sweet butterflies which retain their distinguishing marks will be all weeded out by the birds, and the entire species will have copied the markings of the bitter species. This has actually taken place: the one species has mimicked the markings of the other. Here we see the working of Natural Selection. Any variation in an individual which gives him an advantage in the struggle for life is more likely to be transmitted to offspring than any other variation, because the individual is more likely to survive; so that nature gradually weeds out all those forms which are not suited to the environment, and thus tends to produce equilibrium between the species and its surrounding circumstances. Changes, then, are produced in a species by the selection of advantageous changes which happen to be made in individuals. Now there are three kinds of change that are produced in individuals: change of size, or growth; change of structure, that is to say, change in the shape and arrangement of the parts, as when the cartilaginous skeleton of an infant becomes hardened into bone; and change of function, that is to say, change in the use which is made of any part of the organism. I have one or two remarks to make about the first of these, namely, growth, or change of size. Every organism is continually taking in matter through the external surface to feed the inside. A certain quantity of this is needed to make up for the waste that is continually going on. But let us suppose, to begin with, that an organism has more surface than it absolutely wants to make up for waste, then a certain portion of the assimilated matter, or food, will remain over, and the organism will increase in size. But, you say, if this is all that is meant by growth why does it not go on for ever? The explanation is very simple. I take this cube, which has six sides, each a square inch; let us suppose it to represent an animal, and imagine, to begin with, that

two of the sides by themselves are capable of feeding the whole mass, then the nutrition taken in by the other four sides is left over, and the mass must increase in size. Imagine it now grown to twice the linear dimensions, that is to say, to a cube every side of which is two inches. The mass to be fed is now eight times what it was, while the surface is only four times as great; of the twenty-four square inches of surface sixteen are taken up with feeding the mass, while only eight, or one-third, are left to supply the materials for growth. Still there is an overplus, and the organism will grow. Let it now acquire three times its original height and breadth and thickness, the mass is twenty-seven times as great, and the surface only nine times: that is to say, while there are twenty-seven cubic inches to be fed, there are just fifty-four square inches to feed them. There is no longer any overplus; the organism will stop growing. And it is a general rule that, in any case, when a thing grows its mass increases much faster than its surface. However much, therefore, the feeding power of the surface may be in excess to begin with, the mass must inevitably catch it up, and the growth will stop.

Now the changes of an individual mind may be reduced to the same three types:—

Growth.

Change of structure.

Change of function.

First, then, what is the growth of the mind? It is the acquisition of new knowledge; not merely of that which is required to make up for our wonderful power of forgetting, for oblivion is really a far more marvellous thing than memory; but of a certain overplus which goes to increase the entire mass of our mental experiences. Now I do not know whether there is any race between surface and mass here as in the case of an organism; but it is certainly true that whereas in childhood the amount we forget is very little, and our powers of acquisition preponderate immensely over our powers of oblivion; as we grow up, the powers of oblivion gain rapidly upon the acquisitive ones, and finally catch them up; the growth ceases as soon as this balance is attained. So that in this first law, you see, there is an entire analogy between the two cases.

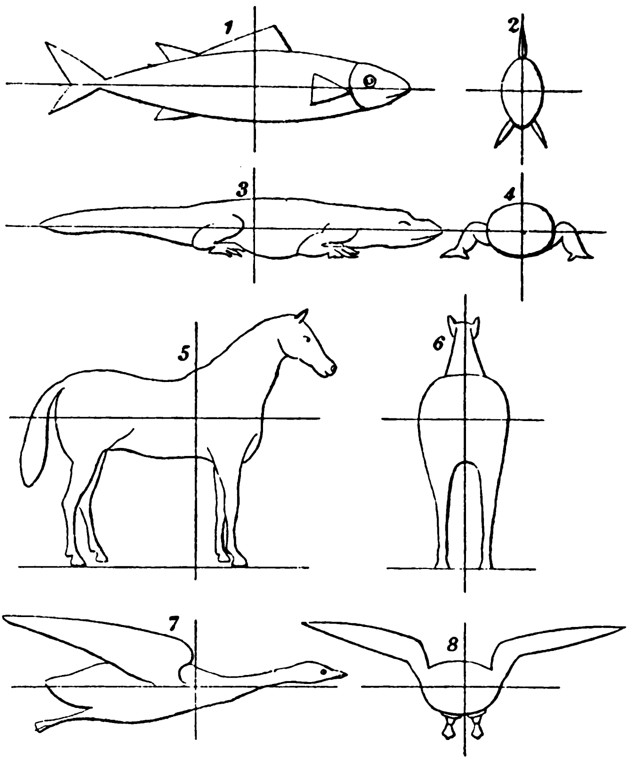
In the next place, the mind experiences changes of structure; that is to say, changes in the shape and arrangement of its parts. Ideas which were only feebly connected become aggregated into a close and compact whole. The ideas of several different qualities, for instance, which we never thought of as connected with each other, are brought together by the qualities being found to exist in the same object. In this way we form conceptions of things, which gradually get so compact that we cannot even in thought separate them into their component parts. Portions of our knowledge which we held as distinct are connected together by scientific theories; images which were scattered all about are bound up into living bundles by the artist, and so we find them rearranged.

Lastly, changes of function take place. Everybody knows how the mental faculties open out and become visible as a child grows up. Men acquire faculties by practice. And without any conscious seeking, you must know how often we wake up as it were and find ourselves gifted with new powers. We have found evidence then of the existence of our three types of change,—growth, structure, and function.

The actions therefore which go on between the environment and the individual may be reduced to the same three types in the case of the mind as in the case of any visible organism. Being somewhat encouraged by this result, let us go back to our original question. What is that attitude of mind which is likely to change for the better? What is the meaning of *better?*

Although it is quite impossible to arrange all existing organisms in a serial chain, yet we certainly have a general notion of higher and lower. A bird we regard as higher than a fish, and a dog is higher than a snake. And if we return to our illustration of the tree, we shall see that at every point, at any given time, there is a definite direction of development. So that though we might not be able to say which of two co-existing organisms was the higher, yet, by comparing a species with itself at a slightly later time, we might say whether it had degenerated or improved. Now by examining various cases, we shall find that there are six marks of improvement:—

The parts of the organism get more different.
The parts of the organism get more connected.
The organism gets more different from the environment.
The organism gets more connected with the environment.
The organism gets more different from other individuals.
The organism gets more connected with other individuals.



The processes in fact which result in development are made up of *differentiation* and *integration;* differentiation means the making things to be different, integration means the binding them together into a whole; these are applied to the parts of the organism, the organism and surrounding

nature, the organism and other organisms. Differentiation of parts is illustrated by the figure on the preceding page. [Spencer's *Principles of Biology*, vol. ii. p. 187.]

Integration of parts means the connected play of them; so that one being affected the rest are affected. Differentiation from the environment takes place in weight, composition, and temperature. A polype is little else than sea-water, which it inhabits; a fish is several degrees of temperature above it, and made of quite different materials; till at last a mammal is 70° or 80° above the surrounding matter, and made of still more different materials. Integration with the environment means close correspondence with it; actions of the environment are followed by corresponding actions of the animal. Differentiation from other organisms means individuality; integration with them sociality.

In a similar way we have a sort of general notion of higher and lower stages of mental development. I will endeavour to show that this general notion resolves itself into a measure of the extent to which the same six processes have gone on, namely:—

Separation of parts,
Connection of parts,
Separation from the environment,
Closer correspondence with the environment,
Separation from other individuals,
Sociality.

The only conception we can form of a purely unconscious state is one in which all is exactly alike, or rather, in which there is no difference.

> There is not one thing with another,
> But Evil saith to Good: My brother,
> My brother, I am one with thee:
> They shall not strive nor cry for ever:
> No man shall choose between them: never
> Shall this thing end and that thing be.

The first indication of consciousness is a perception of difference. The child's eyes follow the light. Immediately this colourless, homogeneous universe splits up into two parts, the light part and the dark part. A line is drawn across it, it is made heterogeneous, and the first thing that

exists is a distinction. Then other lines are drawn; appearance is separated into white, black, blue, red, and so on. This is the first process, the differentiation of the parts of consciousness. But by and by a number of these lines of distinction are found to enclose a definite space; they assume relations to one another; the lines white, round, light, capable of being thrown at people, include the conception of a ball; this gains coherence, becomes one, a thing, holding itself together not only separated from the rest of consciousness, but connected in itself into a distinct whole, integrated. Here we have the second process. And throughout our lives the same two processes go hand in hand; whatever we perceive is a line of demarcation between two different things; we can be conscious of nothing but a separation, a change in passing from one thing to another. And these different lines of demarcation are constantly connecting themselves together, marking out portions of our consciousness as complete wholes, and making them cohere. Just as a sculptor clears away from a block of marble now this piece and now that, making every time a separation between what is to be kept and what is to be chipped off, till at last all these chippings manifest the connection that ran through them, and the finished statue stands out as a complete whole, a positive thing made up of contradictory negations: so is a conception formed in the mind.

And this conception, when it is thus made into a whole, integrated, by an act of the mind, what does it immediately appear to be? Why, something outside of ourselves, a real thing, different from us. This is the third process, the process of *differentiation* from the environment. This is beautifully described by Cuvier, who pictures the first man wandering about in ecstasies at the discovery of so many new parts of himself; till gradually he learns that they are not himself, but things outside. This notion, then, of a thing being real, existing external to ourselves, is due to the active power of the mind which regards it as one, which binds together all its boundaries. And this goes on as long as we live. Constantly we frame to ourselves more complicated combinations of ideas, and by giving them unity make them real. And, at the same time, the converse

process is equally active. While more and more of our ideas are put outside of us and made real, our minds are continually growing more and more into accordance with the nature of external things; our ideas become truer, more conformable to the facts; and at the same time they answer more surely and completely to changes in the environment; a new experience is more rapidly and more completely connected with the sum of previous experiences. But there is more than this. The action of these two laws taken together does in fact amount to the creation of new senses. Men of science, for example, have to deal with extremely abstract and general conceptions. By constant use and familiarity, these, and the relations between them, become just as real and external as the ordinary objects of experience; and the perception of new relations among them is so rapid, the correspondence of the mind to external circumstances so great, that a real scientific sense is developed, by which things are perceived as immediately and truly as I see you now. Poets and painters and musicians also are so accustomed to put outside of them the idea of beauty, that it becomes a real external existence, a thing which they see with spiritual eyes, and then describe to you, but by no means create, any more than we seem to create these ideas of table and forms and light, which we put together long ago. There is no scientific discoverer, no poet, no painter, no musician, who will not tell you that he found ready-made his discovery or poem or picture—that it came to him from outside, and that he did not consciously create it from within. And there is reason to think that these senses or insights are things which actually increase among mankind. It is certain, at least, that the scientific sense is immensely more developed now than it was three hundred years ago; and though it may be impossible to find any absolute standard of art, yet it is acknowledged that a number of minds which are subject to artistic training will tend to arrange themselves under certain great groups, and that the members of each group will give an independent yet consentient testimony about artistic questions. And this arrangement into schools, and the definiteness of the conclusions reached in each, are on the increase, so that here, it would seem, are actually two new

senses, the scientific and the artistic, which the mind is now in the process of forming for itself. There are two remaining marks of development: differentiation from surrounding minds, which is the growth of individuality; and closer correspondence with them, wider sympathies, more perfect understanding of others. These, you will instantly admit, are precisely the twin characteristics of a man of genius. He is clearly distinct from the people that surround him, that is how you recognise him; but then this very distinction must be such as to bind him still closer to them, extend and intensify his sympathies, make him want their wants, rejoice over their joys, be cast down by their sorrows. Just as the throat is a complicated thing, quite different from the rest of the body, but yet is always ready to cry when any other part is hurt.

We have thus got a tolerably definite notion of what mental development means. It is a process of simultaneous differentiation and integration which goes on in the parts of consciousness, between the mind and external things, between the mind and other minds. And the question I want answered is, What attitude of mind tends to further these processes?

I have now done all that it was my business to do, namely, I have stated the question in a form in which it is possible to answer it. There is no doubt that by a careful study of the operations of nature we shall be able to find out what actions of an organism are favourable to its higher development. Having formulated these into a law, we shall be able to interpret this law with reference to the mind.

But now I am going to venture on a partial answer to this question. What I am going to say is mere speculation, and requires to be verified by facts.

The changes which take place in an organism are of two kinds. Some are produced by the direct action of things outside, and these are to a great extent similar to the changes which we observe in inanimate things. When a tree is bent over by the wind and gets ultimately fixed in this position, the change is in no way different from that which takes place when we bend a wire and it does not entirely return to its former straightness. Other changes are produced by the

spontaneous action of that store of force which by the process of growth is necessarily accumulated within the organism. Such are all those apparently disconnected motions which make up the great distinction between living things and dead. Now my speculation is, that advantageous permanent changes are always produced by the spontaneous action of the organism, and not by the direct action of the environment. This, I think, is most clear when we take an extreme case. Let us suppose a race of animals that never had any changes produced by their spontaneous activity. The race must at a certain time have a definite amount of plasticity, that is, a definite power of adapting itself to altered circumstances by changing in accordance with them. Every permanent effect of the environment upon them is a crystallisation of some part which before was plastic; for the part must have been plastic for the effect to be produced at all; and as the effect is permanent, the part has to that extent lost in plasticity. As this goes on, the race of animals will bind up in itself more and more of its history, but will in that process lose the capability of change which it once had; at last it will be quite fixed, crystallised, incapable of change. Then it must inevitably die out in time; for the environment must change sooner or later, and then the race, incapable of changing in accordance with it, must be killed off. On the other hand, any addition to the organism which is made by its spontaneous activity is an addition of something which has not yet been acted upon by the environment, which is therefore plastic, capable of indefinite modification, in fact, an increase of power. The bending of a tree by the wind is a positive disadvantage to it if the wind should ever happen to blow from the other side. But when a plant, for no apparent reason, grows long hairs to its seed—the material for which may have been accidentally supplied by the environment, while its use in this way is a spontaneous action of the plant—this is a definite increase of power; for the new organ may be modified in any conceivable way to suit the exigencies of the environment, may cling to the sides of beasts, and so help the distribution of the seed, or effect the same object by being caught by the wind. Activity, in fact, is the first condition of development. A very good example of this occurs in Professor Huxley's lizards,

of which you heard two or three weeks ago.[1] About the time marked by the Primary strata it appears that there was a race of lizards, thirty feet high, that walked on their hind legs, balancing themselves by their long tails, and having three toes like birds. This race diverged in three directions. Some of them yielded to the immediate promptings of the environment, found it convenient to go on all fours and eat fish; they became crocodiles. Others took to exercising their fore-legs violently, developed three long fingers, and became birds. The rest were for a long while undecided whether they would use their arms or their legs most; at length they diverged, and some became pterodactyles and others kangaroos. For Mr. Seeley, of Cambridge, has discovered marsupial bones in pterodactyles; that is to say, bones like those which were supposed peculiar to the order of mammals to which the kangaroo belongs.

Assuming now that this law is true, and that the development of an organism proceeds from its activities rather than its passivities, let us apply it to the mind. What, in fact, are the conditions which must be satisfied by a mind in process of upward development, so far as this law gives them?

They are two; one positive, the other negative. The positive condition is that the mind should act rather than assimilate, that its attitude should be one of creation rather than of acquisition. If scientific, it must not rest in the contemplation of existing theories, or the learning of facts by rote; it must act, create, make fresh powers, discover new facts and laws. And, if the analogy is true, it must create things not immediately useful. I am here putting in a word for those abstruse mathematical researches which are so often abused for having no obvious physical application. The fact is that the most useful parts of science have been investigated for the sake of truth, and not for their usefulness. A new branch of mathematics, which has sprung up in the last twenty years, was denounced by the Astronomer-Royal before the University of Cambridge as doomed to be forgotten, on account of its uselessness. Now it turns out that the reason

[1] ["On the animals which are most nearly intermediate between birds and reptiles," *Roy. Inst. Proc. V.* 1869, p. 278.]

why we cannot go further in our investigations of molecular action is that we do not know enough of this branch of mathematics. If the mind is artistic, it must not sit down in hopeless awe before the monuments of the great masters, as if heights so lofty could have no heaven beyond them. Still less must it tremble before the conventionalism of one age, when its mission may be to form the whole life of the age succeeding. No amount of erudition or technical skill or critical power can absolve the mind from the necessity of creating, if it would grow. And the power of creation is not a matter of static ability, so that one man absolutely can do these things and another man absolutely cannot; it is a matter of habits and desires. The results of things follow not from their state but from their tendency. The first condition then of mental development is that the attitude of the mind should be creative rather than acquisitive: or, as it has been well said, that intellectual food should go to form mental muscle and not mental fat.

The negative condition is plasticity: the avoidance of all crystallisation as is immediately suggested by the environment. A mind that would grow must let no ideas become permanent except such as lead to action. Towards all others it must maintain an attitude of absolute receptivity; admitting all, being modified by all, but permanently biassed by none. To become crystallised, fixed in opinion and mode of thought, is to lose the great characteristic of life, by which it is distinguished from inanimate nature: the power of adapting itself to circumstances.

This is true even more of the race. There are nations in the East so enslaved by custom that they seem to have lost all power of change except the capability of being destroyed. Propriety, in fact, is the crystallisation of a race. And if we consider that a race, in proportion as it is plastic and capable of change, may be regarded as young and vigorous, while a race which is fixed, persistent in form, unable to change, is as surely effete, worn out, in peril of extinction; we shall see, I think, the immense importance to a nation of checking the growth of conventionalities. It is quite possible for conventional rules of action and conventional habits of thought to get such power that progress is impossible, and

the nation only fit to be improved away. In the face of such a danger *it is not right to be proper.*

NOTE.—The following letter, published in the *Pall Mall Gazette* of June 24, 1868, should be read in connection with this Discourse.

"Sir—I ask for a portion of your space to say something about a lecture, 'On some of the Conditions of Mental Development,' which I delivered at the Royal Institution in March last.

"In that lecture I attempted to state and partially answer the question, 'What is that attitude of mind which is most likely to change for the better?' I proposed to do this by applying the hypothesis of the variability of species to the present condition of the human race. I put forward also for this purpose a certain biological law, viz. that permanent advantageous changes in an organism are due to its spontaneous activity, and not to the direct action of the environment.

"In the short account of the evolution-hypothesis which I prefixed, I followed Mr. Herbert Spencer's *Principles of Biology,* not knowing, at the time, how much of the theory was due to him personally, but imagining that the greater part of it was the work of previous biologists. On this account I omitted to make such references to my special sources of information as I should otherwise have made. I was also ignorant of the developments and applications of the theory which he has made in his other works, in which a great portion of my remarks had been anticipated. These omissions I desire now to rectify.

"Mr. Spencer's theory is to the ideas which preceded it even more than the theory of gravitation was to the guesses of Hooke and the facts of Kepler.

"Finding only a vague notion of progress from lower to higher, he has affixed the specific meaning to the word *higher* of which I gave an account, defining the processes by which this progress is effected. He has, moreover, formed the conception of evolution as the subject of general propositions applicable to all natural processes, a conception which serves

as the basis of a complete system of philosophy. In particular, he has applied this theory to the evolution of mind, developing the complete accordance between the laws of mental growth and of the growth of other organic functions. In fact, even if the two points which I put forward as my own —viz. the formal application of the biological method to a certain special problem, and the biological law which serves as a partial solution of it—have not before been explicitly developed (and of this I am not sure), yet they are consequences so immediate of the general theory that in any case the credit of them should entirely belong to the philosopher on whose domains I have unwittingly trespassed. The mistake, of course, affects me only, and could in no way injure the fame of one whose philosophical position is so high and so assured.

"I may perhaps be excused for anticipating here what I hope to say more at length at another time,[1] that in my belief the further deductions to be made from this theory, with reference to modern controversies, will lead to results at once more conservative, and in a certain sense more progressive, than is commonly supposed.

"I remain, Sir, yours, etc.,

"W. K. CLIFFORD."

[1] This intention was never carried out, so far as the editors are aware.

ON THEORIES OF THE PHYSICAL FORCES[1]

[REFERRING to the passage in *Faust*,

> "Geschrieben steht: Im Anfang war das Wort.
> Hier stock' ich schon! Wer hilft mir weiter fort?
> Ich kann das Wort so hoch unmöglich schätzen,
> Ich muss es anders übersetzen,
> Wenn ich vom Geiste recht erleuchtet bin.
> Geschrieben steht: Im Anfang war der Sinn.
> Bedenke wohl die erste Zeile,
> Dass deine Feder sich nicht übereile!
> Ist es der Sinn, der alles wirkt und schafft?
> Es sollte stehn: Im Anfang war die Kraft!
> Doch, auch indem ich dieses niederschreibe,
> Schon warnt mich was, dass ich dabei nicht bleibe.
> Mir hilft der Geist! Auf einmal seh' ich Rath,
> Und schreibe getrost: Im Anfang war die That!"

the speaker regarded it as a description of four views or stages of opinion through which a man looking for himself on the face of things is likely to pass; through which also successive generations of the men who look for themselves on the face of things are likely to pass. He considered that by far the larger portion of scientific thought at the present day is in the third stage—that, namely, in which Force is regarded as the great fact that lies at the bottom of all things; but that this is so far from being the final one, that even now the fourth stage is on its heels. In the fourth stage the conception of Force disappears, and whatever happens is regarded as a deed. The object of the discourse was to

[1] Discourse delivered at the Royal Institution, February 18, 1870. This discourse is reprinted as it stands in the Proceedings of the Royal Institution. The opening paragraphs, being reported in the third person and apparently abridged, are enclosed in square brackets.

explain the nature of this transition, and to introduce certain conceptions which might serve to prepare the way for it.

There are, then, to be considered two different answers to the question, "What is it that lies at the bottom of things?" The two answers correspond to two different ways of stating the question; namely, first, "Why do things happen?" and, secondly, "What is it precisely that does happen?" The speaker maintained that the first question is external to the province of science altogether, and science has nothing to do with it; but that the second is exactly the question to which science is always trying to find the answer. It may be doubted whether the first question is within the province of human knowledge at all. For it is as necessary that a question should *mean something*, in order to be a real question, as that an answer should mean something, in order to be a real answer. And it is quite possible to put words together with a note of interrogation after them without asking any real question thereby. Whether the phrase, "Why do things happen?" as applied to physical phenomena, is a phrase of this kind or no, is not here to be considered. But that to the scientific inquirer there is not any "*why*" at all, and that if he ever uses the word it is always in the sense of *what*, the speaker regarded as certain. In order to show what sort of way an exact knowledge of the facts would supersede the inquiry after the cause of them, he then made use of the hypothesis of continuity; showing, in the following manner, that it involves such an interdependence of the facts of the universe as forbids us to speak of one fact or set of facts as the *cause* of another fact or set of facts.]

The hypothesis of the continuity of space and time is explained, and the alternative hypothesis is formulated.

From the hypothesis of the complete continuity of time-changes, a knowledge of the entire history of a single particle is shown to be involved in a complete knowledge of its state at any moment.

Things frequently move. Some things move faster than others. Even the same thing moves faster at one time than it does at another time. When you say that you are walking four miles an hour, you do not mean that you actually walk exactly four miles in any particular hour; you mean that if anybody did walk for an hour, keeping all the time exactly

at the rate at which you are walking, he would in that hour walk four miles. But now suppose that you start walking four miles an hour, and gradually quicken your pace, until you are walking six miles an hour. Then this question may be asked: Suppose that anybody chose a particular number between four and six, say four and five-eighths, is it perfectly certain that at some instant or other during that interval you were walking at the rate of four miles and five-eighths in the hour? Or, to put it more accurately, suppose that we have a vessel containing four pints of water exactly, and that somebody adds to it a casual quantity of water less than two pints. Then is it perfectly certain that between these two times, when you were walking at four miles an hour, and when you were walking six miles an hour, there was some particular instant at which you were walking exactly as many miles and fractions of a mile an hour as there are pints and fractions of a pint of water in the vessel? The hypothesis of continuity says that the answer to this question is yes; and this is the answer which everybody givés nowadays; which everybody has given mostly since the invention of the differential calculus.

But this is a question of fact, and not of calculation. Let us, therefore, try and imagine what the contrary hypothesis would be like.

You know what a "wheel of life" is. There is a cylinder with slits in its side, which can be spun round rapidly; and you look through the slits at the pictures opposite. The result is that you see the pictures moving; moreover, you see them move faster or slower according as you turn the cylinder faster or slower. This is what you see, and what appears to happen; but now let us consider what actually does happen. I remember in particular a picture of a man rolling a ball down an inclined plane towards you; he was standing at the farther edge of the inclined plane, as it were behind a counter, and he picked up the balls one by one and rolled them towards you. But now when you took out the strips of paper on which the pictures were drawn, you found that they were really pictures of this man and his ball in a graduated series of positions. Each picture, of course, was perfectly still in itself, a mere drawing on the paper. The first one represented him with his hand below the counter, just picking up the

ball; in the next, he had the ball in his hand, drawn back ready to roll down; in the next, the hand was thrown forwards with the ball in it; in the next, the ball had just left his hand and rolled a little way down; in the next farther, and so on. Now, these pictures being put in the inside of the cylinder which is turning round, come opposite you one by one. But you do not look directly at them; there are slits interposed. The effect of that is, that if you look straight at a certain portion of the opposite picture you can only see it for a very small interval of time; that, namely, during which the slit is passing in front of your eye. Now let us carefully examine what happens. When the slit passes, it goes so quickly that you get, as it were, almost an instantaneous photograph on your eye of the opposite picture; say of the man with his hand below the counter. Then this is effaced, and you see absolutely nothing until the next slit passes. But by the time the next slit comes, another picture has got opposite to you; so that you get an instantaneous photograph this time of the man with his hand drawn back and the ball in it. Then this in its turn is effaced, for a time you see nothing, and then you are given an instantaneous glimpse of the hand thrown forward. In this way, what you really see is darkness relieved by regularly-recurring glimpses of the figure in different positions. Now, this experience that you get is obviously consistent with the hypothesis that the man goes on moving all the time when he is hidden from you; so as to be in exactly that series of positions when you do catch a glimpse of him. And, in fact, you do instinctively, by an inevitable habit, admit this hypothesis, not merely into your mind as a speculation, but into your very sensation as an observed phenomenon. You simply see the man move; and, except for a certain weariness in the eyes, there is nothing to distinguish this perception of movement from any other perception of movement. At the same time we do know very distinctly, and beyond the shadow of a doubt, that there is no continuity in the picture at all: that, in fact, you do not see the same picture twice following, but a new one every time till the cycle is completed; and that the picture never is in any position intermediate between two successive ones of those which you see. Here then is an apparently continuous

motion which is really discontinuous; and moreover there is an apparently continuous perception of it which is really discontinuous—that is, it seems to be gradually changed, while it really goes by little jumps.

I suppose very few people have looked at this toy without wondering whether it is not actually and truly a wheel of life, without any joke at all. I mean, that it is very natural for the question to present itself, Do I ever really see anything move? May not all my apparently continuous perceptions be ultimately made up of little jumps, which I run together by this same inevitable instinct? There is another way in which this is sometimes suggested. If you move your hand quickly, you can see a continuous line of light, because the image of every position of your hand lingers a little while upon the retina. But now, if you do this in a room lighted only by an electric spark which is not going very fast, so that the general result is darkness broken by nearly instantaneous flashes at regular intervals; then, instead of seeing a continuous line of light, you will see a distinct series of different hands, perhaps about an inch apart, if the electric spark is going very slowly, and you move your hand very quickly. But now make the spark go quicker, or your hand slower; the distances between these several hands will gradually diminish, till—you do not know how—the continuous line of light is restored. And the question inevitably presents itself—is not every case of apparently continuous perception really a case of successive distinct images very close together?

That is to say, for instance, if I move my hand so in front of me, and apparently see it take up in succession every possible position on its path between the two extreme positions; do I really see this, or do I only see my hand in a certain very large number of distinct positions, and not at all in the intervening spaces?

I have no doubt whatever myself, that the latter alternative is the true one, and that the wheel of life is really an illustration and type of every moment of our existence. But I am not going to give my reasons for this opinion, because it is quite a different question from the one I am trying to get at. The question, namely, is this. What I see, or fancy I see, is quite consistent with the hypothesis that my hand

really does go on moving continuously all the time, and takes up an infinite number of positions between the two extreme ones. But if this hypothesis is not true, what is true? and how are we to imagine any other state of things than that supposed by the hypothesis of continuity?

I draw here two rows of points. The upper row of points is to represent a series of positions in space which it is conceivable that a certain thing might take up. The lower row of points is to represent a series of instants in time at which it is conceivable that the same thing might exist. Suppose now that at the instant of time represented by the first point of the lower row, the thing held the position in space represented by the first point of the upper row. Suppose that it only existed there for that instant, and then disappeared utterly, so that at these succeeding instants where the lower points have no points directly above them the thing is nowhere at all. Lastly, suppose that at this instant of time which *has* a space-dot above it, the thing existed in that space-position; and so on all through, the thing only existing at those instants whose representative points have a space-dot exactly above them, and being then in the space-position signified by such dots. Then we may call this a discontinuous motion; a motion because the thing is in different places at different times, though it is not at all times that it exists at all; and a discontinuous motion because the thing passes from one position to another *distant* from it without going through any intermediate position.

Now imagine that in each of these two series the dots are very close together indeed, and very great in number; so that, however small one made them on the paper, the lines would look as if they were continuous lines. And let the thing be a white speck travelling along the upper line in the manner I have described; namely, existing only when there is one dot exactly over another; only that as the lower dots represent instants of time, we may make some definite supposition and assume that one inch of them represents a second.

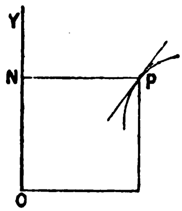
Then it is clear that if the dots were taken close enough together, and enough of them, the appearance would be precisely what we ordinarily see when a white speck moves along

a line. That is to say, we have got some sort of representation of what we might have to suppose, if we did not assume the truth of the law of continuity.

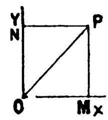
You must here notice in particular that I suppose the series of positions denoted by the upper dots to be *all* the positions that are between the two end ones; that is, I suppose the path from one of these end ones to the other to be made up of a series of discrete positions. And similarly I suppose the series of instants denoted by the lower dots to be *all* the time that elapses between the two end ones; that is, I suppose the interval of time to contain a perfectly definite number of instants, these being further indivisible. Or we may say that on this alternative hypothesis space and time are discontinuous; that is, they are in separate parts which do not hold together. Now I must beg you to remember for a little while what the hypothesis of continuity is *not*, for I shall have to refer to this point again subsequently. In this kind of jumping motion that we have been imagining, the rate of motion of a thing could only be measured by the size of one of its jumps; that is, by the number of positions it passed over between two existences compared with the number of instants passed over. And this rate might obviously change by jumps as violent and sudden as those of the thing itself; at any instant when the thing was non-existent its rate would be non-existent, and whenever the thing came into existence its rate would suddenly have a value depending on how far off its last position was. In this case, therefore, our question about the intermediate rate—whether between walking four miles an hour and walking six miles an hour you must necessarily walk at all intermediate paces—must be answered in the negative. Now then, at last, let us investigate some consequences of supposing that motion is really continuous as it seems to be.

First, how to measure the rate at which a thing is moving? This was done experimentally by Galileo in the case of falling bodies, and I shall have to speak again of the results which he obtained. But at present I want to speak not of an experimental method of finding the rate, but of a theoretical method of representing it, invented by Newton, and called the curve of velocities.

Suppose that a point N is going along the line O Y, sometimes fast and sometimes slow; and that a point M is going along the line O X always at the same rate. Also somebody always holds a stick N P so as to move with the point N, and be horizontal; and somebody holds a stick M P so as to move with the point M, and be vertical; and a third person keeps a pencil pressed in the corner where the two sticks cross at P. Then when the points M and N move, the point P will move too; and its motion will depend on that of the two other points.



For instance, if the point N moves always exactly as fast as the point M, then the point P will go along the line O P midway between the lines O X O Y. If N moves twice as fast as M always, the point P will go along a line nearer O Y; and if N moves only half as fast as M, then P will go along a line nearer O X. And in general, the faster N moves, the more the line will be tilted up; and if the rate at which N goes is changeable, the direction of P's motion will be changeable, and P will then describe a curve, which will be very steep when N is going fast, and more flat when N is going slow. So that the steepness of this curve is now a visible measure of the rate at which N is going, and the *curvature* of it is a visible expression of the fact that the rate is changeable. Now the hypothesis of continuity in the motion of N asserts not merely that N itself moves without any jumps, but that the rate at which N is going changes gradually without any jumps, and consequently that the direction of P's motion changes gradually; or that the curve described by P cannot have a sharp point like this. But it asserts a great deal more besides this, which I shall now endeavour to explain. Let us imagine a new point N_1, so moving that whenever the old N is going at four inches a second, N_1 shall be four inches from O; and when N is going at two inches a second, N_1 shall be two inches from O, and so on, the distance of N_1 from O being always exactly as far as N would go in a second if it went at the rate at which it was moving at that instant. Then the distance O N_1 measures the *rate* at which N is going, or the



velocity of N. If, for example, there was a thing like a thermometer hung up in a train, so that the height of the mercury always indicated how fast the train was going; when the train was going 17 miles an hour, the mercury stood at 17 inches, and so on; then the top of the mercury would behave towards the train exactly as I want the point N_1 to behave towards the point N. It is to indicate by its height how fast N is going.

If, then, the velocity of N is changeable, the point N_1 will move up and down; and the rate at which N_1 moves up or down is clearly the rate at which the velocity of N is increasing or diminishing. This rate at which the velocity of N changes is called its acceleration. To return to our gauge instead of a train, if in the course of a minute it went up from 17 to 19, the train would be said to have an acceleration of two miles an hour per minute.

Now I shall take another point N_2, which is to behave towards N_1 exactly as N_1 behaves towards N; namely, the distance of N_2 from O_2 is to be always equal to the number of inches which N_1 is going in a second. And then I shall take a point N_3, related in just this same way to N_2, and so on, until I come to a point that does not move at all; and that I might never come to, so that I should have to go on taking new points for ever. But suppose now that I have got this series of points, and that they are all moving together. Then first of all there is my point N, which moves anyhow. Next there is N_1, such that $O_1 N_1$ is the velocity of N, or the rate of change of N's position. Next there is N_2, such that $O_2 N_2$ is the acceleration of N, or the rate of change of the rate of change of N's position. Then again $O_3 N_3$ is the change of the acceleration of N, or the rate of change of the rate of change of the rate of change of N's position, and so on. We may, if we like, agree to call the velocity of N the change of the first order, the velocity of N_1 the change of the second order, and so on.

Then the hypothesis of the perfect continuity of N's motion asserts that all these points move continuously without any jumps. Now, a jump made by any one of these points, being a finite change made in no time, would be a change made at an infinite rate; the next point, therefore, and all after it,

would go right away from O, and disappear altogether. We may thus express the law of continuity also in this form; that there is no infinite change of any order.

Now, observe further that the rate at which anything is going is a property of the thing at that instant, and exists whether the thing goes any more or not. If I drop a marble on the floor, it goes faster and faster till it gets there, and then stops; but at the instant when it hit the floor it was going at a perfectly definite rate, which can be calculated, though it did not actually go any more.

In the same way the configuration of all these points which depend on the point N is a property of its motion at any given instant, quite independent of the continuance of that motion. I want you to take particular notice of this fact, that as the point N moves about, the whole set of points connected with it moves too; and that you may regard them as connected by some machine, which you may stop at any moment to contemplate the simultaneous positions of all these points; and that this set of simultaneous positions belongs just simply to that one position of the point N, and therefore to one instant of time.

Now I am going to state to you dogmatically a certain mathematical theorem, called Taylor's theorem; whereby you will see the very remarkable consequences of this hypothesis that we have made.

Namely, there is a certain rule whereby when the positions of all these points are known for any particular instant of time, then their positions at any other instant of time may be calculated from these; and it is impossible that they should have at that other instant any other positions than those so calculated. Provided always that there is no infinite change of any order; that is to say, that no one of the points has taken a sudden jump and sent all the points after it away to an infinite distance from O at any instant between the one for which the positions are given and the one for which they are calculated.

Remember that the positions of all the derivative points are mere properties of the motion of the point N at any instant; that in fact we must know them all in order to know completely the state of the point N at that instant. And then observe the result that we have arrived at. From the know-

ledge of the complete state at any instant of a thing whose motion obeys the law of continuity, we can calculate where it was at any past time, and where it will be at any future time. Now the hypothesis of continuity, of which we have only got disjointed fragments hitherto, is this; that the motion of every particle of the whole universe is entirely continuous. It follows from this hypothesis that the state at this moment of any detached fragment—say a particle of matter at the tip of my tongue—is an infallible record of the eternal past, an infallible prediction of the eternal future.

This is not the same as the statement that a complete knowledge of the position and velocity of every body in the universe at a given moment would suffice to determine the position at any previous or subsequent moment. That depends on an entirely different hypothesis, and relates to the whole, while this proposition that I am now expounding relates to every several part however small. Now reflect upon the fact that for a single particle—quite irrespective of everything else—the history of eternity is contained in every second of time; and then try if you can find room in this one stifling eternal fact for any secondary causes and the question why? Why does the moon go round the earth? When the Solar system was nebulous, anybody who knew all about some one particle of nebulous vapour might have predicted that it would at this moment form part of the moon's mass, and be rotating about the earth exactly as it does. But why with an acceleration inversely as the square of the distance? There is no why; the fact is probably equivalent to saying that the continuous motion of one body is such as not to interfere with the continuous motion of another. If once so, then always; the cause is only the fact that at some moment the thing is so,—or rather, the facts of one time are not the cause of the facts of another, but the facts of all time are included in one statement, and rigorously bound up together.

Parallel, however, with this hypothesis of temporal continuity, there is another hypothesis, not so universally held, of a continuity in space; for which indeed I hope to make more room presently. And out of this it appears that as the history of eternity is written in every second of time, so the state of the universe is written in every point of space.

ON THE AIMS AND INSTRUMENTS OF SCIENTIFIC THOUGHT[1]

It may have occurred (and very naturally too) to such as have had the curiosity to read the title of this lecture, that it must necessarily be a very dry and difficult subject; interesting to very few, intelligible to still fewer, and, above all, utterly incapable of adequate treatment within the limits of a discourse like this. It is quite true that a complete setting-forth of my subject would require a comprehensive treatise on logic, with incidental discussion of the main questions of metaphysics; that it would deal with ideas demanding close study for their apprehension, and investigations requiring a peculiar taste to relish them. It is not my intention now to present you with such a treatise.

The British Association, like the world in general, contains three classes of persons. In the first place, it contains scientific thinkers; that is to say, persons whose thoughts have very frequently the characters which I shall presently describe. Secondly, it contains persons who are engaged in work upon what are called scientific subjects, but who in general do not, and are not expected to, think about these subjects in a scientific manner. Lastly, it contains persons who suppose that their work and their thoughts are unscientific, but who would like to know something about the business of the other two classes aforesaid. Now, to any one who belonging to one of these classes considers either of the other two, it will be apparent that there is a certain gulf between him and them; that he does not quite understand

[1] A Lecture delivered before the members of the British Association, at Brighton, on August 19, 1872.

them, nor they him; and that an opportunity for sympathy and comradeship is lost through this want of understanding. It is this gulf that I desire to bridge over, to the best of my power. That the scientific thinker may consider his business in relation to the great life of mankind; that the noble army of practical workers may recognise their fellowship with the outer world, and the spirit which must guide both; that this so-called outer world may see in the work of science only the putting in evidence of all that is excellent in its own work,—may feel that the kingdom of science is within it: these are the objects of the present discourse. And they compel me to choose such portions of my vast subject as shall be intelligible to all, while they ought at least to command an interest universal, personal, and profound.

In the first place, then, what is meant by scientific thought? You may have heard some of it expressed in the various Sections this morning. You have probably also heard expressed in the same places a great deal of unscientific thought; notwithstanding that it was about mechanical energy, or about hydrocarbons, or about eocene deposits, or about malacopterygii. For scientific thought does not mean thought about scientific subjects with long names. There are no scientific subjects. The subject of science is the human universe; that is to say, everything that is, or has been, or may be related to man. Let us then, taking several topics in succession, endeavour to make out in what cases thought about them is scientific, and in what cases not.

Ancient astronomers observed that the relative motions of the sun and moon recurred all over again in the same order about every nineteen years. They were thus enabled to predict the time at which eclipses would take place. A calculator at one of our observatories can do a great deal more than this. Like them, he makes use of past experience to predict the future; but he knows of a great number of other cycles besides that one of the nineteen years, and takes account of all of them; and he can tell about the solar eclipse of six years hence exactly when it will be visible, and how much of the sun's surface will be covered at each place, and, to a second, at what time of day it will begin and finish there. This prediction involves technical skill of the highest order;

but it does not involve scientific thought, as any astronomer will tell you.

By such calculations the places of the planet Uranus at different times of the year had been predicted and set down. The predictions were not fulfilled. Then arose Adams, and from these errors in the prediction he calculated the place of an entirely new planet, that had never yet been suspected; and you all know how the new planet was actually found in that place. Now this prediction does involve scientific thought, as any one who has studied it will tell you.

Here then are two cases of thought about the same subject, both predicting events by the application of previous experience, yet we say one is *technical* and the other *scientific.*

Now let us take an example from the building of bridges and roofs. When an opening is to be spanned over by a material construction, which must bear a certain weight without bending enough to injure itself, there are two forms in which this construction can be made, the arch and the chain. Every part of an arch is compressed or pushed by the other parts; every part of a chain is in a state of tension, or is pulled by the other parts. In many cases these forms are united. A girder consists of two main pieces or booms, of which the upper one acts as an arch and is compressed, while the lower one acts as a chain and is pulled; and this is true even when both the pieces are quite straight. They are enabled to act in this way by being tied together, or braced, as it is called, by cross pieces, which you must often have seen. Now suppose that any good practical engineer makes a bridge or roof upon some approved pattern which has been made before. He designs the size and shape of it to suit the opening which has to be spanned; selects his material according to the locality; assigns the strength which must be given to the several parts of the structure according to the load which it will have to bear. There is a great deal of thought in the making of this design, whose success is predicted by the application of previous experience; it requires technical skill of a very high order; but it is not scientific thought. On the other hand, Mr. Fleeming Jenkin[1] designs a roof consisting of two arches braced together, instead of an

[1] *On Braced Arches and Suspension Bridges.* Edinburgh: Neill, 1870.

arch and a chain braced together; and although this form is quite different from any known structure, yet before it is built he assigns with accuracy the amount of material that must be put into every part of the structure in order to make it bear the required load, and this prediction may be trusted with perfect security. What is the natural comment on this? Why, that Mr. Fleeming Jenkin is a scientific engineer.

Now it seems to me that the difference between scientific and merely technical thought, not only in these but in all other instances which I have considered, is just this: Both of them make use of experience to direct human action; but while technical thought or skill enables a man to deal with the same circumstances that he has met with before, scientific thought enables him to deal with different circumstances that he has never met with before. But how can experience of one thing enable us to deal with another quite different thing? To answer this question we shall have to consider more closely the nature of scientific thought.

Let us take another example. You know that if you make a dot on a piece of paper, and then hold a piece of Iceland spar over it, you will see not one dot but two. A mineralogist, by measuring the angles of a crystal, can tell you whether or no it possesses this property without looking through it. He requires no scientific thought to do that. But Sir William Rowan Hamilton, the late Astronomer-Royal of Ireland, knowing these facts and also the explanation of them which Fresnel had given, thought about the subject, and he predicted that by looking through certain crystals in a particular direction we should see not two dots but a continuous circle. Mr. Lloyd made the experiment, and saw the circle, a result which had never been even suspected. This has always been considered one of the most signal instances of scientific thought in the domain of physics. It is most distinctly an application of experience gained under certain circumstances to entirely different circumstances.

Now suppose that the night before coming down to Brighton you had dreamed of a railway accident caused by the engine getting frightened at a flock of sheep and jumping suddenly back over all the carriages; the result of which was that your head was unfortunately cut off, so that you had to

put it in your hat-box and take it back home to be mended. There are, I fear, many persons even at this day, who would tell you that after such a dream it was unwise to travel by railway to Brighton. This is a proposal that you should take experience gained while you are asleep, when you have no common sense,—experience about a phantom railway, and apply it to guide you when you are awake and have common sense, in your dealings with a real railway. And yet this proposal is not dictated by scientific thought.

Now let us take the great example of Biology. I pass over the process of classification, which itself requires a great deal of scientific thought; in particular when a naturalist who has studied and monographed a fauna or a flora rather than a family is able at once to pick out the distinguishing characters required for the subdivision of an order quite new to him. Suppose that we possess all this minute and comprehensive knowledge of plants and animals and intermediate organisms, their affinities and differences, their structures and functions;—a vast body of experience, collected by incalculable labour and devotion. Then comes Mr. Herbert Spencer: he takes that experience of life which is not human, which is apparently stationary, going on in exactly the same way from year to year, and he applies that to tell us how to deal with the changing characters of human nature and human society. How is it that experience of this sort, vast as it is, can guide us in a matter so different from itself? How does scientific thought, applied to the development of a kangaroo fœtus or the movement of the sap in exogens, make prediction possible for the first time in that most important of all sciences, the relations of man with man?

In the dark or unscientific ages men had another way of applying experience to altered circumstances. They believed, for example, that the plant called Jew's-ear, which does bear a certain resemblance to the human ear, was a useful cure for diseases of that organ. This doctrine of "signatures," as it was called, exercised an enormous influence on the medicine of the time. I need hardly tell you that it is hopelessly unscientific; yet it agrees with those other examples that we have been considering in this particular; that it applies experience about the shape of a plant—which is one circum-

stance connected with it—to dealings with its medicinal properties, which are other and different circumstances. Again, suppose that you had been frightened by a thunder-storm on land, or your heart had failed you in a storm at sea; if any one then told you that in consequence of this you should always cultivate an unpleasant sensation in the pit of your stomach, till you took delight in it, that you should regulate your sane and sober life by the sensations of a moment of unreasoning terror: this advice would not be an example of scientific thought. Yet it would be an application of past experience to new and different circumstances.

But you will already have observed what is the additional clause that we must add to our definition in order to describe scientific thought and that only. The step between experience about animals and dealings with changing humanity is the law of evolution. The step from errors in the calculated places of Uranus to the existence of Neptune is the law of gravitation. The step from the observed behaviour of crystals to conical refraction is made up of laws of light and geometry. The step from old bridges to new ones is the laws of elasticity and the strength of materials.

The step, then, from past experience to new circumstances must be made in accordance with an observed uniformity in the order of events. This uniformity has held good in the past in certain places; if it should also hold good in the future and in other places, then, being combined with our experience of the past, it enables us to predict the future, and to know what is going on elsewhere; so that we are able to regulate our conduct in accordance with this knowledge.

The aim of scientific thought, then, is to apply past experience to new circumstances; the instrument is an observed uniformity in the course of events. By the use of this instrument it gives us information transcending our experience, it enables us to infer things that we have not seen from things that we have seen; and the evidence for the truth of that information depends on our supposing that the uniformity holds good beyond our experience. I now want to consider this uniformity a little more closely; to show how the character of scientific thought and the force of its inferences depend upon the character of the uniformity of

Nature. I cannot of course tell you all that is known of this character without writing an encyclopædia; but I shall confine myself to two points of it about which it seems to me that just now there is something to be said. I want to find out what we mean when we say that the uniformity of Nature is *exact;* and what we mean when we say that it is *reasonable.*

When a student is first introduced to those sciences which have come under the dominion of mathematics, a new and wonderful aspect of Nature bursts upon his view. He has been accustomed to regard things as essentially more or less vague. All the facts that he has hitherto known have been expressed qualitatively, with a little allowance for error on either side. Things which are let go fall to the ground. A very observant man may know also that they fall faster as they go along. But our student is shown that, after falling for one second in a vacuum, a body is going at the rate of thirty-two feet per second, that after falling for two seconds it is going twice as fast, after going two and a half seconds two and a half times as fast. If he makes the experiment, and finds a single inch per second too much or too little in the rate, one of two things must have happened: either the law of falling bodies has been wrongly stated, or the experiment is not accurate—there is some mistake. He finds reason to think that the latter is always the case; the more carefully he goes to work, the more of the error turns out to belong to the experiment. Again, he may know that water consists of two gases, oxygen and hydrogen, combined; but he now learns that two pints of steam at a temperature of 150° Centigrade will always make two pints of hydrogen and one pint of oxygen at the same temperature, all of them being pressed as much as the atmosphere is pressed. If he makes the experiment and gets rather more or less than a pint of oxygen, is the law disproved? No; the steam was impure, or there was some mistake. Myriads of analyses attest the law of combining volumes; the more carefully they are made, the more nearly they coincide with it. The aspects of the faces of a crystal are connected together by a geometrical law, by which, four of them being given, the rest can be found. The place of a planet at a given time is calculated

by the law of gravitation; if it is half a second wrong, the fault is in the instrument, the observer, the clock, or the law; now, the more observations are made, the more of this fault is brought home to the instrument, the observer, and the clock. It is no wonder, then, that our student, contemplating these and many like instances, should be led to say, "I have been short-sighted; but I have now put on the spectacles of science which Nature had prepared for my eyes; I see that things have definite outlines, that the world is ruled by exact and rigid mathematical laws; καὶ σύ, θεός, γεωμετρεῖς." It is our business to consider whether he is right in so concluding. Is the uniformity of Nature absolutely exact, or only more exact than our experiments?

At this point we have to make a very important distinction. There are two ways in which a law may be inaccurate. The first way is exemplified by that law of Galileo which I mentioned just now: that a body falling *in vacuo* acquires equal increase in velocity in equal times. No matter how many feet per second it is going, after an interval of a second it will be going thirty-two *more* feet per second. We now know that this rate of increase is not exactly the same at different heights, that it depends upon the distance of the body from the centre of the earth; so that the law is only approximate; instead of the increase of velocity being exactly *equal* in equal times, it itself increases very slowly as the body falls. We know also that this variation of the law from the truth is *too small to be perceived* by direct observation on the change of velocity. But suppose we have invented means for observing this, and have verified that the increase of velocity is inversely as the squared distance from the earth's centre. Still the law is not accurate; for the earth does not attract accurately towards her centre, and the direction of attraction is continually varying with the motion of the sea; the body will not even fall in a straight line. The sun and the planets, too, especially the moon, will produce deviations; yet the sum of all these errors will escape our new process of observation, by being a great deal smaller than the necessary errors of that observation. But when these again have been allowed for, there is still the influence of the stars. In this case, however, we only give

up one exact law for another. It may still be held that if the effect of every particle of matter in the universe on the falling body were calculated according to the law of gravitation, the body would move exactly as this calculation required. And if it were objected that the body must be slightly magnetic or diamagnetic, while there are magnets not an infinite way off; that a very minute repulsion, even at sensible distances, accompanies the attraction; it might be replied that these phenomena are themselves subject to exact laws, and that when *all* the laws have been taken into account, the actual motion will exactly correspond with the calculated motion.

I suppose there is hardly a physical student (unless he has specially considered the matter) who would not at once assent to the statement I have just made; that if we knew all about it, Nature would be found universally subject to exact numerical laws. But let us just consider for another moment what this means.

The word "exact" has a practical and a theoretical meaning. When a grocer weighs you out a certain quantity of sugar very carefully, and says it is exactly a pound, he means that the difference between the mass of the sugar and that of the pound weight he employs is too small to be detected by his scales. If a chemist had made a special investigation, wishing to be as accurate as he could, and told you this was exactly a pound of sugar, he would mean that the mass of the sugar differed from that of a certain standard piece of platinum by a quantity too small to be detected by *his* means of weighing, which are a thousandfold more accurate than the grocer's. But what would a mathematician mean, if he made the same statement? He would mean this. Suppose the mass of the standard pound to be represented by a length, say a foot, measured on a certain line; so that half a pound would be represented by six inches, and so on. And let the difference between the mass of the sugar and that of the standard pound be drawn upon the same line to the same scale. Then, if that difference were magnified an infinite number of times, it would still be invisible. This is the theoretical meaning of exactness; the practical meaning is only very close approximation; *how* close, depends upon the circumstances. The knowledge then of an

exact law in the theoretical sense would be equivalent to an infinite observation. I do not say that such knowledge is impossible to man; but I do say that it would be absolutely different in kind from any knowledge that we possess at present.

I shall be told, no doubt, that we do possess a great deal of knowledge of this kind, in the form of geometry and mechanics; and that it is just the example of these sciences that has led men to look for exactness in other quarters. If this had been said to me in the last century, I should not have known what to reply. But it happens that about the beginning of the present century the foundations of geometry were criticised independently by two mathematicians, Lobatschewsky[1] and the immortal Gauss;[2] whose results have been extended and generalised more recently by Riemann[3] and Helmholtz.[4] And the conclusion to which these investigations lead is that, although the assumptions which were very properly made by the ancient geometers are practically exact—that is to say, more exact than experiment can be—for such finite things as we have to deal with, and such portions of space as we can reach; yet the truth of them for very much larger things, or very much smaller things, or parts of space which are at present beyond our reach, is a matter to be decided by experiment, when its powers are considerably increased. I want to make as clear as possible the real state of this question at present, because it is often supposed to be a question of words or metaphysics, whereas it is a very distinct and simple question of fact. I am supposed to know then that the three angles of a rectilinear triangle are exactly equal to two right angles. Now suppose that three points are taken in space, distant from one another as far as the Sun is from α Centauri, and that the shortest distances between these points are drawn so as to form a triangle. And suppose

[1] *Geometrische Untersuchungen zur Theorie der Parallellinien.* Berlin, 1840. Translated by Hoüel. Gauthier-Villars, 1866.

[2] Letter to Schumacher, Nov. 28, 1846 (refers to 1792).

[3] *Ueber die Hypothesen welche der Geometrie zu Grunde liegen.* Göttingen, Abhandl., 1866-67. Translated by Hoüel in *Annali di Matematica,* Milan, vol. iii.

[4] *The Axioms of Geometry,* Academy, vol. i. p. 128 (a popular exposition). [And see now his article in *Mind,* No. III.]

the angles of this triangle to be very accurately measured and added together; this can at present be done so accurately that the error shall certainly be less than one minute, less therefore than the five-thousandth part of a right angle. Then I do not know that this sum would differ at all from two right angles; but also I do not know that the difference would be less than ten degrees, or the ninth part of a right angle.[1] And I have reasons for not knowing.

This example is exceedingly important as showing the connection between exactness and universality. It is found that the deviation if it exists must be nearly proportional to the area of the triangle. So that the error in the case of a triangle whose sides are a mile long would be obtained by dividing that in the case I have just been considering by four hundred quadrillions; the result must be a quantity inconceivably small, which no experiment could detect. But between this inconceivably small error and no error at all, there is fixed an enormous gulf; the gulf between practical and theoretical exactness, and, what is even more important, the gulf between what is practically universal and what is theoretically universal. I say that a law is practically universal which is more exact than experiment for all cases that might be got at by such experiments as we can make. We assume this kind of universality, and we find that it pays us to assume it. But a law would be theoretically universal if it were true of all cases whatever; and this is what we do not know of any law at all.

I said there were two ways in which a law might be inexact. There is a law of gases which asserts that when you compress a perfect gas the pressure of the gas increases exactly in the proportion in which the volume diminishes. Exactly; that is to say, the law is more accurate than the experiment, and experiments are corrected by means of the law. But it so happens that this law has been explained; we know precisely what it is that happens when a gas is compressed. We know that a gas consists of a vast number of separate molecules, rushing about in all directions with all manner of velocities,

[1] Assuming that parallax observations prove the deviation less than half a second for a triangle whose vertex is at the star and base a diameter of the earth's orbit.

but so that the mean velocity of the molecules of air in this room, for example, is about twenty miles a minute. The pressure of the gas on any surface with which it is in contact is nothing more than the impact of these small particles upon it. On any surface large enough to be seen there are millions of these impacts in a second. If the space in which the gas is confined be diminished, the average rate at which the impacts take place will be increased in the same proportion; and because of the enormous number of them, the actual rate is always exceedingly close to the average. But the law is one of statistics; its accuracy depends on the enormous numbers involved; and so, from the nature of the case, its exactness cannot be theoretical or absolute.

Nearly all the laws of gases have received these statistical explanations; electric and magnetic attraction and repulsion have been treated in a similar manner; and an hypothesis of this sort has been suggested even for the law of gravity. On the other hand the manner in which the molecules of a gas interfere with each other proves that they repel one another inversely as the fifth power of the distance;[1] so that we here find at the basis of a statistical explanation a law which has the form of theoretical exactness. Which of these forms is to win? It seems to me again that we do not know, and that the recognition of our ignorance is the surest way to get rid of it.

The world in general has made just the remark that I have attributed to a fresh student of the applied sciences. As the discoveries of Galileo, Kepler, Newton, Dalton, Cavendish, Gauss, displayed ever new phenomena following mathematical laws, the theoretical exactness of the physical universe was taken for granted. Now, when people are hopelessly ignorant of a thing, they quarrel about the source of their knowledge. Accordingly many maintained that we know these exact laws by intuition. These said always one true thing, that we did not know them from experience. Others said that they were really given in the facts, and adopted ingenious ways of hiding the gulf between the two. Others again deduced from transcendental considerations sometimes the laws themselves, and

[1] [This statement of the law has since been abandoned: see "The Unseen Universe," below.]

sometimes what through imperfect information they supposed to be the laws. But more serious consequences arose when these conceptions derived from Physics were carried over into the field of Biology. Sharp lines of division were made between kingdoms and classes and orders; an animal was described as a miracle to the vegetable world; specific differences which are practically permanent within the range of history were regarded as permanent through all time; a sharp line was drawn between organic and inorganic matter. Further investigation, however, has shown that accuracy had been prematurely attributed to the science, and has filled up all the gulfs and gaps that hasty observers had invented. The animal and vegetable kingdoms have a debateable ground between them, occupied by beings that have the characters of both and yet belong distinctly to neither. Classes and orders shade into one another all along their common boundary. Specific differences turn out to be the work of time. The line dividing organic matter from inorganic, if drawn to-day, must be moved to-morrow to another place; and the chemist will tell you that the distinction has now no place in his science except in a technical sense for the convenience of studying carbon compounds by themselves. In Geology the same tendency gave birth to the doctrine of distinct periods, marked out by the character of the strata deposited in them all over the sea; a doctrine than which, perhaps, no ancient cosmogony has been further from the truth, or done more harm to the progress of science. Refuted many years ago by Mr. Herbert Spencer,[1] it has now fairly yielded to an attack from all sides at once, and may be left in peace.

When then we say that the uniformity which we observe in the course of events is exact and universal, we mean no more than this: that we are able to state general rules which are far more exact than direct experiment, and which apply to all cases that we are at present likely to come across. It is important to notice, however, the effect of such exactness as we observe upon the nature of inference. When a telegram arrived stating that Dr. Livingstone had been found by Mr. Stanley, what was the process by which you inferred the finding of Dr. Livingstone from the appearance of the telegram?

[1] "Illogical Geology," in *Essays*, vol. i. Originally published in 1859.

You assumed over and over again the existence of uniformity in nature. That the newspapers had behaved as they generally do in regard to telegraphic messages; that the clerks had followed the known laws of the action of clerks; that electricity had behaved in the cable exactly as it behaves in the laboratory; that the actions of Mr. Stanley were related to his motives by the same uniformities that affect the actions of other men; that Dr. Livingstone's handwriting conformed to the curious rule by which an ordinary man's handwriting may be recognised as having persistent characteristics even at different periods of his life. But you had a right to be much more sure about some of these inferences than about others. The law of electricity was known with practical exactness, and the conclusions derived from it were the surest things of all. The law about the handwriting, belonging to a portion of physiology which is unconnected with consciousness, was known with less, but still with considerable accuracy. But the laws of human action in which consciousness is concerned are still so far from being completely analysed and reduced to an exact form that the inferences which you made by their help were felt to have only a provisional force. It is possible that by and by, when psychology has made enormous advances and become an exact science, we may be able to give to testimony the sort of weight which we give to the inferences of physical science. It will then be possible to conceive a case which will show how completely the whole process of inference depends on our assumption of uniformity. Suppose that testimony, having reached the ideal force I have imagined, were to assert that a certain river runs uphill. You could infer nothing at all. The arm of inference would be paralysed, and the sword of truth broken in its grasp; and reason could only sit down and wait until recovery restored her limb, and further experience gave her new weapons.

I want in the next place to consider what we mean when we say that the uniformity which we have observed in the course of events is *reasonable* as well as exact.

No doubt the first form of this idea was suggested by the marvellous adaptation of certain natural structures to special functions. The first impression of those who studied comparative anatomy was that every part of the animal frame

was fitted with extraordinary completeness for the work that it had to do. I say extraordinary, because at the time the most familiar examples of this adaptation were manufactures produced by human ingenuity; and the completeness and minuteness of natural adaptations were seen to be far in advance of these. The mechanism of limbs and joints was seen to be adapted, far better than any existing ironwork, to those motions and combinations of motion which were most useful to the particular organisms. The beautiful and complicated apparatus of sensation caught up indications from the surrounding medium, sorted them, analysed them, and transmitted the results to the brain in a manner with which, at the time I am speaking of, no artificial contrivance could compete. Hence the belief grew amongst physiologists that every structure which they found must have its function and subserve some useful purpose; a belief which was not without its foundation in fact, and which certainly (as Dr. Whewell remarks) has done admirable service in promoting the growth of physiology. Like all beliefs found successful in one subject, it was carried over into another, of which a notable example is given in the speculations of Count Rumford about the physical properties of water. Pure water attains its greatest density at a temperature of about $39\frac{1}{2}°$ Fahrenheit; it expands and becomes lighter whether it is cooled or heated, so as to alter that temperature. Hence it was concluded that water in this state must be at the bottom of the sea, and that by such means the sea was kept from freezing all through; as it was supposed must happen if the greatest density had been that of ice. Here then was a substance whose properties were eminently adapted to secure an end essential to the maintenance of life upon the earth. In short, men came to the conclusion that the order of nature was reasonable in the sense that everything was adapted to some good end.

Further consideration, however, has led men out of that conclusion in two different ways. First, it was seen that the facts of the case had been wrongly stated. Cases were found of wonderfully complicated structures that served no purpose at all; like the teeth of that whale of which you heard in Section D the other day, or of the Dugong, which has a horny palate covering them all up and used instead of them;

like the eyes of the unborn mole, that are never used, though perfect as those of a mouse until the skull opening closes up, cutting them off from the brain, when they dry up and become incapable of use; like the outsides of your own ears, which are absolutely of no use to you. And when human contrivances were more advanced it became clear that the natural adaptations were subject to criticism. The eye, regarded as an optical instrument of human manufacture, was thus described by Helmholtz—the physiologist who learned physics for the sake of his physiology, and mathematics for the sake of his physics, and is now in the first rank of all three. He said, "If an optician sent me that as an instrument, I should send it back to him with grave reproaches for the carelessness of his work, and demand the return of my money."

The extensions of the doctrine into Physics were found to be still more at fault. That remarkable property of pure water, which was to have kept the sea from freezing, does not belong to salt water, of which the sea itself is composed. It was found, in fact, that the idea of a reasonable adaptation of means to ends, useful as it had been in its proper sphere, could yet not be called universal, or applied to the order of nature as a whole.

Secondly, this idea has given way because it has been superseded by a higher and more general idea of what is reasonable, which has the advantage of being applicable to a large portion of physical phenomena besides. Both the adaptation and the non-adaptation which occur in organic structures have been *explained*. The scientific thought of Dr. Darwin, of Mr. Herbert Spencer, and of Mr. Wallace, has described that hitherto unknown process of adaptation as consisting of perfectly well-known and familiar processes. There are two kinds of these: the direct processes, in which the physical changes required to produce a structure are worked out by the very actions for which that structure becomes adapted—as the backbone or notochord has been modified from generation to generation by the bendings which it has undergone; and the indirect processes included under the head of Natural Selection—the reproduction of children slightly different from their parents, and the survival of those which are best fitted

to hold their own in the struggle for existence. Naturalists might give you some idea of the rate at which we are getting explanations of the evolution of all parts of animals and plants —the growth of the skeleton, of the nervous system and its mind, of leaf and flower. But what then do we mean by *explanation?*

We were considering just now an explanation of a law of gases—the law according to which pressure increases in the same proportion in which volume diminishes. The explanation consisted in supposing that a gas is made up of a vast number of minute particles always flying about and striking against one another, and then showing that the rate of impact of such a crowd of particles on the sides of the vessel containing them would vary exactly as the pressure is found to vary. Suppose the vessel to have parallel sides, and that there is only one particle rushing backwards and forwards between them; then it is clear that if we bring the sides together to half the distance, the particle will hit each of them twice as often, or the pressure will be doubled. Now it turns out that this would be just as true for millions of particles as for one, and when they are flying in all directions instead of only in one direction and its opposite. Observe now; it is a perfectly well-known and familiar thing that a body should strike against an opposing surface and bound off again; and it is a mere everyday occurrence that what has only half so far to go should be back in half the time; but that pressure should be strictly proportional to density is a comparatively strange, unfamiliar phenomenon. The explanation describes the unknown and unfamiliar as being made up of the known and the familiar; and this, it seems to me, is the true meaning of explanation.[1]

Here is another instance. If small pieces of camphor are dropped into water, they will begin to spin round and swim about in a most marvellous way. Mr. Tomlinson gave, I believe, the explanation of this. We must observe, to begin with, that every liquid has a skin which holds it; you can see that to be true in the case of a drop, which looks as if it

[1] This view differs from those of Mr. J. S. Mill and Mr. Herbert Spencer in requiring every explanation to contain an addition to our knowledge about the thing explained. Both those writers regard subsumption under a general law as a species of explanation. See also Ferrier's *Remains*, vol. ii. p. 436.

were held in a bag. But the tension of this skin is greater in some liquids than in others; and it is greater in camphor and water than in pure water. When the camphor is dropped into water it begins to dissolve and get surrounded with camphor and water instead of water. If the fragment of camphor were exactly symmetrical, nothing more would happen; the tension would be greater in its immediate neighbourhood, but no motion would follow. The camphor, however, is irregular in shape; it dissolves more on one side than the other; and consequently gets pulled about, because the tension of the skin is greater where the camphor is most dissolved. Now it is probable that this is not nearly so satisfactory an explanation to you as it was to me when I was first told of it; and for this reason. By that time I was already perfectly familiar with the notion of a skin upon the surface of liquids, and I had been taught by means of it to work out problems in capillarity. The explanation was therefore a description of the unknown phenomenon which I did not know how to deal with as made up of known phenomena which I did know how to deal with. But to many of you possibly the liquid skin may seem quite as strange and unaccountable as the motion of camphor on water.

And this brings me to consider the source of the pleasure we derive from an explanation. By known and familiar I mean that which we know how to deal with, either by action in the ordinary sense, or by active thought. When therefore that which we do not know how to deal with is described as made up of things that we do know how to deal with, we have that sense of increased power which is the basis of all higher pleasures. Of course we may afterwards by association come to take pleasure in explanation for its own sake. Are we then to say that the observed order of events is reasonable, in the sense that all of it admits of explanation? That a process may be capable of explanation, it must break up into simpler constituents which are already familiar to us. Now, first, the process may itself be simple, and not break up; secondly, it may break up into elements which are as unfamiliar and impracticable as the original process.

It is an explanation of the moon's motion to say that she is a falling body, only she is going so fast and is so far off

that she falls quite round to the other side of the earth, instead of hitting it; and so goes on for ever. But it is no explanation to say that a body falls because of gravitation. That means that the motion of the body may be resolved into a motion of every one of its particles towards every one of the particles of the earth, with an acceleration inversely as the square of the distance between them. But this attraction of two particles must always, I think, be less familiar than the original falling body, however early the children of the future begin to read their Newton. Can the attraction itself be explained? Le Sage said that there is an everlasting hail of innumerable small ether-particles from all sides, and that the two material particles shield each other from this and so get pushed together. This is an explanation; it may or may not be a true one. The attraction may be an ultimate simple fact; or it may be made up of simpler facts utterly unlike anything that we know at present; and in either of these cases there is no explanation. We have no right to conclude, then, that the order of events is always capable of being explained.

There is yet another way in which it is said that Nature is reasonable; namely, inasmuch as every effect has a cause. What do we mean by this?

In asking this question, we have entered upon an appalling task. The word represented by "cause" has sixty-four meanings in Plato and forty-eight in Aristotle. These were men who liked to know as near as might be what they meant; but how many meanings it has had in the writings of the myriads of people who have not tried to know what they meant by it will, I hope, never be counted. It would not only be the height of presumption in me to attempt to fix the meaning of a word which has been used by so grave authority in so many and various senses; but it would seem a thankless task to do that once more which has been done so often at sundry times and in divers manners before. And yet without this we cannot determine what we mean by saying that the order of nature is reasonable. I shall evade the difficulty by telling you Mr. Grote's opinion.[1] You come to a scarecrow and ask, what is the cause of this? You find

[1] Plato, vol. ii. (Phædo).

that a man made it to frighten the birds. You go away and say to yourself, "Everything resembles this scarecrow. Everything has a purpose." And from that day the word "cause" means for you what Aristotle meant by "final cause." Or you go into a hairdresser's shop, and wonder what turns the wheel to which the rotatory brush is attached. On investigating other parts of the premises, you find a man working away at a handle. Then you go away and say, "Everything is like that wheel. If I investigated enough, I should always find a man at a handle." And the man at the handle, or whatever corresponds to him, is from henceforth known to you as "cause."

And so generally. When you have made out any sequence of events to your entire satisfaction, so that you know all about it, the laws involved being so familiar that you seem to see how the beginning must have been followed by the end, then you apply that as a simile to all other events whatever, and your idea of cause is determined by it. Only when a case arises, as it always must, to which the simile will not apply, you do not confess to yourself that it was only a simile and need not apply to everything, but you say, "The cause of that event is a mystery which must remain for ever unknown to me." On equally just grounds the nervous system of my umbrella is a mystery which must remain for ever unknown to me. My umbrella has no nervous system; and the event to which your simile did not apply has no cause in your sense of the word. When we say then that every effect has a cause, we mean that every event is connected with something in a way that might make somebody call that the cause of it. But I, at least, have never yet seen any single meaning of the word that could be fairly applied to the *whole* order of nature.

From this remark I cannot even except an attempt recently made by Mr. Bain to give the word a universal meaning, though I desire to speak of that attempt with the greatest respect. Mr. Bain[1] wishes to make the word "cause" hang on in some way to what we call the law of energy; but though I speak with great diffidence I do think a careful consideration will show that the introduction of this word

[1] *Inductive Logic*, chap. iv.

"cause" can only bring confusion into a matter which is distinct and clear enough to those who have taken the trouble to understand what energy means. It would be impossible to explain that this evening; but I may mention that "energy" is a technical term out of mathematical physics, which requires of most men a good deal of careful study to understand it accurately.

Let us pass on to consider, with all the reverence which it demands, another opinion held by great numbers of the philosophers who have lived in the Brightening Ages of Europe; the opinion that at the basis of the natural order there is something which we can know to be *unreasonable*, to evade the processes of human thought. The opinion is set forth first by Kant, so far as I know, in the form of his famous doctrine of the antinomies or contradictions, a later form[1] of which I will endeavour to explain to you. It is said, then, that space must either be infinite or have a boundary. Now you cannot conceive infinite space; and you cannot conceive that there should be any end to it. Here, then, are two things, one of which must be true, while each of them is inconceivable; so that our thoughts about space are hedged in, as it were, by a contradiction. Again, it is said that matter must either be infinitely divisible, or must consist of small particles incapable of further division. Now you cannot conceive a piece of matter divided into an infinite number of parts, while, on the other hand, you cannot conceive a piece of matter, however small, which absolutely cannot be divided into two pieces; for, however great the forces are which join the parts of it together, you can imagine stronger forces able to tear it in pieces. Here, again, there are two statements, one of which must be true, while each of them is separately inconceivable; so that our thoughts about matter also are hedged in by a contradiction. There are several other cases of the same thing, but I have selected these two as instructive examples. And the conclusion to which philosophers were led by the contemplation of them was that on every side, when we approach the limits of existence, a

[1] That of Mr. Herbert Spencer, *First Principles*. I believe Kant himself would have admitted that the antinomies do not exist for the empiricist. [Much less does he say that either of a pair of antinomies must be true. The real Kantian position is that both assertions are illegitimate.]

contradiction must stare us in the face. The doctrine has been developed and extended by the great successors of Kant; and this unreasonable, or unknowable, which is also called the absolute and the unconditioned, has been set forth in various ways as that which we know to be the true basis of all things. As I said before, I approach this doctrine with all the reverence which should be felt for that which has guided the thoughts of so many of the wisest of mankind. Nevertheless I shall endeavour to show that in these cases of supposed contradiction there is always something which we do not know now, but of which we cannot be sure that we shall be ignorant next year. The doctrine is an attempt to found a positive statement upon this ignorance, which can hardly be regarded as justifiable. Spinoza said, "A free man thinks of nothing so little as of death;" it seems to me we may parallel this maxim in the case of thought, and say, "A wise man only remembers his ignorance in order to destroy it." A boundary is that which divides two adjacent portions of space. The question, then, "Has space (in general) a boundary?" involves a contradiction in terms, and is, therefore, unmeaning. But the question, "Does space contain a finite number of cubic miles, or an infinite number?" is a perfectly intelligible and reasonable question which remains to be answered by experiment.[1] The surface of the sea would still contain a finite number of square miles, if there were no land to bound it. Whether or no the space in which we live is of this nature remains to be seen. If its extent is finite, we may quite possibly be able to assign that extent next year; if, on the other hand, it has no end, it is true that the knowledge of that fact would be quite different from any knowledge we at present possess, but we have no right to say that such knowledge is impossible. Either the question will be settled once for all, or the extent of space will be shown to be greater than a quantity which will increase from year to year with the improvement of our sources of knowledge. Either alternative is perfectly conceivable, and there is no contradiction. Observe especially that the supposed contradiction arises from the assumption of theoretical exactness in the laws of geometry.

[1] The very important distinction between *unboundedness* and *infinite extent* is made by Riemann, *loc. cit.*

The other case that I mentioned has a very similar origin. The idea of a piece of matter the parts of which are held together by forces, and are capable of being torn asunder by greater forces, is entirely derived from the large pieces of matter which we have to deal with. We do not know whether this idea applies in any sense even to the *molecules* of gases; still less can we apply it to the *atoms* of which they are composed. The word force is used of two phenomena: the pressure, which when two bodies are in contact connects the motion of each with the position of the other; and attraction or repulsion,—that is to say, a change of velocity in one body depending on the position of some other body which is not in contact with it. We do not know that there is anything corresponding to either of these phenomena in the case of a molecule. A meaning can, however, be given to the question of the divisibility of matter in this way. We may ask if there is any piece of matter so small that its properties as matter depend upon its remaining all in one piece. This question is reasonable; but we cannot answer it at present, though we are not at all sure that we shall be equally ignorant next year. If there is no such piece of matter, no such limit to the division which shall leave it matter, the knowledge of that fact would be different from any of our present knowledge; but we have no right to say that it is impossible. If, on the other hand, there *is* a limit, it is quite possible that we may have measured it by the time the Association meets at Bradford. Again, when we are told that the infinite extent of space, for example, is something that we cannot conceive at present, we may reply that this is only natural, since our experience has never yet supplied us with the means of conceiving such things. But then we cannot be sure that the facts will not make us learn to conceive them; in which case they will cease to be inconceivable. In fact, the putting of limits to human conception must always involve the assumption that our previous experience is universally valid in a theoretical sense; an assumption which we have already seen reason to reject. Now you will see that our consideration of this opinion has led us to the true sense of the assertion that the Order of Nature is reasonable. If you will allow me to define a

reasonable question as one which is asked in terms of ideas justified by previous experience, without itself contradicting that experience, then we may say, as the result of our investigation, that to every reasonable question there is an intelligible answer which either we or posterity may know.

We have, then, come somehow to the following conclusions. By scientific thought we mean the application of past experience to new circumstances by means of an observed order of events. By saying that this order of events is exact we mean that it is exact enough to correct experiments by, but we do not mean that it is theoretically or absolutely exact, because we do not know. The process of inference we found to be in itself an assumption of uniformity, and we found that, as the known exactness of the uniformity became greater, the stringency of the inference increased. By saying that the order of events is reasonable we do not mean that everything has a purpose, or that everything can be explained, or that everything has a cause; for neither of these is true. But we mean that to every reasonable question there is an intelligible answer, which either we or posterity may know *by the exercise of scientific thought.*

For I specially wish you not to go away with the idea that the exercise of scientific thought is properly confined to the subjects from which my illustrations have been chiefly drawn to-night. When the Roman jurists applied their experience of Roman citizens to dealings between citizens and aliens, showing by the difference of their actions that they regarded the circumstances as essentially different, they laid the foundations of that great structure which has guided the social progress of Europe. That procedure was an instance of strictly scientific thought. When a poet finds that he has to move a strange new world which his predecessors have not moved; when, nevertheless, he catches fire from their flashes, arms from their armoury, sustentation from their footprints, the procedure by which he applies old experience to new circumstances is nothing greater or less than scientific thought. When the moralist, studying the conditions of society and the ideas of right and wrong which have come down to us from a time when war was the normal condition of man and success in war the only chance of

survival, evolves from them the conditions and ideas which must accompany a time of peace, when the comradeship of equals is the condition of national success; the process by which he does this is scientific thought and nothing else. Remember, then, that it is the guide of action; that the truth which it arrives at is not that which we can ideally contemplate without error, but that which we may act upon without fear; and you cannot fail to see that scientific thought is not an accompaniment or condition of human progress, but human progress itself. And for this reason the question what its characters are, of which I have so inadequately endeavoured to give you some glimpse, is the question of all questions for the human race.

ATOMS[1]

IF I were to wet my finger and then rub it along the edge of this glass, I should no doubt persuade the glass to give out a certain musical note. So also if I were to sing to that glass the same note loud enough, I should get the glass to answer me back with a note.

I want you to remember that fact, because it is of capital importance for the arguments we shall have to consider to-night. The very same note which I can get the tumbler to give out by agitating it, by rubbing the edge, that same note I can also get the tumbler to answer back to me when I sing to it. Now, remembering that, please to conceive a rather complicated thing that I am now going to try to describe to you. The same property that belongs to the glass belongs also to a bell which is made out of metal. If that bell is agitated by being struck, or in any other way, it will give out the same sound that it will answer back if you sing that sound to it; but if you sing a different sound to it then it will not answer.

Now suppose that I have several of these metal bells which answer to quite different notes, and that they are all fastened to a set of elastic stalks which spring out of a certain centre to which they are fastened. All these bells, then, are not only fastened to these stalks, but they are held there in such a way that they can spin round upon the points to which they are fastened.

And then the centre to which these elastic stalks are fastened or suspended, you may imagine as able to move in

[1] Sunday Lecture Society, January 7, 1872; Hulme Town Hall, Manchester, November 20, 1872.

all manner of directions, and that the whole structure made up of these bells and stalks and centre is able to spin round any axis whatever. We must also suppose that there is surrounding this structure a certain framework. We will suppose the framework to be made of some elastic material, so that it is able to be pressed in to a certain extent. Suppose that framework is made of whalebone, if you like. This structure I am going for the present to call an "atom." I do not mean to say that atoms are made of a structure like that. I do not mean to say that there is anything in an atom which is in the shape of a bell; and I do not mean to say that there is anything analogous to an elastic stalk in it. But what I mean is this—that an atom is something that is capable of vibrating at certain definite rates; also that it is capable of other motions of its parts besides those vibrations at certain definite rates; and also that it is capable of spinning round about any axis. Now by the framework which I suppose to be put round that structure made out of bells and elastic stalks, I mean this—that supposing you had two such structures, then you cannot put them closer together than a certain distance, but they will begin to resist being put close together after you have put them as near as that, and they will push each other away if you attempt to put them closer. That is all I mean then. You must only suppose that that structure is described, and that set of ideas is put together, just for the sake of giving us some definite notion of a thing which has similar properties to that structure. But you must not suppose that there is any special part of an atom which has got a bell-like form, or any part like an elastic stalk made out of whalebone.

Now having got the idea of such a complicated structure, which is capable, as we said, of vibratory motion, and of other sorts of motion, I am going on to explain what is the belief of those people who have studied the subject about the composition of the air which fills this room. The air which fills this room is what is called a gas; but it is not a simple gas; it is a mixture of two different gases, oxygen and nitrogen. What is believed about this air is that it consists of quite distinct portions or little masses of air—that is, of little masses each of which is either oxygen or nitrogen; and

that these little masses are perpetually flying about in all directions. The number of them in this room is so great that it strains the powers of our numerical system to count them. They are flying about in all directions and mostly in straight lines, except where they get quite near to one another, and then they rebound and fly off in other directions. Part of these little masses which compose the air are of one sort—they are called oxygen. All those little masses which are called oxygen are alike; they are of the same weight; they have the same rates of vibration; and they go about on the average at a certain rate. The other part of these little masses is called nitrogen, and they have a different weight; but the weight of all the nitrogen masses is the same, as nearly as we can make out. They have again the same rates of vibration; but the rates of vibration that belong to them are different from the rates of vibration that belong to the oxygen masses; and the nitrogen masses go about on the average at a certain rate, but this rate is different from the average rate at which the oxygen masses go about. So then, taking up that structure which I endeavoured to describe to you at first, we should represent the state of the air in this room as being made up of such a lot of compound atoms of those structures of bells and stalks, with frameworks round them, that I described to you, being thrown about in all directions with great rapidity, and continually impinging against one another, each flying off in a different direction, so that they would go mostly in straight lines (you must suppose them for a moment not to fall down towards the earth), excepting where they come near enough for their two frameworks to be in contact, and then their frameworks throw them off in different directions: that is a conception of the state of things which actually takes place inside of gas.

Now, the conception which scientific men have of the state of things which takes place inside of a liquid is different from that. We should conceive it in this way: We should suppose that a number of these structures are put so close together that their frameworks are always in contact; and yet they are moving about and rolling among one another, so that no one of them keeps the same place for two instants

together, and any one of them is travelling all over the whole space. Inside of this glass, where there is a liquid, all the small particles or molecules are running about among one another, and yet none of them goes for any appreciable portion of its path in a straight line, because there is no distance however small that it goes without being in contact with others all around it; and the effect of this contact of the others all around it is that they press against it and force it out of a straight path. So that the path of a particle in a liquid is a sort of wavy path; it goes in and out in all directions, and a particle at one part of the liquid will, at a certain time, have traversed all the different parts one after another.

The conception of what happens inside of a solid body, say a crystal of salt, is different again from this. It is supposed that the very small particles which constitute that crystal of salt do not travel about from one part of the crystal to another, but that each one of them remains pretty much in the same place. I say "pretty much," but not exactly, and the motion of it is like this: Suppose one of my structures, with its framework round it, to be fastened up by elastic strings, so that one string goes to the ceiling, and another to the floor, and another to each wall, so that it is fastened by all these strings. Then if these strings are stretched, and a particle is displaced in any way, it will just oscillate about its mean position, and will not go far away from it; and if forced away from that position it will come back again. That is the sort of motion that belongs to a particle in the inside of a solid body. A solid body, such as a crystal of salt, is made up, just as a liquid or a gas is made up, of innumerable small particles, but they are so attached to one another that each of them can only oscillate about its mean position. It is very probable that it is also able to spin about any axis in that position or near it; but it is not able to leave that position finally, and to go and take up another position in the crystal; it must stop in or near about the same position.

These, then, are the views which are held by scientific men at present about what actually goes on inside of a gaseous body, or a liquid body, or a solid body. In each case the

body is supposed to be made up of a very large number of very small particles; but in one case these particles are very seldom in contact with one another, that is, very seldom within range of each other's action; in this case they are during the greater part of the time moving separately along straight lines. In the case of a liquid they are constantly within the range of each other's action; but they do not move along straight lines for any appreciable part of the time; they are always changing their position relatively to the other particles, and one of them gets about from one part of the liquid to another. In the case of a solid they are always also within the range of each other's action, and they are so much within that range that they are not able to change their relative positions; and each one of them is obliged to remain in very nearly the same position.

Now what I want to do this evening is to explain to you, so far as I can, the reasons which have led scientific men to adopt these views; and what I wish especially to impress upon you is this, that what is called the "atomic theory"—that is, what I have just been explaining—is no longer in the position of a theory, but that such of the facts as I have just explained to you are really things which are definitely known and which are no longer suppositions; that the arguments by which scientific men have been led to adopt these views are such as, to anybody who fairly considers them, justify that person in believing that the statements are true.

Now first of all I want to explain what the reasons are why we believe that the air consists of separate portions, and that these portions are repetitions of the same structures. That is to say that in the air we have two structures really, each of them a great number of times repeated. Take a simple illustration, which is a rather easier one to consider. Suppose we take a vessel which is filled with oxygen. I want to show what the reasons are which lead us to believe that that gas consists of a certain structure which is a great number of times repeated, and that between two examples of that structure which exist inside of the vessel there is a certain empty space which does not contain any oxygen. That oxygen gas contained in the vessel is made up of small particles which are not close together, and each of these particles has a

certain structure, which structure also belongs to the rest of the particles. This argument is rather a difficult one, and I shall ask you therefore to follow it as closely as possible, because it is an extremely complicated argument to follow out the first time that it is presented to you.

I want to consider again the case of this finger-glass. You must often have tried that experiment—that a glass will give out when it is agitated the same note which it will return when it is sung to. Well, now, suppose that I have got this room filled with a certain number of such atomic structures as I have endeavoured to describe—that is to say, of sets of bells, the bells answering to certain given notes. Each of these little structures is exactly alike, that is to say, it contains just the bells corresponding to the same notes. Well, now, suppose that you sing to a glass or to a bell, there are three things that may happen. First, you may sing a note which does not belong to the bell at all. In that case the bell will not answer; it will not be affected or agitated by your singing that note, but it will remain quite still. Next, if you sing a note that belongs to the bell, but if you sing it rather low, then the effect of that note will be to make the bell move a little, but the bell will not move so much as to give back the note in an audible form. Thirdly, if you sing the note which belongs to the bell loud enough, then you will so far agitate the bell that it will give back the note to you again. Now exactly that same property belongs to a stretched string or the string of a piano. You know that if you sing a certain note in a room where there is a piano, the string belonging to that note will answer you if you sing loud enough. The other strings won't answer at all. If you don't sing loud enough the string will be affected, but not enough to answer you. Now let us imagine a screen of piano strings, all of exactly the same length, of the same material, and stretched equally, and that this screen of strings is put across the room; that I am at one end and that you are at another, and that I proceed to sing notes straight up the scale. While I sing notes which are different from that note which belongs to the screen of strings, they will pass through the screen without being altered, because the agitation of the air which I produce will not affect the strings. But that note will be heard quite well at the

other side of the screen. You must remember that when the air carries a sound it vibrates at a certain rate belonging to the sound. I make the air vibrate by singing a particular note, and if that rate of vibration corresponds to the strings the air will pass on part of its vibration to the strings, and so make the strings move. But if the rate of vibration is not the one that corresponds to the strings, then the air will not pass on any of its vibrations to the strings, and consequently the sound will be heard equally loud after it has passed through the strings. Having put the strings of the piano across the room, if I sing up the scale, when I come to the note which belongs to each of the strings my voice will suddenly appear to be deadened, because at the moment that the rate of vibration which I impress upon the air coincides with that belonging the strings, part of it will be taken up in setting the strings in motion. As I pass the note, then, which belongs to the strings, that note will be deadened.

Instead of a screen of piano strings let us put in a series of sets of bells, three or four belonging to each set, so that each set of bells answers to three or four notes, and so that all the sets are exactly alike. Now suppose that these sets of bells are distributed all over the middle part of the room, and that I sing straight up the scale from one note to another until I come to the note that corresponds to one of the bells in these sets, then that note will appear to be deadened at the other end, because part of the vibration communicated to the air will be taken up in setting those bells in motion. When I come to another note which belongs to them, that note will also be deadened; so that a person listening at the other end of the room would observe that certain notes were deadened, or even had disappeared altogether. If, however, I sing loud enough, I then should set all these bells vibrating. What would be heard at the other end of the room? Why, just the chord compounded out of those sounds that belonged to the bells, because the bells having been set vibrating would give out the corresponding notes. So you see there are here three facts. When I sing a note which does not belong to the bells, my voice passes to the end of the room without diminution. When I sing a note that does belong to the bells, then if it is not loud enough it is deadened by passing through the

screen; but if it is loud enough it sets the bells vibrating, and is heard afterwards. Now just notice this consequence. We have supposed a screen made out of these structures that I have imagined to represent atoms, and when I sing through the scale at one end of the room certain notes appear to be deadened. If I take away half of those structures, what will be the effect? Exactly the same notes will be deadened, but they will not be deadened so much; the notes which are picked out of the thinner screen to be deadened will be exactly the same notes, but the amount of the deadening will not be the same.

So far we have only been talking about the transmission of *sound*. You know that sound consists of certain waves which are passed along in the air; they are called "aerial vibrations." We also know that light consists of certain waves which are passed along, not in the air, but along another medium. I cannot stop at present to explain to you what the sort of evidence is upon which that assertion rests, but it is the same sort of evidence as that which I shall try to show you belongs to the statement about atoms; that is to say, the "undulatory theory," as it is called, of light, the theory that light consists of waves transmitted along a certain medium, has passed out of the stage of being a theory, and has passed into the stage of being a demonstrated fact. The difference between a theory and a demonstrated fact is something like this: If you supposed a man to have walked from Chorlton Town Hall down here say in ten minutes, the natural conclusion would be that he had walked along the Stretford Road. Now that theory would entirely account for all the facts, but at the same time the facts would not be proved by it. But suppose it happened to be winter time, with snow on the road, and that you could trace the man's footsteps all along the road, then you would know that he had walked along that way. The sort of evidence we have to show that light does consist of waves transmitted through a medium is the sort of evidence that footsteps upon the snow make; it is not a theory merely which simply accounts for the facts, but it is a theory which can be reasoned back to from the facts without any other theory being possible. So that you must just for the present take it for granted that the arguments in favour of the hypo-

thesis that light consists of waves are such as to take it out of the region of hypothesis, and make it into demonstrated fact.

Very well, then, light consists of waves transmitted along this medium in the same way that sound is transmitted along the air. The waves are not of the same kind; but still they are waves, and they are transmitted as such; and the different colours of light correspond to the different lengths of these waves, or to the different rates of the vibration of the medium, just as the different pitches of sound correspond to the different lengths of the air-waves or to the different rates of the vibration of the air. Now, if we take any gas, such as oxygen, and we pass light through it, we find that that gas intercepts, or weakens, certain particular colours. If we take any other gas, such as hydrogen, and pass light through it, we find that that gas intercepts, or weakens, certain other particular colours of the light. There are two ways in which it can do that: it is clear that the undulations, or waves, are made weaker, because they happen to coincide with the rate of vibration of the gas they are passing through. But the gas may vibrate as a whole in the same way that the air does when you transmit sound. Or the waves may be stopped, because the gas consists of a number of small structures; just as my screen, which I imagine to consist of structures; or just as the screen of piano strings is made up of the same structure many times repeated. Either of these suppositions would apparently at first account for the fact that certain waves of light are intercepted by the gas, while others are let through. But how is it that we can show one of these suppositions is wrong and the other is right? Instead of taking so small a structure as piano strings, let us suppose we had got a series of fiddles, the strings of all of them being stretched exactly in tune. I suppose this case because it makes a more complicated structure, for there would be two or three notes corresponding in each fiddle. If you suppose this screen of fiddles to be hung up and then compressed, what will be the effect? The effect of the compression will be, if they are all in contact, that each fiddle itself will be altered. If the fiddles are compressed longways, the strings will give lower notes than before, and consequently the series of notes which will be intercepted by that screen will be different from the series of notes which

were intercepted before. But if you have a screen made out of fiddles which are at a distance from one another, and then if you compress them into a smaller space by merely bringing them nearer together, without making them touch, then it is clear that exactly the same notes will be intercepted as before; only, as there will be more fiddles in the same space, the deadening of the sound will be greater.

Now when you compress any gas you find that it intercepts exactly the same colours of light which it intercepted before it was compressed. It follows, therefore, that the rates of vibration which it intercepts depend not upon the mass of the gas whose properties are altered by the compression, but upon some individual parts of it which were at a distance from one another before, and which are only brought nearer together without being absolutely brought into contact so as to squeeze them. That is the sort of reasoning by which it is made clear that the interception of light, or particular waves of light, by means of a gas, must depend on certain individual structures in the gas which are at a distance from one another, and which by compression are not themselves compressed, but only brought nearer to one another.

There is an extremely interesting consequence which follows from this reasoning, and which was deduced from it by Professor Stokes in the year 1851, and which was afterwards presented in a more developed form in the magnificent researches of Kirchhoff—namely, the reasoning about the presence of certain matter in the sun. If you analyse the solar light by passing it through a prism, the effect of the prism is to divide it off so as to separate the light into the different colours which it contains. That line of variously coloured light which is produced by the prism is, as you know, called the Spectrum. When that spectrum is made in a very accurate way, so that the parts of it are well defined, it is observed to contain certain dark lines. That is, there is a certain kind of light which is missing in the sunlight; certain kinds of light, as we travel along the scale of lights, are missing. Why are they missing? Because there is something that the light has passed through which intercepts or weakens those kinds of light. Now that something which the light has passed through, how shall we find out what it is? It

ought to be the same sort of substance which if it were heated would give out exactly that kind of light. Now there is a certain kind of light which is intercepted which makes a group of dark lines in the solar spectrum. There are two principal lines which together are called the line D; and it is found that exactly that sort of light is emitted by sodium when heated hot enough. The conclusion therefore is that that matter which intercepts that particular part of the solar light is sodium, or that there is sodium somewhere between us and the hot portion of the sun which sends us the light. And other reasons lead us to conclude that this sodium is not in the atmosphere of the earth, but in the neighbourhood of the sun—that it exists in a gaseous state in the sun's atmosphere. And nearly all the lines in the solar spectrum have been explained in that way, and shown to belong to certain substances which we are able to heat here, and to show that when they are heated they give out exactly the same kind of light which they intercepted when the light was first given out by the sun and they stood in the way. So you see that is a phenomenon exactly like the phenomenon presented by the finger-glass that we began with.

Precisely the same light which any gas will give out when it is heated, that same kind of light it will stop or much weaken if the light is attempted to be passed through it. That means that this medium which transmits light, and which we call the "luminiferous ether," has a certain rate of vibration for every particular colour of the spectrum. When that rate of vibration coincides with one of the rates of vibration of an atom, then it will be stopped by that atom, because it will set the atom vibrating itself. If therefore you pass light of any particular colour through a gas whose atoms are capable of the corresponding rate of vibration, the light will be cut off by the gas. If on the other hand you so far heat the gas that the atoms are vibrating strongly enough to give out light, it will give out a light of a kind which it previously stopped.

We have reason then for believing that a simple gas consists of a great number of atoms; that it consists of very small portions, each of which has a complicated structure, but that structure is the same for each of them, and that these portions are separate, or that there is space between them.

In the next place I want to show you what is the evidence upon which we believe that these portions of the gas are in motion—that they are constantly moving.

If this were a political instead of a scientific meeting, there would probably be some people who would be inclined to disagree with us, instead of all being inclined to agree with one another; and these people might have taken it into their heads, as has been done in certain cases, to stop the meeting by putting a bottle of sulphuretted hydrogen in one corner of the room and taking the cork out. You know that after a certain time the whole room would contain sulphuretted hydrogen, which is a very unpleasant thing to come in contact with. Now how is it that that gas which was contained in a small bottle could get in a short time over the whole room unless it was in motion? What we mean by motion is change of place. The gas was in one corner, and it is afterwards all over the room. There has therefore been motion somewhere, and this motion must have been of considerable rapidity, because we know that there was the air which filled the room beforehand to oppose resistance to that motion. We cannot suppose that the sulphuretted hydrogen gas was the only thing that was in motion, and that the air was not in motion itself, because if we had used any other gas we should find that it would diffuse itself in exactly the same way. An argument just like that applies also to the case of a liquid. Suppose this room were a large tank entirely filled with water and anybody were to drop a little iodine into it, after a certain time the whole of the water would be found to be tinged of a blue colour. Now that drop may be introduced into any part of the tank you like, either at the top or bottom, and it will always diffuse itself over the whole water. There has here again been motion. We cannot suppose that the drop which was introduced was the only thing that moved about, because any other substance would equally have moved about. And the water has moved into the place where the drop was, because in the place where you put the drop there is not so much iodine as there was to begin with. Well then it is clear that in the case of a gas, these particles of which we have shown it to consist must be constantly in motion; and we have shown also that a liquid must consist of parts that are

in motion, because it is able to admit the particles of another body among them.

When we have decided that the particles of a gas are in motion, there are two things that they may do—they may either hit against one another, or they may not. Now it is established that they do hit against one another, and that they do not proceed along straight lines independent of one another. But I cannot at present explain to you the whole of the reasoning upon which that conclusion is grounded. It is grounded upon some rather hard mathematics. It was shown by Professor Clerk Maxwell that a gas cannot be a medium consisting of small particles moved about in all directions in straight lines, which do not interfere with one another, but which bound off from the surfaces which contain this medium. Supposing we had a box containing a gas of this sort. Well, these particles do not interfere with one another, but only rebound when they come against the sides of the box; then that portion of the gas will behave not like a gas but like a solid body. The peculiarity of liquids and gases is that they do not mind being bent and having their shape altered. It has been shown by Clerk Maxwell that a medium whose particles do not interfere with one another would behave like a solid body and object to be bent. It was a most extraordinary conclusion to come to, but it is entirely borne out by the mathematical formulæ. It is certain that if there were a medium composed of small particles flying about in all directions and not interfering with one another, then that medium would be to a certain extent solid, that is, would resist any bending or change of shape. By that means then it is known that these particles do run against one another. And they come apart again. There were two things of course they might do: they might either go on in contact, or they might come apart. Now we know that they come apart for this reason—we have already considered how two gases in contact will diffuse into one another. If you were to put a bucket containing carbonic acid (which is very heavy) upon the floor of this room, it would after a certain time diffuse itself over all the room; you would find carbonic acid gas in every part of the room. Graham found that if you were to cover over the top of that bucket with a very thin cover made out of graphite, or black-

lead, then the gas would diffuse itself over the room pretty nearly as fast as before. The graphite acts like a porous body, as a sponge does to water, and lets the gas get through. The remarkable thing is that if the graphite is thin the gas will get through nearly as fast as it will if nothing is put between to stop it. Graham found out another fact. Suppose that bucket to contain two very different gases, say a mixture of hydrogen and carbonic acid gas. Then the hydrogen would come out through the blacklead very much faster than the carbonic acid gas. It is found by mathematical calculation that if you have two gases, which are supposed to consist of small particles which are all banging about, the gas whose particles are lightest will come out quickest; that a gas which is four times as light will come out twice as fast; and a gas nine times as light will come out three times as fast, and so on. Consequently, when you mix two gases together and then pass them through a thin piece of blacklead, the lightest gas comes out quickest, and is as it were sifted from the other. Now suppose we put pure hydrogen into a bucket and put blacklead on the top, and then see how fast the hydrogen comes out. If the particles of the hydrogen are different from one another, if some are heavier, the lighter ones will come out first. Now let us suppose we have got a vessel which is divided into two parts by a thin wall of blacklead. We will put hydrogen into one of these parts and allow it to come through this blacklead into the other part; then if the hydrogen contains any molecules or atoms which are lighter than the others, those will come through first. If we test the hydrogen that has come through, we shall find that the atoms, as a rule, on one side of this wall are lighter than the atoms on the other side. How should we find that out? Why we should take these two portions of gas, and we should try whether one of them would pass through another piece of blacklead quicker than the other; because if it did, it would consist of lighter particles. Graham found that it did not pass any quicker. Supposing you put hydrogen into one half of such a vessel, and then allow the gas to diffuse itself through the blacklead, the gas on the two sides would be found to be of precisely the same qualities. Consequently, there has not been in this case any sifting of the lighter particles from the heavier ones; and

consequently there could not have been any lighter particles to sift, because we know that if there were any they would have come through quicker than the others. Therefore we are led to the conclusion that in any simple gas, such as hydrogen or oxygen, all the atoms are, as nearly as possible, of the same weight. We have no right to conclude that they are exactly of the same weight, because there is no experiment in the world that enables us to come to an exact conclusion of that sort. But we are enabled to conclude that, within the limits of experiment, all the atoms of a simple gas are of the same weight. What follows from that? It follows that when they bang against one another, they must come apart again; for if two of them were to go on as one, that one would be twice as heavy as the others, and would consequently be sifted back. It follows therefore that two particles of a gas which bang against one another must come apart again, because if they were to cling together they would form a particle twice as heavy, and so this clinging would show itself when the gas was passed through the screen of blacklead.

Now there are certain particles or small masses of matter which we know to bang against one another according to certain laws; such, for example, as billiard balls. The way in which different bodies, after hitting together, come apart again, depends on the constitution of those bodies. The earlier hypothesis about the constitution of a gas supposed that the particles of them came apart according to the same law that billiard balls do; but that hypothesis, although it was found to explain a great number of phenomena, did not explain them all. And it was Professor Clerk Maxwell again who found the hypothesis which does explain all the rest of the phenomena. He found that particles when they come together separate as if they repelled one another, or pushed one another away; and as if they did that much more strongly when close together than when further apart. You know that what is called the great law of gravitation asserts that all bodies pull one another together according to a certain rule, and that they pull one another more when close than when further apart. Now that law differs from the law which Clerk Maxwell found out as affecting the repulsion of gaseous particles. The law of attraction of gravitation is

this; that when you halve the distance, you have to multiply the attraction four times—twice two make four. If you divide the distance into three, you must multiply the attraction nine times—three times three are nine. Now in the case of atomic repulsion you have got to multiply not twice two, or three times three, but five twos together—which multiplied make 32. If you halve the distance between two particles you increase the repulsion 32 times. So also five threes multiplied together make 243; and if you divide the distance between two particles by three, then you increase the repulsion by 243. So you see the repulsion increases with enormous rapidity as the distance diminishes. That law is expressed by saying that the repulsion of two gases is inversely as the fifth power of the distance. But I must warn you against supposing that that law is established in the same sense that these other statements that we have been making are established. That law is true provided that there is a repulsion between two gaseous particles, and that it varies as a power of the distance; it is proved that if there is any law of repulsion, and if the law is that it varies as some power of the distance, then that power cannot be any other than the fifth. It has not been shown that the action between the two particles is not something perhaps more complicated than this, but which on the average produces the same results. But still the statement that the action of gaseous molecules upon one another can be entirely explained by the assumption of a law like that, is the newest statement in physics since the law of gravitation was discovered. You know that there are other actions of matter which apparently take place through intervening spaces and which always follow the same law as gravitation, such as the attraction or repulsion of magnetical or electrical particles: those follow the same law as gravitation. But here is a law of repulsion which follows a different law from that of gravitation, and in that lies the extreme interest of Professor Clerk Maxwell's investigation.

The next thing that I want to give you reasoning for is again rather a hard thing in respect of the reasoning, but the fact is an extremely simple and beautiful one. It is this. Suppose I have two vessels, say cylinders, with stoppers which do not fit upon the top of the vessel, but slide up and

down inside and yet fit exactly. These two vessels are of exactly the same size; one of them contains hydrogen and the other contains oxygen. They are to be of the same temperature and pressure, that is to say they will bear exactly the same weight on the top. Very well, these two vessels having equal volumes of gas of the same pressure and temperature will contain just the same number of atoms in each, only the atoms of oxygen will be heavier than the atoms of hydrogen. Now how is it that we arrive at that result? I shall endeavour to explain the process of reasoning. Boyle discovered a law about the dependence of the pressure of a gas upon its volume which showed that if you squeezed a gas into a smaller space it will press so much the more as the space has been diminished. If the space has been diminished one-half, then the pressure is doubled; if the space is diminished to one-third, then the pressure is increased to three times what it was before. This holds for a varying volume of the same gas. That same law would tell us that if we put twice the quantity of gas into the same space, we should get twice the amount of pressure. Dalton made a new statement of that law, which expresses it in this form, that when you put more gas into a vessel which already contains gas, the pressure that you get is the sum of the two pressures which would be got from the two gases separately. You will see directly that that is equivalent to the other law. But the importance of Dalton's statement of the law is this, that it enabled the law to be extended from the case of the same gas to the case of two different gases. If instead of putting a pint of oxygen into a vessel already containing a pint, I were to put in a pint of nitrogen, I should equally get a double pressure. The oxygen and nitrogen, when mixed together, would exert the sum of the pressures upon the vessel that the oxygen and nitrogen would exert separately. Now the explanation of that pressure is this. The pressure of the gas upon the sides of the vessel is due to the impact of these small particles which are constantly flying about and impinging upon the sides of the vessel. It is first of all shown mathematically that the effect of that impinging would be the same as the pressure of the gas. But the amount of the pressure could be found if we knew how many particles

there were in a given space, and what was the effect of each one when it impinged on the sides of the vessel. You see directly why it is that putting twice as many particles, which are going at the same rate, into the same vessel, we should get twice the effect. Although there are just twice as many particles to hit the sides of the vessel, they are apparently stopped by each other when they bound off. But the effect of there being more particles is to make them come back quicker; so that altogether the number of impacts upon the sides of the vessel is just doubled when you double the number of particles. Supposing we have got a cubic inch of space, then the amount of pressure upon the side of that cubic inch depends upon the number of particles inside the cube, and upon the energy with which each one of them strikes against the sides of the vessel.

Again there is a law which connects together the pressure of a gas and its temperature. It is found that there is a certain absolute zero of temperature, and that if you reckon your temperature from that, then the pressure of the gas is directly proportional to the temperature, that twice the temperature will give twice the pressure of the same gas, and three times the temperature will give three times the pressure of the same gas.

Well now we have just got to remember these two rules —the law of Boyle, as expressed by Dalton, connecting together the pressure of a gas and its volume, and this law which connects together the pressure with the absolute temperature. You must remember that it has been calculated by mathematics that the pressure upon one side of a vessel of a cubic inch has been got by multiplying together the number of particles into the energy with which each of them strikes against the side of the vessel. If we keep that same gas in a vessel and alter its temperature, then we find that the pressure is proportional to the temperature; but since the number of molecules remains the same when we double the pressure, we must alter that other factor in the pressure, we must double the energy with which each of the particles attacks the side of the vessel. That is to say, when we double the temperature of the gas we double the energy of each particle; consequently the temperature of the gas is

proportional always to the energy of its particles. That is the case with a single gas. If we mix two gases, what happens? They come to exactly the same temperature. It is calculated also by mathematics that the particles of one gas have the same effect as those of the other; that is, the light particles go faster to make up for their want of weight. If you mix oxygen and hydrogen, you find that the particles of hydrogen go four times as fast as the particles of oxygen. Now we have here a mathematical statement—that when two gases are mixed together, the energy of the two particles is the same; and with any one gas considered by itself that energy is proportional to the temperature. Also when two gases are mixed together the two temperatures become equal. If you think over that a little, you will see that it proves that whether we take the same gas or different gases, the energy of the single particles is always proportional to the temperature of the gas.

What follows? If I have two vessels containing gas at the same pressure and the same temperature (suppose that hydrogen is in one and oxygen in the other), then I know that the temperature of the hydrogen is the same as the temperature of the oxygen, and that the pressure of the hydrogen is the same as the pressure of the oxygen. I also know (because the temperatures are equal) that the average energy of a particle of the hydrogen is the same as that of a particle of the oxygen. Now the pressure is made up by multiplying the energy by the number of particles in both gases; and as the pressure in both cases is the same, therefore the number of particles is the same. That is the reasoning; I am afraid it will seem rather complicated at first hearing, but it is this sort of reasoning which establishes the fact that in two equal volumes of different gases at the same temperature and pressure, the number of particles is the same.

Now there is an exceedingly interesting conclusion which was arrived at very early in the theory of gases, and calculated by Mr. Joule. It is found that the pressure of a gas upon the sides of a vessel may be represented quite fairly in this way. Let us divide the particles of gas into three companies or bands. Suppose I have a cubical vessel in which one of these companies is to go forward and backward, another right

and left, and the other to go up and down. If we make those three companies of particles to go in their several directions, then the effect upon the sides of the vessel will not be altered; there will be the same impact and pressure. It was also found out that the effect of this pressure would not be altered if we combined together all the particles forming one company into one mass, and made them impinge with the same velocity upon the sides of the vessel. The effect of the pressure would be just the same. Now we know what the weight of a gas is, and we know what the pressure is that it produces, and we want to find the velocity it is moving at on the average. We can find out at what velocity a certain weight has to move in order to produce a certain definite impact. Therefore we have merely to take the weight of the gas, divide it by three, and to find how fast that has to move in order to produce the pressure, and that will give us the average rate at which the gas is moving. By that means Mr. Joule calculated that in air of ordinary temperature and pressure the velocity is about 500 mètres per second, nearly five miles in sixteen seconds, or nearly twenty miles a minute—about sixty times the rate of an ordinary train.

The average velocity of the particles of gas is about 1½ times as great as the velocity of sound. You can easily remember the velocity of sound in air at freezing point—it is 333 mètres per second; so that about 1½ times, really 1·432 of that would be the average velocity of a particle of air. At the ordinary temperature—60 degrees Fahrenheit—the velocity would, of course, be greater.

Let us consider how much we have established so far about these small particles of which we find that the gas consists. We have so far been treating mainly of gases. We find that a gas, such as the air in this room, consists of small particles, which are separate with spaces between them. They are as a matter of fact of two different types, oxygen and nitrogen. All the particles of oxygen contain the same structure, and the rates of internal vibration are the same for all these particles. It is also compounded of particles of nitrogen which have different rates of internal vibration. We have shown that these particles are moving about constantly. We

have shown that they impinge against and interfere with one another's motion; and we have shown that they come apart again. We have shown that in vessels of the same size containing two different gases of the same pressure and temperature there is the same number of those two different sorts of particles. We have shown also that the average velocity of these particles in the air of this room is about twenty miles a minute.

There is one other point of very great interest to which I want to call your attention. The word "atom," as you know, has a Greek origin; it means that which is not divided. Various people have given it the meaning of that which *cannot* be divided; but if there is anything which cannot be divided we do not know it, because we know nothing about possibilities or impossibilities, only about what has or has not taken place. Let us then take the word in the sense in which it can be applied to a scientific investigation. An atom means something which is not divided *in certain cases that we are considering*. Now these atoms I have been talking about may be called physical atoms, because they are not divided under those circumstances that are considered in physics. These atoms are not divided under the ordinary alteration of temperature and pressure of gas, and variation of heat; they are not in general divided by the application of electricity to the gas, unless the stream is very strong. But there is a science which deals with operations by which these atoms which we have been considering can be divided into two parts, and in which therefore they are no longer atoms. That science is chemistry. The chemist therefore will not consent to call these little particles that we are speaking of by the name of atoms, because he knows that there are certain processes to which he can subject them which will divide them into parts, and then they cease to be things which have not been divided. I will give you an instance of that. The atoms of oxygen which exist in enormous numbers in this room consist of two portions, which are of exactly the same structure. Every molecule, as the chemist would call it, travelling in this room, is made up of two portions which are exactly alike in their structure. It is a complicated structure; but that structure is double. It is like the human body—one side is like the

other side. How do we know that? We know it in this way. Suppose that I take a vessel which is divided into two parts by a division which I can take away. One of these parts is twice as large as the other part, and will contain twice as much gas. Into that part which is twice as big as the other I put hydrogen; into the other I put oxygen. Suppose that one contains a quart and the other a pint; then I have a quart of hydrogen and a pint of oxygen in this vessel. Now I will take away the division so that they can permeate one another, and then if the vessel is strong enough I pass an electric spark through them. The result will be an explosion inside the vessel; it will not break if it is strong enough; but the quart of hydrogen and the pint of oxygen will be converted into steam; they will combine together to form steam. If I choose to cool down that steam until it is just as hot as the two gases were before I passed the electric spark through them, then I shall find that at the same pressure there will only be a quart of steam. Now let us remember what it was that we established about two equal volumes of different gases at the same temperature and pressure. First of all, we had a quart of hydrogen with a pint of oxygen. We know that that quart of hydrogen contains twice as many hydrogen molecules as the pint of oxygen contains of oxygen molecules. Let us take particular numbers. Suppose instead of a quart or a pint we take a smaller quantity, and say that there are 100 hydrogen and 50 oxygen molecules. Well, after the cooling has taken place, I should find a volume of steam which was equal to the volume of hydrogen, that is, I should find 100 steam molecules. Now these steam molecules are made up of hydrogen and oxygen molecules. I have got therefore 100 things which are all exactly alike, made up of 100 things and 50 things—100 hydrogen and 50 oxygen, making 100 steam molecules. Now since the 100 steam molecules are exactly alike, we have those 50 oxygen molecules distributed over the whole of these steam molecules. Therefore, unless the oxygen contains something which is common to the hydrogen also, it is clear that each of those 50 molecules of oxygen must have been divided into two, because you cannot put 50 horses into 100 stables, so that there shall be exactly the same amount of horse in each stable; but you can divide

50 *pairs* of horses among 100 stables. There we have the supposition that there is nothing common to the oxygen and hydrogen, that there is no structure that belongs to each of them. Now that supposition is made by a great majority of chemists. Sir Benjamin Brodie, however, has made a supposition that there is a structure in hydrogen which is also common to certain other elements. He has himself, for particular reasons, restricted that supposition to the belief that hydrogen is contained as a whole in many of the other elements. Let us make that further supposition and it will not alter our case at all. We have then 100 hydrogen and 50 oxygen molecules, but there is something common to the two. Well, this something we will call X. Of this we have to make 100 equal portions. Now that cannot be the case unless that structure occurred twice as often in each molecule of oxygen as in each molecule of hydrogen. Consequently, whether the oxygen molecule contains something common to hydrogen or not, it is equally true that the oxygen molecule must contain the same thing repeated twice over; it must be divisible into two parts which are exactly alike.

Similar reasoning applies to a great number of other elements; to all those which are said to have an even number of atomicities. But with regard to those which are said to have an odd number, although many of these also are supposed to be double, yet the evidence in favour of that supposition is of a different kind; and we must regard the supposition as still a theory and not yet a demonstrated fact.

Now I have spoken so far only of gases. I must for one or two moments refer to some calculations of Sir William Thomson, which are of exceeding interest as showing us what is the proximity of the molecules in liquids and in solids. By four different modes of argument derived from different parts of science, and pointing mainly to the same conclusion, he has shown that the distance between two molecules in a drop of water is such that there are between five hundred millions and five thousand millions of them in an inch. He expresses that result in this way—that if you were to magnify a drop of water to the size of the earth, then the coarseness of the graining of it would be something between that of cricket-balls and small shot. Or we may express it in this

rather striking way. You know that the best microscopes can be made to magnify from 6000 to 8000 times. A microscope which would magnify that result as much again would show the molecular structure of water.

There is another scientific theory analogous to this one which leads us to hope that some time we shall know more about these molecules. You know that since the time that we have known all about the motions of the solar system, people have speculated about the origin of it; and a theory started by Laplace and worked out by other people has, like the theory of luminiferous ether, been taken out of the rank of hypothesis into that of fact. We know the rough outlines of the history of the solar system, and there are hopes that when we know the structure and properties of a molecule, what its internal motions are and what are the parts and shape of it, somebody may be able to form a theory as to how that was built up and what it was built out of. It is obvious that until we know the shape and structure of it, nobody will be able to form such a theory. But we can look forward to the time when the structure and motions in the inside of a molecule will be so well known that some future Kant or Laplace will be able to make an hypothesis about the history and formation of matter.[1]

[1] The mathematical development of this subject is due to Clausius and Maxwell. Reference to the chief papers will be found at the beginning of Maxwell's Memoir, "On the Dynamical Theory of Gases," Phil. Trans., 1867.

THE FIRST AND THE LAST CATASTROPHE[1]

A CRITICISM ON SOME RECENT SPECULATIONS ABOUT THE DURATION OF THE UNIVERSE

I PROPOSE in this lecture to consider speculations of quite recent days about the beginning and the end of the world. The world is a very interesting thing, and I suppose that from the earliest times that men began to form any coherent idea of it at all, they began to guess in some way or other how it was that it all began, and how it was all going to end. But there is one peculiarity about these speculations which I wish now to consider, that makes them quite different from the early guesses of which we read in many ancient books. These modern speculations are attempts to find out how things began, and how they are to end, by consideration of the way in which they are going on now. And it is just that character of these speculations that gives them their interest for you and for me; for we have only to consider these questions from the scientific point of view. By the scientific point of view I mean one which attempts to apply past experience to new circumstances according to an observed order of nature. So that we shall only consider the way in which things began, and the way in which they are to end, in so far as we seem able to draw inferences about the questions from facts which we know about the way in which things are going on now. And, in fact, the great interest of the subject to me lies in the amount of illustration which it offers of the degree of knowledge which we have now attained of the way in which the universe is going on.

[1] Sunday Lecture Society, April 12, 1874; afterwards revised for publication.

The first of these speculations is one set forth by Professor Clerk Maxwell, in a lecture on Molecules delivered before the British Association at Bradford. Now, this argument of his which he put before the British Association at Bradford depends entirely upon the modern theory of the molecular constitution of matter. I think this the more important, because a great number of people appear to have been led to the conclusion that this theory is very similar to the guesses which we find in ancient writers—Democritus and Lucretius. It so happens that these ancient writers did hold a view of the constitution of things which in many striking respects agrees with the view which we hold in modern times. This parallelism has been brought recently before the public by Professor Tyndall in his excellent address at Belfast. And it is perhaps on account of the parallelism, which he pointed out at that place, between the theories held amongst the ancients and the theory held amongst the moderns, that many people who are acquainted with classic literature have thought that a knowledge of the views of Democritus and Lucretius would enable them to understand and criticise the modern theory of matter. That, however, is a mistake. The difference between the two is mainly this: the atomic theory of Democritus was a guess, and no more than a guess. Everybody around him was guessing about the origin of things, and they guessed in a great number of ways; but he happened to make a guess which was more near the right thing than any of the others. This view was right in its main hypothesis—that all things are made up of elementary parts, and that the different properties of different things depend rather upon difference of arrangement than upon ultimate difference in the substance of which they are composed. Although this was contained in the atomic theory of Democritus, as expounded by Lucretius, yet it will be found by any one who examines further the consequences which are drawn from it that it very soon diverges from the truth of things, as we might naturally expect it would. On the contrary, the view of the constitution of matter which is held by scientific men in the present day is not a guess at all.

In the first place I will endeavour to explain what are the main points in this theory. First of all we must take the

simplest form of matter, which turns out to be a gas—such, for example, as the air in this room. The belief of scientific men in the present day is that this air is not a continuous thing, that it does not fill the whole of the space in the room, but is made up of an enormous number of exceedingly small particles. There are two sorts of particles: one sort of particle is oxygen, and another sort of particle nitrogen. All the particles of oxygen are as near as possible alike in these two respects; first in weight, and secondly in certain peculiarities of mechanical structure. These small molecules are not at rest in the room, but are flying about in all directions with a mean velocity of seventeen miles a minute. They do not fly far in one direction; but any particular molecule, after going over an incredibly short distance—the measure of which has been made—meets another, not exactly plump, but a little on one side, so that they behave to one another somewhat in the same way as two people do who are dancing Sir Roger de Coverley; they join hands, swing round, and then fly away in different directions. All these molecules are constantly changing the direction of each other's motion; they are flying about with very different velocities, although, as I have said, their mean velocity is about seventeen miles a minute. If the velocities were all marked off on a scale, they would be found distributed about the mean velocity just as shots are distributed about a mark. If a great many shots are fired at a target, the hits will be found thickest at the bull's-eye, and they will gradually diminish as we go away from that, according to a certain law which is called the law of error. It was first stated clearly by Laplace; and it is one of the most remarkable consequences of theory that the molecules of a gas have their velocities distributed amongst them precisely according to this law of error. In the case of a liquid, it is believed that the state of things is quite different. We said that in the gas the molecules are moved in straight lines, and that it is only during a small portion of their motion that they are deflected by other molecules; but in a liquid we may say that the molecules go about as if they were dancing the grand chain in the Lancers. Every molecule after parting company with one finds another, and so is constantly going about in a

curved path, and never sent quite clear away from the sphere of action of the surrounding molecules. But, notwithstanding that, all molecules in a liquid are constantly changing their places, and it is for that reason that diffusion takes place in the liquid. Take a large tank of water and drop a little iodine into it, and you will find after a certain time all the water turned slightly blue. That is because all the iodine molecules have changed like the others and spread themselves over the whole of the tank. Because, however, you cannot see this, except where you use different colours, you must not suppose that it does not take place where the colours are the same. In every liquid all the molecules are running about and continually changing and mixing themselves up in fresh forms. In the case of a solid quite a different thing takes place. In a solid every molecule has a place which it keeps; that is to say, it is not at rest any more than a molecule of a liquid or a gas, but it has a certain mean position which it is always vibrating about and keeping fairly near to, and it is kept from losing that position by the action of the surrounding molecules. These are the main points of the theory of the constitution of matter as at present believed.

It differs from the theory of Democritus in this way. There is no doubt that in the first origin of it, when it was suggested to the mind of Daniel Bernouilli as an explanation of the pressure of gases, and to the mind of Dalton as an explanation of chemical reactions, it was a guess; that is to say, it was a supposition which would explain these facts of physics and chemistry, but which was not known to be true. Some theories are still in that position; other theories are known to be true, because they can be argued back to from the facts. In order to make out that your supposition is true, it is necessary to show, not merely that that particular supposition will explain the facts, but also that no other one will. Now, by the efforts of Clausius and Clerk Maxwell, the molecular theory of matter has been put in this other position. Namely, instead of saying, Let us suppose such and such things are true,—and then deducing from that supposition what the consequences ought to be, and showing that these consequences are just the facts which we observe —instead of doing that, I say, we make certain experiments,

we show that certain facts are undoubtedly true, and from these facts we go back by a direct chain of logical reasoning, which there is no way of getting out of, to the statement that all matter is made up of separate pieces or molecules, and that in matter of a given kind, in oxygen, or in hydrogen, or in nitrogen, these molecules are of very nearly the same weight, and have certain mechanical properties which are common to all of them. In order to show you something of the kind of evidence for that statement, I must mention another theory which, as it seems to me, is in the same position; namely, the doctrine of the luminiferous ether, or that wonderful substance which is distributed all over space, and which carries light and radiant heat. By means of certain experiments upon interference of light we can show, not by any hypothesis, not by any guess at all, but by a pure interpretation of the experiment—that in every ray of light there is some change or other, whatever it is, which is periodic in time and in space. By saying it is periodic in time, I mean that, at a given point of the ray of light, this change increases up to a certain instant, then decreases, then increases in the opposite direction, and then decreases again, and so on alternately. That is shown by experiments of interference; it is not a theory which will explain the facts, but it is a fact which is got out of observation. By saying that this phenomenon is periodic in space, I mean that, if at any given instant you could examine the ray of light, you would find that some change or disturbance, whatever it is, has taken place all along it in different degrees. It vanishes at certain points, and between these it increases gradually to a maximum on one side and the other alternately. That is to say, in travelling along a ray of light there is a certain change (which can be observed by experiments, by operating upon a ray of light with other rays of light) which goes through a periodic variation in amount. The height of the sea, as you know if you travel along it, goes through certain periodic changes; it increases and decreases, and increases and decreases again at definite intervals. And if you take the case of waves travelling over the sea, and place yourself at a given point, or mark a point by putting a cork upon the surface, you will find that the cork will rise up and down;

that is to say, there will be a change or displacement of the cork's position, which is periodic in time, which increases and decreases, then increases in the opposite direction, and decreases again. Now this fact, which is established by experiment, and which is not a guess at all—the fact that light is a phenomenon periodic in time and space—is what we call the wave theory of light. The word "theory" here does not mean a guess; it means an organised account of the facts, such that from it you may deduce results which are applicable to future experiments, the like of which have not yet been made. But we can see more than this. So far we say that light consists of waves, merely in the sense that it consists of some phenomenon or other which is periodic in time and in place; but we know that a ray of light or heat is capable of doing work. Radiant heat, for example, striking on a body, will warm it and enable it to do work by expansion; therefore this periodic phenomenon which takes place in the ray of light is something or other which possesses mechanical energy, which is capable of doing work. We may make it, if you like, a mere matter of definition, and say: Any change which possesses energy is a motion of matter; and this is perhaps the most intelligible definition of matter that we can frame. In that sense, and in that sense only, it is a matter of demonstration, and not a matter of guess, that light consists of the periodic motion of matter, of something which is between the luminous object and our eyes.

But that something is not matter in the ordinary sense of the term; it is not made up of such molecules as gases and liquids and solids are made up of. This last statement again is no guess, but a proved fact. There are people who ask: Why is it necessary to suppose a luminiferous ether to be anything else except molecules of matter in space, in order to carry light about? The answer is a very simple one. In order that separate molecules may carry about a disturbance, it is necessary that they should travel at least as fast as the disturbance travels. Now we know, by means that I shall afterwards come to, that the molecules of gas travel at a very ordinary rate—about twenty times as fast as a good train. But, on the contrary, we know by the most certain of all evidence, by five or six different means, that the velocity of

light is 200,000 miles a second. By that very simple consideration we are able to tell that it is quite impossible for light to be carried by the molecules of ordinary matter, and that it wants something else that lies between those molecules to carry the light. Now, remembering the evidence which we have for the existence of this ether, let us consider another piece of evidence; let us now consider what evidence we have that the molecules of a gas are separate from one another and have something between them. We find out, by experiment again, that the different colours of light depend upon the various rapidity of these waves, depend upon the size and upon the length of the waves that travel through the ether, and that when we send light through glass or any transparent medium except a vacuum, the waves of different lengths travel with different velocities. That is the case with the sea; we find that long waves travel faster than short ones. In much the same way, when light comes out of a vacuum and impinges upon any transparent medium, say upon glass, we find that the rate of transmission of all the light is diminished; that it goes slower when it gets inside of a material body; and that this change is greater in the case of small waves than of large ones. The small waves correspond to blue light, and the large waves correspond to red light. The waves of red light are not made to travel so slowly as the waves of blue light; but, as in the case of waves travelling over the sea, when light moves in the interior of a transparent body the largest waves travel most quickly. Well, then, by using such a body as will separate out the different colours—a prism—we are able to affirm what are the constituents of the light which strikes upon it. The light that comes from the sun is made up of waves of various lengths; but, making it pass through a prism, we can separate it out into a spectrum, and in that way we find a band of light instead of a spot coming from the sun, and to every band in the spectrum corresponds a wave of a certain definite length and definite time in vibration. Now we come to a very singular phenomenon. If you take a gas such as chlorine and interpose it in the path of that light, you will find that certain particular rays of the spectrum are absorbed, while others are not. How is it that certain particular rates of vibration can be absorbed by this

chlorine gas, while others are not? That happens in this way—that the chlorine gas consists of a great number of very small structures, each of which is capable of vibrating internally. Each of these structures is complicated, and is capable of a change of relative position amongst its parts of a vibratory character. We know that molecules are capable of such internal vibrations—for this reason, that if we heat any solid body sufficiently it will in time give out light; that is to say, the molecules are got into such a state of vibration that they start the ether vibrating, and they start the ether vibrating at the same rate at which they vibrate themselves. So that what we learn from the absorption of certain particular rays of light by chlorine gas is that the molecules of that gas are structures which have certain natural rates of vibration which they absorb, precisely those rates of vibration which belong to the molecules naturally. If you sing a certain note to a string of a piano, that string if in tune will vibrate. If, therefore, a screen of such strings were put across a room, and you sang a note on one side, a person on the other side would hear the note very weakly or not at all, because it would be absorbed by the strings; but if you sang another note, not one to which the strings naturally vibrated, then it would pass through, and would not be eaten up by setting the strings vibrating. Now this question arises. Let us put the molecules aside for a moment. Suppose we do not know of their existence, and say: Is this rate of vibration which naturally belongs to the gas a thing which belongs to it as a whole, or does it belong to the separate parts of it? You might suppose that it belongs to the gas as a whole. A jar of water, if you shake it, has a perfectly definite time in which it oscillates, and that is very easily measured. That time of oscillation belongs to the jar of water as a whole. It depends upon the weight of the water and the shape of the jar. But now, by a very certain method, we know that the time of vibration which corresponds to a certain definite gas does not belong to it as a whole, but belongs to the separate parts of it—for this reason, that if you squeeze the gas you do not alter the time of vibration. Let us suppose that we have a great number of fiddles in a room which are all in contact, and have strings accurately tuned to vibrate to

certain notes. If you sang one of those notes all the fiddles would answer; but if you compress them you clearly put them all out of tune. They are all in contact, and they will not answer to the note with the same precision as before. But if you have a room which is full of fiddles, placed at a certain distance from one another, then if you bring them within shorter distances of one another, so that they still do not touch, they will not be put out of tune—they will answer exactly to the same note as before. We see, therefore, that since compression of a gas within certain limits does not alter the rate of vibration which belongs to it, that rate of vibration cannot belong to the body of gas as a whole, but it must belong to the individual parts of it. Now, by such reasoning as this it seems to me that the modern theory of the constitution of matter is put upon a basis which is absolutely independent of hypothesis. The theory is simply an organised statement of the facts; a statement, that is, which is rather different from the experiments, being made out from them in just such a way as to be most convenient for finding out from them what will be the results of other experiments. That is all we mean at present by scientific theory.

Upon this theory Professor Clerk Maxwell founded a certain argument in his lecture before the British Association at Bradford. It is a consequence of the molecular theory, as I said before, that all the molecules of a certain given substance, say oxygen, are as near as possible alike in two respects—first in weight, and secondly in their times of vibration. Professor Clerk Maxwell's argument was this. He first of all said that the theory required us to believe, not that these molecules were as near as may be alike, but that they were exactly alike in these two respects—at least the argument appeared to me to require that. Then he said all the oxygen we know of, whatever processes it has gone through—whether it is got out of the atmosphere, or out of some oxide of iron or carbon, or whether it belongs to the sun or the fixed stars, or the planets or the nebulæ—all this oxygen is alike. And all these molecules of oxygen we find upon the earth must have existed unaltered, or appreciably unaltered, during the whole of the time the earth has been evolved. Whatever vicissitudes they have gone through, however

many times they have entered into combination with iron or carbon and been carried down beneath the crust of the earth, or set free and sent up again through the atmosphere, they have remained steadfast to their original form unaltered, the monuments of what they were when the world began. Professor Clerk Maxwell argues that things which are unalterable, and are exactly alike, cannot have been formed by any natural process. Moreover, being exactly alike, they cannot have existed for ever, and therefore they must have been made. As Sir John Herschel said, "they bear the stamp of the manufactured article."

Into these further deductions I do not propose to enter at all. I confine myself strictly to the first of the deductions which Professor Clerk Maxwell made from the molecular theory. He said that because these molecules are exactly alike, and because they have not been in the least altered since the beginning of time, therefore they cannot have been produced by any process of evolution. It is just that question which I want to discuss. I want to consider whether the evidence we have to prove that these molecules are exactly alike is sufficient to make it impossible that they can have been produced by any process of evolution.

The position that this evidence is not sufficient is evidently by far the easier to defend; because the negative is proverbially hard to prove; and if any one should prove that a process of evolution was impossible, it would be an entirely unique thing in science and philosophy. In fact, we may see from this example precisely how great is the influence of authority in matters of science. If there is any name among contemporary natural philosophers to whom is due the reverence of all true students of science, it is that of Professor Clerk Maxwell. But if any one not possessing his great authority had put forward an argument, founded apparently upon a scientific basis, in which there occurred assumptions about what things can and what things cannot have existed from eternity, and about the exact similarity of two or more things established by experiment, we should say: "Past eternity; absolute exactness; this won't do;" and we should pass on to another book. The experience of all scientific culture for all ages during which it has been a light to men has shown us

that we never do get at any conclusions of that sort. We do not get at conclusions about infinite time or infinite exactness. We get at conclusions which are as nearly true as experiment can show, and sometimes which are a great deal more correct than direct experiment can be, so that we are able actually to correct one experiment by deductions from another; but we never get at conclusions which we have a right to say are absolutely exact; so that even if we find a man of the highest powers saying that he had reason to believe a certain statement to be exactly true, or that he believed a certain thing to have existed from the beginning exactly as it is now, we must say: "It is quite possible that a man of so great eminence may have found out something which is entirely different from the whole of our previous knowledge, and the thing must be inquired into. But, notwithstanding that, it remains a fact that this piece of knowledge will be absolutely of a different kind from anything that we knew before."

Now let us examine the evidence by which we know that the molecules of the same gas are as near as may be alike in weight and in rates of vibration. There were experiments made by Dr. Graham, late Master of the Mint, upon the rate at which different gases were mixed together. He found that if he divided a vessel by a thin partition made of black-lead or graphite, and put different gases on the two opposite sides, they would mix together nearly as fast as though there was nothing between them. The difference was that the plate of graphite made it more easy to measure the rate of mixture; and Dr. Graham made measurements and came to conclusions which are exactly such as are required by the molecular theory. It is found by a process of mathematical calculation that the rate of diffusion of different gases depends upon the weight of the molecules. A molecule of oxygen is sixteen times as heavy as a molecule of hydrogen, and it is found upon experiment that hydrogen goes through a septum or wall of graphite four times as fast as oxygen does. Four times four are sixteen. We express that rule in mathematics by saying that the rate of diffusion of gas is inversely as the square root of the mass of its molecules. If one molecule is thirty-six times as heavy as another—the molecule of chlorine is nearly that multiple of hydrogen—it will diffuse itself at one-sixth of the rate.

This rule is a deduction from the molecular theory, and it is found, like innumerable other such deductions, to come right in practice. But now observe what is the consequence of this. Suppose that, instead of taking one gas and making it diffuse itself through a wall, we take a mixture of two gases. Suppose we put oxygen and hydrogen into one side of a vessel which is divided into two parts by a wall of graphite, and we exhaust the air from the other side, then the hydrogen will go through this wall four times as fast as the oxygen will. Consequently, as soon as the other side is full there will be a great deal more hydrogen in it than oxygen—that is to say, we shall have sifted the oxygen from the hydrogen, not completely, but in a great measure, precisely as by means of a screen we can sift large coals from small ones. Now let us suppose that when we have oxygen gas unmixed with any other the molecules are of two sorts and of two different weights. Then you see that if we make that gas pass through a porous wall, the lighter particles would pass through first, and we should get two different specimens of oxygen gas, in one of which the molecules would be lighter than in the other. The properties of one of these specimens of oxygen gas would necessarily be different from those of the other, and that difference might be found by very easy processes. If there were any perceptible difference between the average weight of the molecules on the two sides of the septum, there would be no difficulty in finding that out. No such difference has ever been observed. If we put any single gas into a vessel, and we filter it through a septum of black-lead into another vessel, we find no difference between the gas on one side of the wall and the gas on the other side. That is to say, if there is any difference it is too small to be perceived by our present means of observation. It is upon that sort of evidence that the statement rests that the molecules of a given gas are all very nearly of the same weight. Why do I say *very nearly?* Because evidence of that sort can never prove that they are exactly of the same weight. The means of measurement we have may be exceedingly correct, but a certain limit must always be allowed for deviation; and if the deviation of molecules of oxygen from a certain standard of weight were very small, and restricted within small limits, it would be

quite possible for our experiments to give us the results which they do now. Suppose, for example, the variation in the size of the oxygen atoms were as great as that in the weight of different men, then it would be very difficult indeed to tell by such a process of sifting what that difference was, or in fact to establish that it existed at all. But, on the other hand, if we suppose the forces which originally caused all those molecules to be so nearly alike as they are to be constantly acting and setting the thing right as soon as by any sort of experiment we set it wrong, then the small oxygen atoms on one side would be made up to their right size, and it would be impossible to test the difference by any experiment which was not quicker than the processes by which they were made right again.

There is another reason why we are obliged to regard that experiment as only approximate, and as not giving us any exact results. There is very strong evidence, although it is not conclusive, that in a given gas—say in a vessel full of carbonic acid—the molecules are not all of the same weight. If we compress the gas, we find that when in the state of a perfect gas, or nearly so, the pressure increases just in the ratio that the volume diminishes. That law is entirely explained by means of the molecular theory. It is what ought to exist if the molecular theory is true. If we compress the gas further, we find that the pressure is smaller than it ought to be according to this law. This can be explained in two ways. First of all we may suppose that the molecules are so crowded that the time during which they are sufficiently near to attract each other sensibly becomes too large a proportion of the whole time to be neglected; and this will account for the change in the law. There is, however, another explanation. We may suppose, for illustration, that two molecules approach one another, and that the speed at which one is going relatively to the other is very small, and then that they so direct one another that they get caught together, and go on circling, making only one molecule. This, on scientific principles, will account for our fact, that the pressure in a gas which is near a liquid state is too small—that instead of the molecules going about singly, some are hung together in couples and some in larger numbers, and making still larger

molecules. This supposition is confirmed very strikingly by the spectroscope. If we take the case of chlorine gas, we find that it changes colour—that it gets darker as it approaches the liquid condition. This change of colour means that there is a change in the rate of vibration which belongs to its component parts; and it is a very simple mechanical deduction that the larger molecules will, as a rule, have a slower rate of vibration than the smaller ones—very much in the same way as a short string gives a higher note than a long one. The colour of chlorine changes just in the way we should expect if the molecules, instead of going about separately, were hanging together in couples; and the same thing is true of a great number of the metals. Mr. Lockyer, in his admirable researches, has shown that several of the metals and metalloids have various spectra, according to the temperature and the pressure to which they are exposed; and he has made it exceedingly probable that these various spectra—that is, the rates of vibration of the molecules—depend upon the molecules being actually of different sizes. Dr. Roscoe has a few months ago shown an entirely new spectrum of the metal sodium, whereby it appears that this metal exists in a gaseous state in four different degrees of aggregation—as a simple molecule, and as three or four or eight molecules together. Every increase in the complication of the molecules—every extra molecule you hang on to the aggregate that goes about together—will make a difference in the rate of the vibration of that system, and so will make a difference in the colour of the substance.

So then we have an evidence of an entirely extraneous character that in a given gas the actual molecules that exist are not all of the same weight. Any experiment which failed to detect this would fail to detect any smaller difference. And here also we can see a reason why, although a difference in the size of the molecules does exist, yet we do not find that out by sifting. Suppose you take oxygen gas consisting of single molecules and double molecules, and you sift it through a plate; the single molecules get through first, but, when they get through, some of them join themselves together as double molecules; and although more double molecules are left on the other side, yet some of them break up and make single molecules; so the process of sifting, which ought to give you

single molecules on the one side and double on the other, merely gives you a mixture of single and double on both sides; because the reasons which originally decided that there should be just those two forms are always at work and continually setting things right.

Now let us take the other point in which molecules are very nearly alike—namely, that they have very nearly the same rate of vibration. The metal sodium in the common salt upon the earth has two rates of vibration; it sounds two notes, as it were, which are very near to each other. They form the well known double line D in the yellow part of the spectrum. These two bright yellow lines are very easy to observe. They occur in the spectra of a great number of stars. They occur in the solar spectrum as dark lines, showing that there is sodium in the outer rim of the sun, which is stopping and shutting off the light of the bright parts behind. All these lines of sodium are just in the same position in the spectrum, showing that the rates of vibration of all these molecules of sodium all over the universe, so far as we know, are as near as possible alike. That implies a similarity of molecular structure, which is a great deal more delicate than any mere test of weight. You may weigh two fiddles until you are tired, and you will never find out whether they are in tune; the one test is a great deal more delicate than the other. Let us see how delicate this test is. Lord Rayleigh has remarked that there is a natural limit for the precise position of a given line in the spectrum, and for this reason. If a body which is emitting a sound comes towards you, you will find that the pitch of the sound is altered. Suppose that omnibuses run every ten minutes in the streets, and you walk in a direction opposite to that in which they are coming, you will obviously pass more omnibuses in an hour than if you walked in an opposite direction. If a body emitting light is coming towards you, you will find more waves in a certain direction than if it were going from you; consequently, if you are approaching a body emitting light, the waves will come at shorter intervals, the vibration will be of shorter period, and the light will be higher up in the spectrum—it will be more blue. If you are going away from the body, then the rate is slower, the light is lower down on

the spectrum, and consequently more red. By means of such variations in the positions of certain known lines, the actual rate of approach of certain fixed stars to the earth has been measured, and the rate of going away of certain other fixed stars has also been measured. Suppose we have a gas which is glowing in a state of incandescence, all the molecules are giving out light at a certain specified rate of vibration; but some of these are coming towards us at a rate much greater than seventeen miles a minute, because the temperature is higher when the gas is glowing, and others are also going away at a much higher rate than that. The consequence is, that instead of having one sharply defined line on the spectrum, instead of having light of exactly one bright colour, we have light which varies between certain limits. If the actual rate of the vibration of the molecules of the gas were marked down upon the spectrum, we should not get that single bright line there, but we should get a bright band overlapping it on each side. Lord Rayleigh calculated that, in the most favourable circumstances, the breadth of this band would not be less than one-hundredth of the distance between the sodium lines. It is precisely upon that experiment that the evidence of the exact similarity of molecules rests. We see, therefore, from the nature of the experiment, that we should get exactly the same results if the rates of vibration of all the molecules were not exactly equal, but varied within certain very small limits. If, for example, the rates of vibration varied in the same way as the heads of different men, then we should get very much what we get now from the experiment.

From the evidence of these two facts, then—the evidence that molecules are of the same weight and degree of vibration—all that we can conclude is that whatever differences there are in their weights, and whatever differences there are in their degrees of vibration, these differences are too small to be found out by our present modes of measurement. And that is precisely all that we can conclude in every similar question of science.

Now, how does this apply to the question whether it is possible for molecules to have been evolved by natural processes? I do not understand myself how, even supposing

we knew that they were exactly alike, we could infer for certain that they had not been evolved; because there is only one case of evolution that we know anything at all about—and that we know very little about yet—namely, the evolution of organised beings. The processes by which that evolution takes place are long, cumbrous, and wasteful processes of natural selection and hereditary descent. They are processes which act slowly, which take a great lapse of ages to produce their natural effects. But it seems to me quite possible to conceive, in our entire ignorance of the subject, that there may be other processes of evolution which result in a definite number of forms—those of the chemical elements—just as these processes of the evolution of organised beings have resulted in a greater number of forms. All that we know of the ether shows that its actions are of a rapidity very much exceeding anything we know of the motions of visible matter. It is a possible thing, for example, that mechanical conditions should exist according to which all bodies must be made of regular solids, that molecules should all have flat sides, and that these sides should all be of the same shape. I suppose that it is just conceivable that it might be impossible for a molecule to exist with two of its faces different. In that case we know there would be just five shapes for a molecule to exist in, and these would be produced by a process of evolution. The various forms of matter that chemists call elements seem to be related one to another very much in that sort of way; that is, as if they rose out of mechanical conditions which only rendered it possible for a certain definite number of forms to exist, and which, whenever any molecule deviates slightly from one of these forms, would immediately operate to set it right again. I do not know at all—we have nothing definite to go upon—what the shape of a molecule is, or what is the nature of the vibration it undergoes, or what its condition is compared with the ether; and in our absolute ignorance it would be impossible to make any conception of the mode in which it grew up. When we know as much about the shape of a molecule as we do about the solar system, for example, we may be as sure of its mode of evolution as we are of the way in which the solar system came about; but in our present ignorance all we have to do is to show that such ex-

periments as we can make do not give us evidence that it is absolutely impossible for molecules of matter to have been evolved out of ether by natural processes.

The evidence which tells us that the molecules of a given substance are alike is only approximate. The theory leaves room for certain small deviations; and consequently if there are any conditions at work in the nature of the ether which render it impossible for other forms of matter than those we know of to exist, the great probability is that when by any process we contrive to sift molecules of one kind from molecules of another, these very conditions at once bring them back and restore to us a mass of gas consisting of molecules whose average type is a normal one.

Now I want to consider a speculation of an entirely different character. A remark was made about thirty years ago by Sir William Thomson upon the nature of certain problems in the conduction of heat. These problems had been solved by Fourier many years before in a beautiful treatise. The theory was that if you knew the degree of warmth of a body, then you could find what would happen to it afterwards; you would find how the body would gradually cool. Suppose you put the end of a poker in the fire and make it red hot, that end is very much hotter than the other end; and if you take it out and let it cool, you will find that heat is travelling from the hot end to the cool end; and the amount of this travelling, and the temperature at either end of the poker, can be calculated with great accuracy. This comes out of Fourier's theory. Now suppose you try to go backwards in time, and take the poker at any instant when it is about half cool, and say: "Does this equation give me the means of finding out what was happening before this time, in so far as the present state of things has been produced by cooling?" You will find the equation will give you an account of the state of the poker before the time when it came into your hands, with great accuracy up to a certain point; but beyond that point it refuses to give you any more information, and it begins to talk nonsense. It is in the nature of a problem of the conduction of heat that it allows you to trace the forward history of it to any extent you like; but it will not allow you to trace the history of it backward beyond a certain point. There is

another case in which a similar thing happens. There is an experiment in that excellent manual, the *Boy's Own Book*, which tells you that if you half fill a glass with beer, and put some paper on it, and then pour in water carefully, and draw the paper out without disturbing the two liquids, the water will rest on the beer. The problem then is to drink the beer without drinking the water, and it is accomplished by means of a straw. Let us suppose these two liquids resting in contact; we shall find they begin to mix; and it is possible to write down a equation exactly of the same form as the equation for the conduction of heat, which would tell you how much water had passed into the beer at any given time after the mixture began. So that, given the water and the beer half mixed, you could trace forward the process of mixing, and measure it with accuracy, and give a perfect account of it; but if you attempt to trace that back you will have a point where the equation will stop, and will begin to talk nonsense. That is the point where you took away the paper, and allowed the mixing to begin. If we apply that same consideration to the case of the poker, and try to trace back its history, you will find that the point where the equation begins to talk nonsense is the point where you took it out of the fire. The mathematical theory supposes that the process of conduction of heat has gone on in a quiet manner, according to certain defined laws, and that if at any time there was a catastrophe, an event not included in the laws of the conduction of heat, then the equation could give you no account of it. There is another thing which is of the same kind—namely, the transmission of fluid friction. If you take your tea in your cup, and stir it round with a spoon, it will not go on circulating round for ever, but will come to a stop; and the reason is that there is a certain friction of the liquid against the sides of the cup, and of the different parts of the liquid with one another. The friction of the different parts of a liquid or a gas is precisely a matter of mixing. The particles which are going fast, and are in the middle, not having been stopped by the side, get mixed; and the particles at the side going slow get mixed with the particles in the middle. This process of mixing can be calculated, and it leads to an equation of exactly the same sort as that which applies to the conduction

of heat. We have, therefore, in these problems a natural process which consists in mixing things together, and this always has the property that you can go on mixing them for ever without coming to anything impossible; but if you attempt to trace the history of the thing backward, you must always come to a state which could not have been produced by mixing—namely, a state of complete separation.

Upon this remark of Sir William Thomson's, the true consequences of which you will find correctly stated in Mr. Balfour Stewart's book on the *Conservation of Energy*, a most singular doctrine has been founded. These writers have been speaking of a particular problem on which they were employed at the moment. Sir William Thomson was speaking of the conduction of heat, and he said this heat problem leads you back to a state which could not have been produced by the conduction of heat. And so Professor Clerk Maxwell, speaking of the same problem, and also of the diffusion of gases, said there was evidence of a limit in past time to the existing order of things, when something else than mixing took place. But a most eminent man, who has done a great deal of service to mankind, Professor Stanley Jevons, in his very admirable book, the *Principles of Science*, which is simply marvellous for the number of examples illustrating logical principles which he has drawn from all kinds of regions of science, and for the small number of mistakes that occur in it, takes this remark of Sir W. Thomson's, and takes out two very important words, and puts in two other very important words. He says: "We have here evidence of a limit of a state of things which could not have been produced by the previous state of things according to the known laws of nature." It is not according to the known laws of nature, it is according to the known laws of conduction of heat, that Sir William Thomson is speaking; and from this we may see the fallacy of concluding that if we consider the case of the whole universe we should be able, supposing we had paper and ink enough, to write down an equation which would enable us to make out the history of the world forward—as far forward as we liked to go; but if we attempted to calculate the history of the world backward, we should come to a point where the equation would begin to talk nonsense—

we should come to a state of things which could not have been produced from any previous state of things by any known natural laws. You will see at once that that is an entirely different statement. The same doctrine has been used by Mr. Murphy, in a very able book, the *Scientific Basis of Faith*, to build upon it an enormous superstructure—I think the restoration of the Irish Church was one of the results of it. But this doctrine is founded, as I think, upon a pure misconception. It is founded entirely upon forgetfulness of the condition under which the remark was originally made. All these physical writers, knowing what they were writing about, simply drew such conclusions from the facts which were before them as could be reasonably drawn. They say: "Here is a state of things which could not have been produced by the circumstances we are at present investigating." Then your speculator comes; he reads a sentence, and says: "Here is an opportunity for me to have my fling." And he has his fling, and makes a purely baseless theory about the necessary origin of the present order of nature at some definite point of time which might be calculated. But, if we consider the matter, we shall see that this is not in any way a consequence of the theory of the conduction of heat; because the conduction of heat is not the only process that goes on in the universe.

If we apply that theory to the case of the earth, we find that at present there is evidence of a certain distribution of temperature in the interior of it; there is a certain rate at which the temperature increases as we go down; and no doubt, if we made further investigations, we should find that if we went deeper an accurate law would be found, according to which the temperature increases in the interior.

Now, assuming this to be so, taking this as the basis of our problem, we might endeavour to find out what was the history of the earth in past times, and when it began cooling down. That is exactly what Sir William Thomson has done. When we attempt it, we find that there is a definite point to which we can go, and beyond which our equation talks nonsense. But we do not conclude that at that point the laws of nature began to be what they are; we only conclude that the earth began to solidify. Now solidification is not a

process of the conduction of heat, and so the thing cannot be given by our equation. That point is given definitely as a point of time, not with great accuracy, but still as near as we can expect to get it with such means of measuring as we have; and Sir William Thomson has calculated that the earth must have solidified at some time between a hundred millions and two hundred millions of years ago; and there we arrive at the beginning of the present state of things—the process of cooling the earth which is going on now. Before that it was cooling as a liquid, and in passing from the liquid to the solid state there was a catastrophe which introduced a new rate of cooling. So that by means of that law we do come to a time when the earth began to assume its present state. We do not find the time of the commencement of the universe, but simply of the present structure of the earth. If we went farther back we might make more calculations and find how long the earth had been in a liquid state. We should come to another catastrophe, and say not that at that time the universe began to exist, but that the present earth passed from the gaseous to the liquid state. And if we went farther back still we should probably find the earth falling together out of a great ring of matter surrounding the sun and distributed over its orbit. The same thing is true of every body of matter: if we trace its history back, we come to a certain time at which a catastrophe took place; and if we were to trace back the history of all the bodies of the universe in that way, we should continually see them separating up into smaller parts. What they have actually done is to fall together and get solid. If we could reverse the process we should see them separating and getting fluid; and, as a limit to that, at an indefinite distance in past time, we should find that all these bodies would be resolved into molecules, and all these would be flying away from each other. There would be no limit to that process, and we could trace it as far back as ever we liked to trace it. So that on the assumption —a very large assumption—that the present constitution of the laws of geometry and mechanics has held good during the whole of past time, we should be led to the conclusion that at an inconceivably long time ago the universe did consist of ultimate molecules, all separate from one another, and ap-

proaching one another. Then they would meet together and form a great number of small, hot bodies. Then you would have the process of cooling going on in these bodies, exactly as we find it going on now. But you will observe that we have no evidence of such a catastrophe as implies a beginning of the laws of nature. We do not come to something of which we cannot make any further calculation; we find that however far we like to go back, we approximate to a certain state of things, but never actually get to it.

Here, then, we have a doctrine about the beginning of things. First, we have a probability, about as great as science can make it, of the beginning of the present state of things on the earth, and of the fitness of the earth for habitation; and then we have a probability about the beginning of the universe as a whole which is so small that it is better put in this form, that we do not know anything at all about it. The reason why I say that we do not know anything at all of the beginning of the universe is that we have no reason whatever for believing that the known laws of geometry and mechanics are exactly and absolutely true at present, or that they have been even approximately true for any period of time further than we have direct evidence of. The evidence we have of them is founded on experience; and we should have exactly the same experience of them now, if those laws were not exactly and absolutely true, but were only so nearly true that we could not observe the difference. So that in making the assumption that we may argue upon the absolute uniformity of nature, and suppose these laws to have remained exactly as they are, we are assuming something we know nothing about. My conclusion then is that we do know, with great probability, of the beginning of the habitability of the earth about one hundred or two hundred millions of years back, but that of a beginning of the universe we know nothing at all.

Now let us consider what we can find out about the end of things. The life which exists upon the earth is made by the sun's action, and it depends upon the sun for its continuance. We know that the sun is wearing out, that it is cooling; and although this heat which it loses day by day is made up in some measure, perhaps completely at present, by the contraction of

its mass, yet that process cannot go on for ever. There is only a certain amount of energy in the present constitution of the sun; and when that has been used up, the sun cannot go on giving out any more heat. Supposing, therefore, the earth remains in her present orbit about the sun, seeing that the sun must be cooled down at some time, we shall all be frozen out. On the other hand, we have no reason to believe that the orbit of the earth about the sun is an absolutely stable thing. It has been maintained for a long time that there is a certain resisting medium which the planets have to move through; and it may be argued that in time all the planets must be gradually made to move in smaller orbits, and so to fall in towards the sun. But, on the other hand, the evidences upon which this assertion was based, the movement of Encke's comet and others, has been recently entirely overturned by Professor Tait. He supposes that these comets consist of bodies of meteors. Now it was proved a long time ago that a mass of small bodies travelling together in an orbit about a central body will always tend to fall in towards it, and that is the case with the rings of Saturn. So that, in fact, the movement of Encke's comet is entirely accounted for on the supposition that it is a swarm of meteors, without regarding the assumption of a resisting medium. On the other hand, it seems exceedingly natural to suppose that some matter in a very thin state is diffused about the planetary spaces. Then we have another consideration,—just as the sun and moon make tides upon the sea, so the planets make tides upon the sun. Consider the tide which the earth makes upon the sun. Instead of being a great wave lifting the mass of the sun up directly under the earth, it is carried forward by the sun's rotation; the result is that the earth, instead of being attracted to the sun's centre, is attracted to a point before the centre. The immediate tendency is to accelerate the earth's motion, and the final effect of this upon the planet is to make its orbit larger. That planet disturbing all the other planets, the consequence is that we have the earth gradually going away from the sun, instead of falling into it.[1]

[1] I learn from Sir W. Thomson that the ultimate effect of tidal deformation on a number of bodies is to reduce them to two, which move as if they were rigidly connected.

In any case, all we know is that the sun is going out. If we fall into the sun then we shall be fried; if we go away from the sun, or the sun goes out, then we shall be frozen. So that, so far as the earth is concerned, we have no means of determining what will be the character of the end, but we know that one of these two things must take place in time. But in regard to the whole universe, if we were to travel forward as we have travelled backward in time, and consider things as falling together, we should come finally to a great central mass, all in one piece, which would send out waves of heat through a perfectly empty ether, and gradually cool itself down. As this mass got cool it would be deprived of all life and motion; it would be just a mere enormous frozen block in the middle of the ether. But that conclusion, which is like the one that we discussed about the beginning of the world, is one which we have no right whatever to rest upon. It depends upon the same assumption that the laws of geometry and mechanics are exactly and absolutely true; and that they will continue exactly and absolutely true for ever and ever. Such an assumption we have no right whatever to make. We may therefore, I think, conclude about the end of things that, so far as the earth is concerned, an end of life upon it is as probable as science can make anything; but that in regard to the universe we have no right to draw any conclusion at all.

So far, we have considered simply the material existence of the earth; but of course our greatest interest lies not so much with the material life upon it, the organised beings, as with another fact which goes along with that, and which is an entirely different one—the fact of the consciousness that exists upon the earth. We find very good reason indeed to believe that this consciousness in the case of any organism is itself a very complex thing, and that it corresponds part for part to the action of the nervous system, and more particularly of the brain of that organised thing. There are some whom such evidence has led to the conclusion that the destruction which we have seen reason to think probable of all organised beings upon the earth will lead also to the final destruction of the consciousness that goes with them. Upon this point I know there is great difference of opinion amongst those who

have a right to speak. But to those who do see the cogency of the evidences of modern physiology and modern psychology in this direction it is a very serious thing to consider that not only the earth itself and all that beautiful face of nature we see, but also the living things upon it, and all the consciousness of men, and the ideas of society, which have grown up upon the surface, must come to an end. We who hold that belief must just face the fact and make the best of it; and I think we are helped in this by the words of that Jew philosopher, who was himself a worthy crown to the splendid achievements of his race in the cause of progress during the Middle Ages, Benedict Spinoza. He said: "The free man thinks of nothing so little as of death, and his wisdom is a meditation not of death but of life." Our interest lies with so much of the past as may serve to guide our actions in the present, and to intensify our pious allegiance to the fathers who have gone before us and the brethren who are with us; and our interest lies with so much of the future as we may hope will be appreciably affected by our good actions now. Beyond that, as it seems to me, we do not know, and we ought not to care. Do I seem to say: "Let us eat and drink, for to-morrow we die?" Far from it; on the contrary I say: "Let us take hands and help, for this day we are alive together."

The following note was afterwards published by the author (*Fortnightly Review*, vol. xvii. p. 793):—

The passage referred to from the *Principles of Science* is as follows (vol. ii. p. 438):—

"For a certain negative value of the time the formulæ give impossible values, indicating that there was some initial distribution of heat which could not have resulted, according to known laws *of nature*, from any previous distribution."

The words italicised are here inserted into a sentence from Tait's *Thermo-dynamics*, p. 38. Had the words *conduction of heat* been used instead of *nature*, the sentence would have remained correct, but would not have led to the alarming inference that

"The theory of heat places us in the dilemma either of believing in creation at some assignable date in the past, or

else of supposing that some inexplicable change in the working of natural laws then took place."

It has been pointed out by Mr. Higgins that the ultimate effect of tides in the sun caused by the earth's attraction will be precisely similar to that of a resisting medium—that is, will diminish the orbit of the earth and increase its velocity; and that I was wrong in supposing the contrary effect. It results that the earth will certainly fall into the sun; but whether before or after the sun has cooled down so much as not to be able to support life on this planet remains undetermined. The final conclusion remains therefore as before —that there must be an end, but whether by heat or by cold we cannot tell.

THE UNSEEN UNIVERSE[1]

THE primary motive of this treatise is indicated by its second title: "Physical Speculations on a Future State." A sketch of the beliefs and yearnings of many different folk in regard to a life after death leads up to an attempt to find room for it within the limits of those physical doctrines of continuity and the conservation of energy which are regarded as the established truths of science. In this attempt it is necessary to discuss the ultimate constitution of matter and its relation to the ether. When, by a singular inconsequence in writers possessing such power in their right minds of sound scientific reasoning, room has been found for a future life in the manner indicated above, it is discovered that there is room for a great deal more. Accordingly some of the main doctrines of the Christian religion are interpreted in relation to the authors' hypothesis, and placed in their appropriate niches. It will perhaps be convenient, therefore, if we consider these three things in their order: first, the desire for a future life; secondly, the physical speculations that make room for it; and lastly, that system, the seemingly innocent dried carcase of which is to be smuggled into our house at the same time, that it may peradventure find means of resurrection.

I.

It is often said that the universal longing for immortality among all kinds and conditions of men is a presumption that

[1] "The Unseen Universe; or, Physical Speculations on a Future State." London: Macmillan and Co. 1875. [*Fortnightly Review*, June 1875.]

there is some future life in which this longing shall be satisfied. Let us endeavour, therefore, to find out in what this longing for immortality actually consists; whether the existence of it, when its nature is understood, can be explained on grounds which do not require it to have any objective fulfilment other than the life and the memory of those who come after us; and what relation it bears to the equally widespread dream or vision of a spiritual world peopled by supernatural or monstrous beings, ghosts and gods and goblins.

First, let us notice that all the words used to describe this immortality that is longed for are *negative* words: *im*-mortality, end-*less* life, *in*-finite existence. Endless life is an inconceivable thing, for an endless time would be necessary to form an idea of it. Now it is only by a stretch of language that we can be said to desire that which is inconceivable. No doubt many persons say that they are smitten with an insatiable longing for the unattainable and ineffable; but this means that they feel generally dissatisfied and do not at all know what they want. Longing for deathlessness means simply *shrinking from death*. However or whenever we who live endeavour to realise an end to this healthy life of action in ourselves or in our brethren the effort is a painful one; and the mind, in so far as it is healthy, tries to put it off and avoid it. The state of one who really wishes for death is firmly linked in our thoughts with the extreme of misery and wretchedness and disease; and, in so far as it can be realised, we seem to feel that such an one is fit to die. In those cases of ripe old age not hastened by disease, where the physical structure is actually worn out, having finished its work right honestly and well; where the love of life is worn out also, and the grave appears as a bed of rest to the tired limbs, and death as a mere quiet sleep from thought; there also, in so far as we are able to realise the state of the aged and to put ourselves in his place, death seems to be normal and natural, a thing to be neither sought nor shunned. But such putting of ourselves in the place of one to whom death is no evil must in all cases be imperfect. I cannot, in my present life and motion, clearly conceive myself in so parlous a state that no hope of better things should make me shrink from the end of all. However vividly I recall the feelings of pain and

weakness, it is the life and energy of my present self that pictures them; and this life and energy cannot help raising at the same time combative instincts of resistance to pain and weakness, whose very nature it is to demand that the sun shall not go down upon Gibeon until they have slain the Amalekites. Nor can I really and truly put myself in the place of the worn-out old man whose consciousness may some day have a memory of mine. No force of imagination that I can bring to bear will avail to cast out the youth of that very imagination which endeavours to dépict its latter days; no thoughts of final and supreme fatigue can help suggesting refreshment and new rising after sleep.

If, then, we do not want to die now, nor next year, nor the year after that, nor at any time that we can clearly imagine; what is this but to say that we want to live for ever, in the only meaning of the words that we can at all realise? It is not that there is any positive attraction in the shadowy vistas of eternity, for the effort to contemplate even any very long time is weariness and vexation of spirit; it is that our present life, in so far as it is healthy, rebels once for all against its own final and complete destruction. And forasmuch as so many and so mighty generations have in time past ended in death their noble and brave battle with the elements, that we also and our brethren can in nowise hope to escape their fate, therefore we are sorely driven to find some way by which at least the image of that ending shall be avoided and set aside. As the fruit of this search two methods have been found and practised among men. By one method we detach ourselves from the individual body and its actions which accompany our consciousness, to identify ourselves with something wider and greater that shall live when we as units shall have done with living—that shall work on with new hands when we, its worn-out limbs, have entered into rest. The soldier who rushes on death does not know it as extinction; in thought he lives and marches on with the army, and leaves with it his corpse upon the battle-field. The martyr cannot think of his own end because he lives in the truth he has proclaimed; with it and with mankind he grows into greatness through ever new victories over falsehood and wrong. But there is another way. Since

when men have died such orderly, natural, and healthy activity as we have known in them and valued their lives for has plainly ceased, we may fashion another life for them, not orderly, not natural, not healthy, but monstrous or *super-natural*; whose cloudy semblance shall be eked out with the dreams of uneasy sleep or the crazes of a mind diseased. And it is to this that the universal shrinking of men from death, which is called a yearning for immortality, is alleged to bear witness.

But whence now does it really come, and what is the true lesson of it? Surely it is a necessary condition of life that has desires at all that these desires should be towards life and not away from it; seeing how cheap and easy a thing is destruction on all hands, and how hard it is for race or unit to hold fast in the great struggle for existence. Surely our way is paved with the bones of those who have loved life and movement too little, and lost it before their time. If we could think of death without shrinking it would only mean that this world was no place for us, and that we should make haste to be gone to leave room for our betters. And therefore that love of action which would put death out of sight is to be counted good, as a holy and healthy thing (one word whose meanings have become unduly severed), necessary to the life of men, serving to knit them together and to advance them in the right. Not only is it right and good thus to cover over and dismiss the thought of our own personal end, to keep in mind and heart always the good things that shall be done, rather than ourselves who shall or shall not have the doing of them; but also to our friends and loved ones we shall give the most worthy honour and tribute if we never say nor remember that they are dead, but contrariwise that they have lived; that hereby the brotherly force and flow of their action and work may be carried over the gulfs of death and made immortal in the true and healthy life which they worthily had and used. It is only when the bloody hands of one who has fought against the light and the right are folded and powerless for further crime, that it is most kind and merciful to bury him and say, "The dog is dead."

But for you noble and great ones, who have loved and laboured yourselves not for yourselves but for the universal

folk, in your time not for your time only but for the coming generations, for you there shall be life as broad and far-reaching as your love, for you life-giving action to the utmost reach of the great wave whose crest you sometimes were.

II.

Believing that every finite intelligence must be "conditioned in time and space," and therefore must have an "organ of memory" and a "power of varied action," and consequently must be associated with a physical organism,—recognising also that the world, as it is known at present, is made up of material molecules and of ether,—our authors frankly admit that no room is here to be found either for ghosts of the dead, or "superior intelligences," or bogies of any kind whatever. But modifying a hypothesis of Sir W. Thomson's about the ultimate form of atoms and their relation to the ether, they find in a second ether the material wherewith to refashion all these marvels which advancing knowledge had banished from the realm of reality. We may here, then, review with advantage for a short time the state of that borderland between the known and the unknown in physical science to which this ingenious hypothesis belongs; with the view of inquiring what measure of probability is to be attached to the modification of it which our authors propose.

Imagine a ring of indiarubber, made by joining together the ends of a cylindrical piece (like a lead pencil before it is cut), to be put upon a round stick which it will just fit with a little stretching. Let the stick be now pulled through the ring while the latter is kept in its place by being pulled the other way on the outside. The indiarubber has then what is called *vortex-motion*. Before the ends were joined together, while it was straight, it might have been made to turn round without changing position by rolling it between the hands. Just the same motion of rotation it has on the stick, only that the ends are now joined together. All the inside surface of the ring is going one way—namely, the way the stick is pulled; and all the outside is going the other way. Such a vortex-ring is made by the smoker who purses his lips into a

round hole and sends out a puff of smoke. The outside of the ring is kept back by the friction of his lips while the inside is going forwards; thus a rotation is set up all round the smoke-ring as it travels out into the air. If we half immerse a teaspoon in our tea and draw it across the surface, we may see two little eddies formed at the edges of the spoon. These eddies are really united by a sort of rope of fluid underneath the surface, which follows the shape of the spoon, and which has throughout the same motion of rotation that the indiarubber ring had when the stick was drawn through it; except that in this case only half a ring is formed, being cut off, as it were, by the surface of the liquid. In all these cases vortex-motion is produced by friction, and would be ultimately destroyed by friction. But, by way of an approximation to the study of water, men had been led to the conception of a *perfect liquid;* that is, a liquid absolutely free from friction, or (which is the same thing) offering no resistance to change of shape, or the sliding of one part over another. Water at rest behaves just as such a liquid would behave; but water in motion is altogether a different thing. Helmholtz found, by a wonderfully beautiful calculation, that in a perfect liquid where there is no friction it is impossible for vortex-motion to be generated or destroyed; in any part of the liquid where there is no vortex-motion no mechanical action can possibly start it; but where it once exists there it is for ever, and no mechanical action can possibly stop it. A vortex-ring may move from place to place; but it carries with it the liquid of which it is composed, never leaving any particle behind, and never taking up any particle from the surrounding liquid. If we tried to cut it through with a knife it would thin out like a stream of treacle, and the thinner it got the faster it would go round; so that if we multiplied together the number of revolutions in a second, and the number of square millimetres in the cross-section of the vortex-ring, we should always get the same product, not only in all parts of the ring, but through all time. Any portion of liquid which is rotating must form part of a vortex-ring, either returning into itself, after no matter how many knots and convolutions, or having its two ends cut off at the surface of the liquid. That such more complex forms of vortex-motion

may exist is easily shown by making knots (to be left loose) in a piece of string, and then joining the ends: motion of rotation may be given to any part of it by rolling it between two fingers, and will be carried all over it. Such a knotted vortex-ring is figured on the cover of the "Unseen Universe" for a fitting device.

Thus far Helmholtz, examining into the consequences of supposing that a fiction, serving to represent the actual properties of liquids at rest, holds good also in the case of motion. Here steps in Sir William Thomson with a brilliant conjecture. The ultimate atom of matter is required to be indestructible, to have a definite mass, and definite rates of vibration. A vortex-ring in a perfect liquid is indestructible, has a definite mass, and definite rates of vibration. Why should not the atom be a vortex-ring in a perfect liquid? If the whole of space were filled with an incompressible frictionless fluid in which vortex-rings once existed, at least some of the known phenomena of matter would be produced. Why should it not be possible in this way to explain them all?

The answer to this question is only to be got at by examining further into the consequences of the fundamental supposition, until either the desired explanation of all phenomena is reached or some clear discordance with observed results shows that the whole hypothesis is untenable. To this task, with splendid energy and insight, Sir William Thomson has applied himself; arriving at results which, if they are not the foundation of the final theory of matter, are at least imperishable stones in the tower of dynamical science.

Independently, however, of these results in the theory of the motion of perfect liquids, and independently of the final success of the hypothesis itself, it has led to two very important ideas of physical explanation. First, there is the idea that matter differs from ether only in being another state or mode of motion of the same stuff; which suggests the hope that we may by and by get to know something about the method of evolution of atoms, and the reason why there are so many kinds of them and no more. It must not be supposed that in Sir W. Thomson's hypothesis the part of the ether is played simply by the universal frictionless fluid. Such a fluid, by the definition of it, offers no resistance to a

change of shape of any part of it; but the actual ether which fills space is so elastic that the slightest possible distortion produced by the vibration of a single atom sends a shudder through it with inconceivable rapidity for billions and billions of miles. This shudder is Light. To account for such elasticity it has to be supposed that even where there are no material molecules the universal fluid is full of vortex-motion, but that the vortices are smaller and more closely packed than those of matter, forming altogether a more finely grained structure. So that the difference between matter and ether is reduced to a mere difference in the size and arrangement of the component vortex-rings. Now, whatever may turn out to be the ultimate nature of the ether and of molecules, we know that to some extent at least they obey the same dynamic laws, and that they act upon one another in accordance with these laws. Until, therefore, it is absolutely disproved, it must remain the simplest and most probable assumption that they are finally made of the same stuff—that the material molecule is some kind of knot or coagulation of ether.

Secondly, this hypothesis has accustomed us to the very important idea that the hardness, resistance, or elasticity of solid matter may be explained by the very rapid motion of something which is infinitely soft and yielding. This general view Sir William Thomson has illustrated by exceedingly beautiful experiments. One striking form is the complete enclosure of a gyroscope in a flat cylindrical box, with a sharp projecting edge, so that the motion of the contained wheel can only be perceived by the curious resistance to rotation of the box; which will balance itself on its edge on a piece of glass, and only tremble and stand firm when it is struck a violent blow with the hand. So also, if a chain hanging straight down be rapidly spun round, it becomes stiff and stark like a rigid rod. And, lastly, a solid suspended in the centre of a globe of water will, when the water is made to revolve rapidly, oscillate about its mean position as if it were fastened by a spring. All these things make one inclined to look to the rapid motion of something soft for explanation of hardness and stiffness; and the value of this explanation does not depend upon the ultimate success of the hypothesis of vortex-atoms.

But these things being admitted, it may perhaps not be too

great a presumption in us to make some criticisms on the hypothesis itself. A true explanation describes the previous unknown in terms of the known; thus light is described as a vibration, and such properties of light as are also properties of vibrations are thereby explained. Now a perfect liquid is not a known thing, but a pure fiction. The imperfect liquids which approximate to it, and from which the conception is derived, consist of a vast number of small particles perpetually interfering with one another's motion. This molecular structure not only explains the fact that they behave like perfect liquids when at rest, but also makes it necessary that they should not behave like perfect liquids when in motion. Thus a liquid is not an ultimate conception, but is explained—it is known to be made up of molecules; and the explanation requires that it should not be frictionless. The liquid of Sir William Thomson's hypothesis is continuous, infinitely divisible, not made of molecules at all, and it is absolutely frictionless. This is as much a mere mathematical fiction as the attracting and repelling points of Boscovitch.

The authors of the "Unseen Universe" modify the hypothesis in such a way as to dispose of this objection. They regard the atoms as not absolutely indestructible, but only very long-lived. Consequently it is not necessary for them that the universal liquid should be quite perfect, but only that its viscosity or friction should be exceedingly small—small enough to let the atoms keep going for billions of years when they are once started, with no appreciable change in their properties during the short time in which we can observe them. Thus, instead of a fiction, we have indeed a known thing, an imperfect liquid, by which to explain the molecules that are wanted to explain the properties of water. Can we, then, explain this universal imperfect liquid? Certainly; it consists of molecules inconceivably smaller than those of ordinary matter. But how to explain the molecules? Why, clearly, they are vortex-rings in a liquid of still finer grain and less viscosity. Molecules, liquid, molecules, liquid, alternately for ever; each term of the infinite series being fully explained by the next following. Could anything be more satisfactory?

It is, moreover, to be observed that known facts about the ether and about atoms do lead us a very great way

towards a conception of their relative structure. The experimental discoveries and the geometric insight of Faraday, and the application to these of mathematical analysis by Thomson, Helmholtz, and above all by Clerk Maxwell, have shown that the ether which was required for the theory of light is capable also of explaining magnetic and electric phenomena. Whatever that motion is which is periodically reversed in a ray of light, we have very strong evidence to show that the same motion is continuous along an electric current. This stream makes vortex-motion all round it, as if it were a stick drawn through indiarubber rings; and the vortex-rings are Faraday's "lines of magnetic force." The direction in which a small magnet will point indicates at any place the axis of rotation of the ether: thus, except in the neighbourhood of magnets or batteries, the ether in this country is all rotating in a plane rather tilted up on the north side. According to Maxwell's provisional conception, we may suppose that this rotation belongs to soft balls, all spinning the same way, and separated by smaller "idle wheels," which turn in the opposite direction. It is a continuous stream of these idle wheels that constitutes an electric current. Now there is great reason to believe that every material atom carries upon it a small electric current, if it does not wholly consist of this current. For, in the first place, every particle of a magnet is itself a magnet. Now, when a piece of iron is magnetised, there are two possible suppositions: either every particle is made into a magnet as it stands, having had no previous magnetism; or else all the particles were originally magnets which neutralise one another because they were turned in all manner of directions, but which by the process of magnetising have been made to approximate to the same direction. The latter supposition is conclusively picked out by experiment as the true one. Thus it seems that the molecule of iron is a magnet. If, however, the magnetism of the molecules were so much increased that they held each other tight, and so could not be turned round by ordinary magnetising forces, it is shown that effects would be produced like those of diamagnetism. Faraday gave reasons for believing that all bodies are either ferromagnetic or diamagnetic. Next, the theory of Ampère, confirmed by many subsequent experiments

and calculations, makes all magnetism to depend upon small electric currents. But magnetism is an affair of molecules; if the molecules are groups of atoms we find in this way good reason to suppose that all atoms carry upon them electric currents.

Three important sets of phenomena are (among many others) still unexplained—the action of molecules upon one another, the action of transparent bodies on light, and gravitation. The precise law of action of molecules on one another is in fact unknown, the inverse fifth power of the distance, proposed by Maxwell, having been given up on the evidence of later experiments. The study of the mutual action of free small magnets in space offers mathematical difficulties which at present prevent us from saying whether a great number of these magnets would have such known properties of gases as depend upon the law of mutual action of molecules. Transparent bodies act upon light as if the ether in their interior were somewhat less elastic than the ether outside them. It is possible that this change of elasticity may be explained by the electric field surrounding their molecules, although the most powerful fields that we can produce have not yet been observed to have any such effect. There is something left for gravitation. In the theories of electric and magnetic action the motion of the "idle wheels," except in actual currents, is neglected in comparison with that of the revolving soft spheres. It is, perhaps, conceivable that in some way or other an explanation may be found in them for the relatively weaker force of gravitation. If—and what an if!—these three explanations were made out, we might reasonably suppose not merely that an atom *carries* an electric current, but that it *is* nothing else. We should thus be led to find an atom, not in the rotational motion of a vortex-ring, but in irrotational motion round a re-entering channel. It might well be that such motion, to be permanent, must have some definite relation to the size of the rotating spheres and their interstices, so that only certain kinds of atoms could survive. In this way we may get an explanation of the definite number of chemical elements, and of the fact that all the molecules of each are as near alike as we can judge.

The position is this. We know, with great probability,

that wherever there is an atom there is a small electric current. Very many of the properties of atoms are explained by means of this current: we have vague hopes that all the rest will likewise be explained. If these hopes should be realised, we shall say that an atom is a small current. If not, we shall have to say that it is a small current and something else besides.

Of course, after all this, there is room for vortex-motion or other such hypothesis to explain the observed properties of the ether; but in the last resort all these questions of physical speculation abut upon a metaphysical question. We are describing phenomena in terms of phenomena; the objects we observe are groups of perceptions, and exist only in our minds; the molecules and ether, in terms of which we describe them, are only still more complex mental images. Is there anything that is not in our minds of which these things are pictures or symbols? and if so, what?

Our authors reply that matter and energy possess this external reality, because they cannot be created or destroyed by us; the quantity of each is fixed and invariable. The argument is better than most that belong to this question, but it will not hold water for a moment. Every quantitative relation among phenomena can be put into a form which asserts the constancy of some quantity which can be calculated from the phenomena. "Gravitation is inversely as the square of the distance for the same two bodies;" this may be also said in the form, "gravitation multiplied by the square of the distance is constant for the same two bodies." "Pressure varies as density, in a perfect gas at the same temperature," may be also expressed, "pressure divided by density is constant in a perfect gas at the same temperature." But this does not make the quotient of pressure by density to be an external reality transcending phenomena. It is entirely beside the question, as we may see in another way. A dream is a succession of phenomena having no external reality to correspond to them. Do we never dream of things that we cannot destroy?

So the fact that matter, as a phenomenon, is not to be increased or diminished in quantity, has nothing to say to the question about the existence of something which is not matter,

not phenomenon at all, but of which matter is the symbol or representative. The answer to this question is only to be found in the theory of sensation; which tells us not merely that there is a non-phenomenal counterpart of the material or phenomenal world, but also in some measure what it is made of. Namely, the reality corresponding to our perception of the motion of matter is an element of the complex thing we call feeling. What we might perceive as a plexus of nerve-disturbances is really in itself a feeling; and the succession of feelings which constitutes a man's consciousness is the reality which produces in our minds the perception of the motions of his brain. These elements of feeling have relations of *nextness* or contiguity in space, which are exemplified by the sight-perceptions of contiguous points; and relations of succession in time which are exemplified by all perceptions. Out of these two relations the future theorist has to build up the world as best he may. Two things may, perhaps, help him. There are many lines of mathematical thought which indicate that distance or quantity may come to be expressed in terms of *position* in the wide sense of the *analysis situs*. And the theory of space-curvature hints at a possibility of describing matter and motion in terms of extension only.

So much for the vortex-atom, its relation to the present state of science, and the prospects of physical speculation. We propose now to follow our authors farther; to examine their hypothesis of a second ether, and to see what good it can do them.

There are four ways of accounting for the too small number of stars of low magnitudes without assuming that light is absorbed by the ether. In the first place, the calculation assumes that stars are distributed with approximate uniformity over infinite space. So far is this from being true, that we know the vast majority of stars that we can see to belong to a single system, of which the nebulæ also are members, and which occupies a finite portion of space. It is very probable that around and beyond this, to distances vaster even than its vast dimensions, there are regions nearly devoid of stars. If other such systems do anywhere exist, they may well be too far off to be seen at all. The method of Struve has, indeed, been beautifully applied by Mr. Charles

S. Peirce to the richer materials now at hand with the view of determining approximately the shape of the solar galaxy and the mode of distribution of stars in it. Secondly, a great amount of light must be stopped by the dark bodies of burnt-out suns. Thirdly, space contains gaseous matter in a state of extreme diffusion—not too rare, however, to produce an effect in distances so enormous as we have here to consider. Lastly, the possible curvature and finite extent of space have been suggested by Zöllner as an escape from the reasoning of Olbers and Struve. Of these four the first is undoubtedly the true account of the matter, and will supply us with trustworthy knowledge of the contents of surrounding space.

But if the ether did absorb light what would this mean? Vibratory motion of solids, which is really a molecular disturbance, is absorbed by being transformed into other kinds of molecular motion, and so may finally be transferred to the ether. There is no reason why vibratory motion of the ether should not be transformed into other kinds of ethereal motion; in fact, there is no reason why it should not go to the making of atoms. Of course there is equally no reason why it should; but we present this speculation to anybody who wants the universe to go on for ever.

Apart from this, however, the laws of motion and the conservation of energy are very general propositions which are as nearly true as we can make out for gross bodies, and which, being tentatively applied to certain motions of molecules and the ether, are found to fit. There is nothing to tell us that they are absolutely exact in any particular case, or that they are everywhere and always true. If it were shown conclusively that energy was lost from the ether, it would not at all follow that it was handed on to anything else. The right statement might be that the conservation of energy was only a very near approximation to the facts.

It is perhaps hardly necessary to say that the experiment of Tait and Balfour Stewart, who found that a disc was heated by rapid rotation *in vacuo*, though of the first importance in itself, by no means bears upon the question of the internal friction of the ether. That a molecule in travelling through the ether should be made to vibrate is just what we might expect; the only wonder is that it gets through with so little resistance.

But this is a transfer of energy of translation of a molecule into energy of vibration; a task to which *one* ether is entirely competent.

Far greater, indeed, is the work which the second ether has to perform: nothing less than the fashioning of a "spiritual body." While our consciousness proceeds *pari passu* with molecular disturbance in our brains, this molecular disturbance agitates the first ether, which transfers a part of its energy to the second. Thus is gradually elaborated an organism in that second or unseen universe, with whose motions our consciousness is as much connected as it is with our material bodies. When the marvellous structure of the brain decays, and it can no more receive or send messages, then the spiritual body is replete with energy, and starts off through the unseen, taking consciousness with it, but leaving its molecules behind. Having grown with the growth of our mortal frame, and preserving in its structure a record of all that has befallen us, it becomes an organ of memory, linking the future with the past, and securing a personal immortality.

Can another body, then, avail to stay the hand of death, and shall man by a second nervous system escape scot free from the ruin of the first? We think not. The laws connecting consciousness with changes in the brain are very definite and precise, and their necessary consequences are not to be evaded by any such means. Consciousness is a complex thing made up of elements, a stream of feelings. The action of the brain is also a complex thing made up of elements, a stream of nerve-messages. For every feeling in consciousness there is at the same time a nerve-message in the brain. This correspondence of feeling to nerve-message does not depend on the feeling being part of a consciousness, and the nerve-message part of the action of a brain. How do we know this? Because the nervous system of animals grows more and more simple as we go down the scale, and yet there is no break that we can point to and say, "above this there is consciousness or something like it; below there is nothing like it." Even to those nerve-messages which do not form part of the continuous action of our brains, there must be simultaneous feelings which do not form part of our consciousness. Here, then, is a law which is true throughout the animal kingdom;

nerve-message exists at the same time with feeling. Consciousness is not a simple thing, but a complex; it is the combination of feelings into a stream. It exists at the same time with the combination of nerve-messages into a stream. If individual feeling always goes with individual nerve-message, if combination or stream of feelings always goes with stream of nerve-messages, does it not follow that when the stream of nerve-messages is broken up, the stream of feelings will be broken up also, will no longer form a consciousness? does it not follow that when the messages themselves are broken up, the individual feelings will be resolved into still simpler elements? The force of this evidence is not to be weakened by any number of spiritual bodies. Inexorable facts connect our consciousness with this body that we know; and that not merely as a whole, but the parts of it are connected severally with parts of our brain-action. If there is any similar connection with a spiritual body, it only follows that the spiritual body must die at the same time with the natural one.

Consider a mountain rill. It runs down in the sunshine, and its water evaporates; yet it is fed by thousands of tiny tributaries, and the stream flows on. The water may be changed again and again, yet still there is the same stream. It widens over plains, or is prisoned and fouled by towns; always the same stream; but at last

> "even the weariest river
> Winds somewhere safe to sea."

When that happens no drop of the water is lost, but the stream is dead.

III.

Our authors "assume, as absolutely self-evident, the existence of a Deity who is the Creator of all things." They must both have had enough to do with examinations to be aware that "it is evident" means "I do not know how to prove." The creation, however, was not necessarily a direct process; the great likeness of atoms gives them the "stamp of the manufactured article," and so they must have been made by

intelligent agency, but this may have been the agency of finite and conditioned beings. As such beings would have bodies made of one or other of the ethers, this form of the argument escapes at least one difficulty of the more common form, which may be stated as follows :—"Because atoms are exactly alike and apparently indestructible, they must at one time have come into existence out of nothing. This can only have been effected by the agency of a conscious mind not associated with a material organism." Forasmuch as the momentous character of the issue is apt to blind us to the logic of such arguments as these, it may not be useless to offer for consideration the following parody. "Because the sea is salt and will put out a fire, there must at one time have been a large fire lighted at the bottom of it. This can only have been effected by the agency of the whale who lives in the middle of Sahara." But let us return to our finite intelligences having ethereal bodies, who made the atomic vortex-rings out of ether. With such a machinery it seems a needless simplification to adopt Prout's hypothesis, and suppose that the sixty-three elements are compounded of one simpler form of matter. Rather let us contemplate the reposeful picture of the universal divan, where these intelligent beings whiled away the tedium of eternity by blowing smoke-rings from sixty-three different kinds of mouths. We may suppose, if we like, that the intelligent beings were all alike, and each had sixty-three mouths; or that each was so constituted in his physical or moral nature that he could or would pull only sixty-three faces. How lofty must have been the existence of such a maker and master of grimace! How fertile of resource is the theologic method, when it once has clay for its wheel!

As the permanence of matter proves the existence of an external reality, a substance in which all things consist, so the conservation of energy points to a principle of motion, coming out of the unconditioned, entering into the visible universe and obeying its laws, to pass back finally into the unseen world. But, further, the fact that organisms large enough to be visible have not yet under the conditions of the laboratory been produced from inorganic matter, shows that life is a great mystery, penetrating into the depths of the arcana of the universe, proceeding from substance and energy

and yet not identical with either. The reader will see what this points to. It is clear that the good old gods of our race—sun, sky, thunder, and beauty—are to be replaced by philosophic abstractions—substance, energy, and life, under the patronage respectively of the persons of the Christian Trinity. But why are we to stay here? Is not neurility, the universal function of nerves, as much a special and distinct form of life as life is a distinct form of energy? And over against these physical principles, absolutely separate and distinct from them, stands Consciousness, which cannot be left out of a fair estimate of the world. It would seem fitting that the presidency and patronage of the nerves should be assigned to the modern Isis as her portion. While if, as Von Hartmann says, Consciousness is the great mistake of the universe, it will not unsuitably fall to the care of the devil. In this way we shall save the odd number (*numero deus impare gaudet*), and give a certain historical completeness to our representation.

But why does a material so plastic present itself in this identical shape? Why this particular trinity of the great Ptah, Horus the Son, and Kneph the Wind-god, retained and refurbished by bishops of Alexandria and Carthage out of the wrecks of Egyptian superstition? Not because it is contained in the unseen universe, but because we were born in a particular place. If you, however, choose to find one thing in the chain of ethers, we may quite lawfully find another. If there is room in the unseen universe for the harmless pantheistic deities which our authors have put there, room may also be found for the goddess Kali, with her obscene rites and human sacrifices, or for any intermediate between these. Here is the clay: make your images to your heart's desire!

When Mohammed was conquering Arabia, a certain tribe offered to submit if they should be spared the tribute and service in the holy war, and if they might keep their idol Lat for a year. The prophet agreed, and began to dictate to his scribe the terms of the treaty. When it came to the permission of idolatry he paused and looked on the ground. The envoys were impatient, and repeated the article. Then arose Omar, and turned upon them furious. "You have soiled the heart of the Prophet," he said; "may God fill your hearts with fire!" "I refuse the treaty," said Mohammed,

looking up. "Let us keep Lat only six months, then," pleaded the envoys. "Not another hour," said the Prophet; and he drove them out and subdued them.

"Only for another half-century let us keep our hells and heavens and gods." It is a piteous plea; and it has soiled the heart of these prophets, great ones and blessed, giving light to their generation, and dear in particular to our mind and heart. These sickly dreams of hysterical women and half-starved men, what have they to do with the sturdy strength of a wide-eyed hero who fears no foe with pen or club? This sleepless vengeance of fire upon them that have not seen and have not believed, what has it to do with the gentle patience of the investigator that shines through every page of this book, that will ask only consideration and not belief for anything that has not with infinite pains been solidly established? That which you keep in your hearts, my brothers, is the slender remnant of a system which has made its red mark on history, and still lives to threaten mankind. The grotesque forms of its intellectual belief have survived the discredit of its moral teaching. Of this what the kings could bear with, the nations have cut down; and what the nations left, the right heart of man by man revolts against day by day. You have stretched out your hands to save the dregs of the sifted sediment of a residuum. Take heed lest you have given soil and shelter to the seed of that awful plague which has destroyed two civilisations, and but barely failed to slay such promise of good as is now struggling to live among men.

THE PHILOSOPHY OF THE PURE SCIENCES[1]

I.—STATEMENT OF THE QUESTION

ON entering this room and looking rapidly round, what do I see? I see a theatre, with a gallery, and with an arrangement of seats in tiers. I see people sitting upon these seats, people with heads more or less round, with bodies of a certain shape; sitting in various positions. Above I see a roof with a sky-light, and a round disc evidently capable of vertical motion. Below I see the solid floor supporting us all. In front of me I see a table, and my hands resting upon it. In the midst of all these things I see a void space, which I can walk about in if I like. The different things I have mentioned I see at various distances from one another, and from me; and (now that the door is shut) I see that they completely enclose this void space, and hedge it in. My view is not made of patches here and there, but is a continuous boundary going all round the void space I have mentioned. All this I see to exist at the same time; but some of you are not sitting quite still, and I see you move; that is to say, I see you pass from one position into another by going through an infinite series of intermediate positions. Moreover, when I put my hands on the table, I feel a hard flat horizontal surface at rest, covered with cloth.

Have I spoken correctly in making these assertions? Yes, you will say, this is on the whole just what I ought to have seen and felt under the circumstances. With the exception of one or two points expressed in too technical a form, this is just the sort of language that a witness might use in describing

[1] Lectures delivered at the Royal Institution in March 1873.

any ordinary event, without invalidating his testimony. You would not say at once, "This is absurd; the man must not be listened to any longer." And if, having been precisely in my situation, you wished to describe facts with the view of drawing inferences from them—even important inferences—you would make all these statements as matter of your own direct personal experience; and if need were, you would even testify to them in a court of law.

And yet I think we shall find on a little reflection that not one of these statements can by any possibility have been strictly true.

"I see a theatre." I do not; the utmost I can possibly see is two distinct curved pictures of a theatre. Upon the two retinas of my eyes there are made pictures of the scene before me, exactly as pictures are made upon the ground glass in a photographer's camera. The sensation of sight which I get comes to me at any rate through those two pictures; and it cannot tell me any more, or contain in itself any more, than is in those two pictures. Now the pictures are not solid; each of them is simply a curved surface variously illuminated at various parts. Whereas, therefore, I think I see a solid scene, having depth, and relief, and distance in it, reflection tells me that I see nothing of the kind; but only (at the most) two distinct surfaces, having no depth and no relief, and only a kind of distance which is quite different from that of the solid figures before me. You will say, probably, that this is only a quibble on two senses of the word "see." Whether it is so or not makes no difference to our subsequent argument; and yet I think you will admit that the latter sense, in which I do not see the solid things, is the more correct one. For the question is not about what is there, but about what I see. Now exactly the same sensation can be produced in me by two slightly different pictures placed in a stereoscope—I say exactly the same; because if I had sufficiently accurate coloured photographs of this room properly illuminated, the rays of light converging on every part of each of my retinas might be made exactly the same as they are now; and the sensation would therefore not only appear to be the same but would actually be the same. I should think I saw a solid scene; and I should not be seeing

one. Now to see, and to see what is actually there, are two different things.

Again, "I see people with heads more or less round."—I cannot see your heads; I can only see your faces. I must have imagined the rest. But just consider what it is that I have imagined. Is it merely that besides what I do see I have added something that I might see by going round to the other side? No, there is more than that. The complete sensation which I have of a human head when I look at one is not merely something which I do not see now, but something which I never could see by any possibility. I have the sensation of a solid object, and not of a series of pictures of a solid object. Although that sensation may be really constructed out of a countless number of possible pictures, yet it is not like any of them. I imagine to myself, and seem to see the other side of things, not as it would look if viewed from beyond them, but as it would look if viewed from here. I seem to see the back of your head, not as it would look if I got behind you, but as if I saw it through your face from the spot where I am standing; and that, you know, is impossible.

I seem to see all these objects as existing together. But really as a matter of fact I move my eyes about and see a succession of small pictures very rapidly changed. Each of my eyes has six muscles which pull it about, and if I knew which of these muscles were moving, and how fast, at any moment, I should get information about the direction in which my eye was looking at the time. Now it is only a very small part of the scene before me that I can really see distinctly at once; so that I have really seen a panorama, and not the one large picture that I imagined; and yet while looking at the small portion which I can really see distinctly, I think I see distinctly the whole room.

Again, I seem to see that in some directions, at least, this void space in the middle is completely bounded—the surface of the floor, for example, which bounds it, appears to be completely filled up and continuous, to have no breaks in it. And when you move I seem to see you go *continuously* from one position to another through an infinite series of intermediate positions. Now, quite apart from the question whether these conclusions are true or not, it can be made out

distinctly that I could not possibly see either the surface of a thing, or a motion, as continuous; for the sensitive portion of my retina, which receives impressions, is not itself a continuous surface, but consists of an enormously large but still finite number of nerve filaments distributed in a sort of network. And the messages that go along my nerves do not consist in any continuous action, but in a series of distinct waves succeeding one another at very small but still finite intervals. All I can possibly have seen therefore at any moment is a picture made of a very large number of very small patches, exceedingly near to one another, but not actually touching. And all I can have seen as time passed is a succession of such distinct pictures coming rapidly after one another. You know that precisely as the stereoscope is made to imitate the property of my two eyes out of which I imagine solid things, so another instrument has been constructed to imitate that property of my nerves out of which I imagine continuous motion. The instrument is called the Zoetrope, or Wheel of Life. It presents to you a succession of distinct pictures coming after one another at small intervals; and the impression produced by that series is precisely the impression of one thing in continuous motion.

Let us now put shortly together what we have said about this sensation of sight. I shall use the word mosaic to represent a few disconnected patches which a painter might put down with a view of remembering a scene he had no time to sketch. Then, I seem to see a large collection of solid objects in continuous motion. The utmost I can really see is a panorama painted in mosaic and shown in a wheel of life. I do not know that my direct perception amounts to so much; but it cannot possibly amount to more. What it really does amount to must be reserved for subsequent discussion. At any rate I must have imagined the rest.

Lastly, when I put my hands on the table, I feel a hard, flat, horizontal surface at rest, covered with cloth. Now there are three things that really happen. First, there is a definite kind of irritation of certain organs of my skin, called papillæ. It is that irritation that makes me say *cloth*. Secondly, certain of my muscles are in a state of compression, and they tell me that. Thirdly, I make a certain muscular effort which is not

followed by motion. This is all that I can really feel; but those three things do not constitute a hard, flat, horizontal surface covered with cloth. As before, I must have imagined the rest.

Do not suppose that I am advocating any change in our common language about sensation. I do not want anybody to say, for instance, instead of, "I saw you yesterday on the other side of the street," "I saw a series of panoramic pictures in a sort of mosaic, of such a nature that the imaginations I constructed out of them were not wholly unlike the imaginations I have constructed out of similar series of panoramic pictures seen by me on previous occasions when you were present." This would be clumsy, and it would not be sufficient. And yet I cannot help thinking that in certain assemblies, when some of those who are present are in an exalted state of emotional expectation, and the lights are low, even this roundabout way of putting things might be, to say the least, a salutary exercise.

But the conclusion I want you to draw from all this that we have been saying is that there are really two distinct parts in every sensation that we get. There is a message that comes to us somehow; but this message is not all that we apparently see and hear and feel. In every sensation there is, besides the actual message, something that we imagine and add to the message. This is sometimes expressed by saying that there is a part which comes from the external world and a part which is supplied by the mind. But however we express it, the fact to be remembered is that not the whole of a sensation is immediate experience (where by immediate experience I mean the actual message—whatever it is—that comes to us); but that this experience is supplemented by something else which is not in it. And thus you may see that it is a perfectly real question, "Where does this supplement come from?" This question has been before philosophers for a very long time; and it is this question that we have to discuss.

But first of all we must inquire a little further into the nature of the supplement by which we fill in our experience. When I fill in my experience of this room in the way that I have described, I do not do so at random, but according to certain rules. And in fact I generally fill it in *right;* that is

to say, from the imaginations that I have built up I can deduce by rules certain other experiences which would follow from actions of a definite sort. When I seem to see a solid floor, I conclude that if I went there I could feel it as I do the table. And upon trial these conclusions in general turn out right. I cannot therefore have filled in my experience at random, but according to certain rules. Let us now consider what are a few of these rules.

In the first place, out of pictures I have imagined solid things. Out of space of two dimensions, as we call it, I have made space of three dimensions, and I imagine these solid things as existing in it; that is to say, as having certain relations of distance to one another. Now these relations of distance are always so filled in as to fulfil a code of rules, some called common notions, and some called definitions, and some called postulates, and some assumed without warning, but all somehow contained in Euclid's *Elements of Geometry*. For example, I sometimes imagine that I see two lines in a position which I call parallel. Parallelism is impossible on the curved pictures of my retina; so this is part of the filling in. Now whenever I imagine that I see a quadrilateral figure whose opposite sides are parallel, I always fill them in so that the opposite sides are also *equal*. This equality is also a part of the filling in, and relates to possible perceptions other than the one immediately present. From this example, then, you can see that the fundamental axioms and definitions of geometry are really certain rules according to which we supplement or fill in our experience.

Now here is a rather more complicated example. If I see a train going along and a man moving inside of it, I fill in the motion of the train as continuous out of a series of distinct pictures of it; and so also I fill in the motion of the man relatively to the train as continuous. I imagine all motions, therefore, according to the rule of continuity; that is, between the distinct pictures which I see, I insert an infinite number of intermediate pictures. Moreover, both of these motions are imagined in accordance with the laws of geometry; that is to say, they are imagined so that the relations of distance at any instant obey those laws. But now I may, if I like, consider, besides the motion of the train and the motion of the

man relative to it, the motion of the man relative to me, as if there were no train; and this like the other motions is part of the filling in. But I always fill this in in such a way that the three motions—of the train by itself, of the man by himself, and of the man relatively to the train—satisfy certain rules, by which one can be found when the other two are given. These rules are called the laws of kinematic, or of the pure science of motion.

Then we may say, to begin with, that we supplement our experience in accordance with certain rules; and that some of these rules are the foundations of the pure sciences of Space and Motion.

Instead of Space and Motion, many people would like to say Space and Time. But in regard to the special matter that we are considering, it seems to me, for reasons which I do not wish to give at present, to be more correct to say that we imagine time by putting together space and motion, than that we imagine motion by putting together space and time.

There are other rules, besides those of space and motion, according to which we fill in our experience. One of these rules I may call the continuity of things. I can see this table, and feel it, and hear a sound when I strike it. The table is an imagination by which I fill in a great variety of different experiences. It is what I call a thing. Now, if I come into this room again, and have any experience of the table, I shall fill it in in such a way as to imply that the same variety of experiences might be combined again; that is, I shall imagine the thing to be persistent. But this rule will not apply universally, and I do not always observe it. Because I have seen a tree without leaves in the winter, I do not in the summer fill in my experience of the trunk with imagination of leafless branches above. But I do fill in the two experiences with an imagination of an infinite series of gradual intermediate changes. Some people divide this rule into two—the persistence of substance and the continuity of qualities. I prefer to make one rule, and to call it the continuity of things. Things—that is to say, combinations of possible experience—are not persistent, but they change continuously in the imagination by which we fill up that experience. Or we may say that experience at any one time is always so filled

in as to aggregate together the possible perceptions implied by the result into groups which we call things; and that experience of a period of time is always so filled in that things change only in a continuous manner.

Another rule of the supplement which we imagine is that which provides that these changes of things shall take place according to a certain uniformity. The simplest case of this is when the same experience is repeated, and we fill up the changes subsequent to the second experience so that they shall be the same as those subsequent to the first. It is not necessary that the experience should be actually repeated; it may only be filled up in the same way. The uniformity, however, which is involved in this law is a much more complicated thing than this simple case. I can only say here that experience is filled up always so as to make the imagined history of things exhibit *some* uniformity; but the definiteness of this varies in different individuals and at different times. Some people prefer to call this the law of causation, and to say that we always supplement our experiences in such a way that every event has a cause or causes which determine it, and effects which flow from it.

Now all this filling up that we have been considering happens directly in the sensations that I get from day to day, just as I get them. (It is convenient to use the word sensation, as meaning the *whole* phenomenon, not only the immediate experience, but also the supplement.) But if I want to talk to you about them, or if, advancing upon that practice, I talk to myself about them, then I am obliged to use *language*, or to represent them by signs; and this requires me to group them in a new manner. I have to make imaginations not of things, but of whole series of things, of relations of these to one another, and combinations of the relations. I have to construct, in fact, what I shall call for shortness the apparatus of thought—the means by which I talk to myself. For there seems reason to think that the conceptions which correspond to general terms—names of a class, or of an abstract relation—are first rendered necessary by the language which expresses them.[1] But however that may be, this new world of concep-

[1] See this view ably defended in Professor Max Müller's Lectures, delivered at the Royal Institution in April 1873, and since published in *Fraser's Magazine*.

tions is not made wholly at random, but satisfies certain laws. For example, in order to describe a certain group of things, I introduce the very complicated conception *six*, and say there are six of them. Now, whenever this is done in the case of two groups, giving rise to the conceptions *six* and *three*, it is possible to apply the same process to the group compounded of those two, and it always gives rise to the conception *nine*. Here, then, is a law of combination to which the world of conceptions has to conform. And another is this: If every individual which belongs to the class A belongs also to the class B, and if every individual which belongs to the class B belongs also to the class C, then always every individual which belongs to the class A belongs also to the class C. Rules like these which regulate the world of conceptions, built out of our sensations, are also said to belong to the pure sciences; and the two examples which I have chosen belong respectively to the sciences of Number and Logic.

There may be other kinds of rules according to which experience is supplemented and sensations are built up into conceptions; but I am not aware of any more kinds, and perhaps those that I have mentioned will be sufficient for our purpose. I will just state again the names of the sciences which consist in these three groups:—

The rules about Space and Motion constitute the pure sciences of Geometry and Kinematic.

The rules about Things and Uniformity have been said to belong to a pure science of Nature.

The rules about Numbers and Classes constitute the pure sciences of Arithmetic and Formal Logic.

But for the present let us confine our attention to the first group of rules, those which relate to space and motion. There is one other property of them which we have to consider, besides the fact that our experience is filled up in accordance with them. I have already mentioned this property, but only in passing. It is that in general this filling in of experience is *right*: and that, so far as these rules are concerned, it is not only right in general, but always right. That is to say, if from the sensation which is made by the filled-up experience we predict certain other perceptions as consequent upon our actions, these predictions will actually be fulfilled. To take

the example we considered before, I always imagine a parallelogram so that its opposite sides are equal. Now the conclusion from this is that if I go to the parallelogram and apply one of the sides to the other, I shall not perceive any difference. The rule by which I supplement my perception is also a true statement about objects; it is capable of a certain kind of verification, and it always stands this test.

Here, however, I could use the word *equal* only in its practical sense, in which two things are equal when I cannot perceive their difference; not in its theoretical sense, in which two things are equal when they have no difference at all. But there has been for ages a conviction in the minds of men that these rules about space are true objectively in the exact or theoretical sense, and under all possible circumstances. If two straight lines are drawn perpendicular to the same plane, geometers would have told you for more than two thousand years that these straight lines may be prolonged for ever and ever without getting the least bit nearer to one another or further away from one another; and that they were perfectly certain of this. They knew for certain that the sum of the angles of a triangle, no matter how big or how small it was, or where it was situated, must always be exactly equal to two right angles, neither more nor less. And those who were philosophers as well as geometers knew more than this. They knew not only that the thing was true, but that it could not possibly have been otherwise; that it was necessarily true. And this means, apparently, not merely that I know that it must be, but that I know that you must know that it must be.

The case of arithmetical propositions is perhaps more easily comprehended in this respect. Everybody knows that six things and three things make nine things at all possible times and places; you cannot help seeing not only that they do always without exception make nine things, but that they must do so; and that the world could not have been constructed otherwise. For to those ingenious speculations which suppose that in some other planet there may always be a tenth thing inevitably suggested upon the union of the six and the three, so that they cannot be added together without making ten; to these, I say, it may be replied that the words *number* and *thing*, if used at all, must have different meanings

in that planet. The reply is important, and I shall return to it in a subsequent lecture.

Locke and Hume gave explanations of the existence of two of these general rules which I have put into my second group. Locke explained the notion of substance, the notion that a *thing* means something more than an aggregate of possible perceptions, by the fact that we are accustomed to get these perceptions all together; by this *custom* they are welded or linked together, and our imagination of the thing is then this connected structure of perceptions, which is called up as a whole whenever one or more of the component perceptions is called up. Having thus by custom formed the complete sensation which we have of the thing, we suppose that this is a message, like the actual perceptions, and comes from something outside. That something is the substance. Locke did not admit that this supposition is right, and that the linking together of messages is really itself a message; but still he thought there was something outside to correspond to this linking. Hume explained in the same way the rule of causation. He said we get it from being accustomed to perceive one event following another; so that these two perceptions got linked together, and when one of them occurs alone, we fill it in with the other one. And then, regarding this link, produced only by custom, as if it were a message from somewhere, like the simple perceptions, we give it the name of causation.

These explanations agree in saying that the supplement of experience is made up of past experience, together with links which bind together perceptions that have been accustomed to occur together. This fact, that perceptions and feelings which have frequently occurred together get linked, so that one calls up the other, is called the law of Association, and has been made the basis of scientific Psychology. According to these explanations of Locke and Hume (which extended to the other two groups of rules) all the knowledge we have that the rules are right, or may be objectively verified, is really derived from experience; only it is *past* experience, which we have had so often and got so accustomed to that it is now really a part of ourselves.

But Kant, after being staggered for some time by Hume's

explanation, at length said, "It is impossible that all your knowledge can have come from experience. For you know that the axioms of mathematics are absolutely and universally true, and no experience can possibly have told you this. However often you may have found the angles of a triangle amount to two right angles, however accustomed you may have got to this experience, you have no right to know that the angles of every possible triangle are equal to two right angles, nor indeed that those of any one triangle are absolutely and exactly so equal. Now you do know this, and you cannot deny it. You have therefore some knowledge which could not possibly be derived from experience; it must therefore have come in some other way; or there is some other source of knowledge besides experience."

At that time there was no answer whatever to this. For men did think that they knew at least the absolute universality if not the necessity of the mathematical axioms. To any one who admitted the necessity, the argument was even stronger; for it was clear that no experience could make any approach to supply knowledge of this quality. But if a man felt absolutely sure that two straight lines perpendicular to the same line would never meet, however far produced, he could not maintain against Kant that all knowledge is derived from experience. He was obliged to admit the existence of knowledge *à priori*, that is, knowledge lying ready in the mind from the first, antecedent to all experience.

But now here is a difficulty to be explained. How is it possible that I can have knowledge about objects which is prior to all experience of objects, and which transcends the bounds of possible experience?

First of all, what do I mean by objects? In the answer to this question lies really Kant's solution of the problem, and I shall endeavour to make this clear by a comparison.

If a man had on a pair of green spectacles, he would see everything green. And if he found out this property of his spectacles, he might say with absolute certainty that while he had those spectacles on everything that he saw without exception would be green.

"Everything that he saw;" that is to say, all objects of sight to him. But here it is clear that the word object is

relative; it means a representation that he gets, and has nothing to do with the thing in itself. And the assertion that everything is green would not be an assertion about the things in themselves, but about the representations of them which came to him. The colour of these representations would depend partly on the things outside and partly on his spectacles. It would vary for different things, but there would always be green in it.

Let us modify this example a little. I know for certain that the colour of every object in the universe is made up of colours that lie within the range of the visible spectrum. This is apparently a universal statement, and yet I know it to be true of things which it is impossible that I should ever see. How is this? Why, simply, that my eyes are only affected by light which lies within the range of the visible spectrum. Now I say that this case is only a little modified from the previous one. The green glass lets in a certain range of light; the range is very little increased when you take it away. Only in the second case it happens that we are all actually wearing very nearly the same spectacles. That universal statement which I made is true not only of objects as they appear to me, but also of objects as they appear to you. It is a statement about objects; that is, about certain representations which we perceive. It may therefore so far have its origin in the things of which these are representations, or it may have its origin in us. And we happen to know that in this case it is not a statement about external things, but about our eyes.

Admitting, then, that the objects of our sensations are representations made to us; that their character must therefore be partly dependent upon our own character; what properties of these objects should we naturally suppose to have this origin, to be derived from the constitution of our minds? Why, clearly, those which are necessary and universal; for only such properties can be so derived, and there is no other way in which they can be known to be universal.

Accordingly, Kant supposes that Space and Time are necessary forms of perception, imposed upon it by the perceiving mind; that things are in space and time as they appear to us, and not in themselves; and that consequently

the statement that all things exist in space and time is a statement about the nature of our perception and not about the things perceived.

The word corresponding to experience (*Erfahrung*) is used by Kant nearly in the sense in which I have used *sensation*, to mean the whole phenomenon consisting of the bare message and also of the filling-in, the complete representation which we get of objects. But it is not apparently confined to this; it means not merely the sensations which I get, but the sensations which I talk about. Giving to the word this sense for the present, we may say that in his theory the form, the general character, of experience is imposed upon it by two faculties which we all possess: Intuition and Understanding. Intuition has necessarily the forms of Space and Time; but we are not to say that those properties of space which are expressed in the geometrical axioms are all necessitated by the forms of intuition; for it is the understanding that supplies us with the pure notions of quantity, quality, relation, and modality. It is not always easy to separate the parts played by these two faculties in supplying the general rules to which experience conforms; but it appears, for example, that the three dimensions of space are given by pure intuition itself, while the equality of the opposite sides of a parallelogram is only given by help of the understanding. It is not to our purpose to investigate the difference between these two faculties, or even to remember that Kant made a distinction between them. All that is important for us is the theory that those general statements upon which the pure sciences are founded, although really true of objects, that is of representations made to me, are in fact statements about me and not about the things in themselves: just as my general statement about the colours of things was really a statement about my own eyes and not about the things. And it is just because these statements *are* about me that I know them to be not only universally, but always necessarily true about the objects I perceive; for it is always the same *me* that perceives them—or at any rate it is a *me* possessing always the same faculties of representation.

Now observe what it is that this theory does with general statements; what is the means by which it gets rid of them

—for it does get rid of them. It makes them into particular statements. Instead of being statements about all possible places and times and things, they are made out to be statements about me, and about other men in so far as they have the same faculties that I have. I want you to notice this transformation particularly, because I shall afterwards endeavour to establish a similar transformation, though in rather a different manner.

In the next place, observe that the question which was proposed by the Critical Philosophy is a perfectly real and important question. It is this:—"Are there any properties of objects in general which are really due to me and to the way in which I perceive them, and which do not belong to the things themselves?" But it seems to me that the method by which Kant attempted to answer this question was not the right method. It consisted in finding what are those characters of experience which we know to be necessary and universal; and concluding that these are characters of me. It requires, therefore, some infallible way of judging what characters are necessary and universal. Now, unfortunately, as I hope to show you, judgments of this kind may very possibly be mistaken. If you went up to our man with the green spectacles, and argued with him that since he knew for certain that everything was green, whereas no experience could tell him so, this greenness must be somewhere in the apparatus by which he perceived things; there would be just one weakness in the argument. He might be mistaken in thinking he knew that everything was green. But the proper thing to do, as it appears to me, would be to take him to a looking-glass and show him that these spectacles were actually upon his nose. And so also in the general question which is proposed by the Critical Philosophy. The answer to that question must be sought not in the subjective method, in the conviction of universality and necessity, but in the physiological method, in the study of the physical facts that accompany sensation, and of the physical properties of the nervous system. The materials for this valid criticism of knowledge did not exist in Kant's time. I believe that they do exist at present to such an extent at least as to indicate the nature of the results which that criticism is to furnish.

The Kantian theory of universal truths was largely, though not completely, accepted by Whewell, and applied with considerable detail in his Philosophy of the Inductive Sciences. It is necessary to mention him here, not on account of any important modification that he introduced into the theory, but because the form into which he put it has had great influence in directing the attention of scientific students to the philosophy of science; and because by intelligent controversy he contributed very much to the clearing up and development of an opinion which we have next to consider—that of Mr. John Stuart Mill. I can best, I think, set this opinion before you, if I have permission to quote a short passage.

"To these arguments (of Dr. Whewell, contending that the axioms could not be known by experience) . . . a satisfactory answer will, I conceive, be found, if we advert to one of the characteristic properties of geometrical forms—their capacity of being painted in the imagination with a distinctness equal to reality: in other words, the exact resemblance of our ideas of form to the sensations which suggest them. This, in the first place, enables us to make (at least with a little practice) mental pictures of all possible combinations of lines and angles, which resemble the realities quite as well as any which we could make on paper; and in the next place, make those pictures just as fit subjects of geometrical experimentation as the realities themselves; inasmuch as pictures, if sufficiently accurate, exhibit of course all the properties which would be manifested by the realities at one given instant, and on simple inspection; and in geometry we are concerned only with such properties, and not with that which pictures could not exhibit, the mutual action of bodies upon one another. The foundations of geometry would therefore be laid in direct experience, even if the experiments (which in this case consist merely in attentive contemplation) were practised solely upon what we call our ideas, that is, upon the diagrams in our minds, and not upon outward objects. For in all systems of experimentation we take some objects to serve as representatives of all which resemble them; and in the present case the conditions which qualify a real object to be the representative of its class, are completely fulfilled by an object existing only

in our fancy. Without denying, therefore, the possibility of satisfying ourselves that two straight lines cannot enclose a space, by merely thinking of straight lines without actually looking at them, I contend that we do not believe this truth on the ground of the imaginary intuition simply, but because we know that the imaginary lines exactly resemble real ones, and that we may conclude from them to real ones with quite as much certainty as we could conclude from one real line to another. The conclusion, therefore, is still an induction from observation. And we should not be authorised to substitute observation of the image in our mind for observation of the reality, if we had not learnt by long-continued experience that the properties of the reality are faithfully represented in the image; just as we should be scientifically warranted in describing an animal which we had never seen from a picture made of it with a daguerreotype; but not until we had learnt by ample experience that observation of such a picture is precisely equivalent to observation of the original.

"These considerations also remove the objection arising from the impossibility of our ocularly following the lines in their prolongation to infinity. For though, in order actually to see that two given lines never meet, it would be necessary to follow them to infinity; yet without doing so we may know that if they ever do meet, or if, after diverging from one another, they begin again to approach, this must take place not at an infinite, but at a finite distance. Supposing, therefore, such to be the case, we can transport ourselves thither in imagination, and can frame a mental image of the appearance which one or both of the lines must present at that point, which we may rely on as being precisely similar to the reality. Now, whether we fix our contemplation upon this imaginary picture, or call to mind the generalisations we have had occasion to make from former ocular observation, we learn by the evidence of experience that a line which, after diverging from another straight line, begins to approach to it, produces the impression on our senses, which we describe by the expression 'a bent line,' not by the expression 'a straight line.'" —*Logic*, Book ii. chap. v. s. 5.

Upon this argument I have one very simple remark to

make. That "characteristic property of geometrical forms" is derived from experience;—we have "learnt by long-continued experience that the properties of the reality are faithfully represented in the image." Experience could only tell us this of realities and of images both of which we have experienced. I must know both of two things to know that one faithfully represents the other. Experience then tells me that my mental images of geometrical figures are faithful representations of those realities *which are within the bounds of experience.* But what is to tell me that they are faithful representations of realities that are beyond the bounds of experience? Surely no experience can tell me that.

Again, our notion of *straight* is a combination of several properties, an aggregate of impressions on our senses, which holds together within the limits of experience. But what is to tell us that these impressions hold together beyond the limits of experience?

It seems to me, then, that in admitting the universality of certain statements Mr. Mill knows something which on his own principles he has no right to know.

In the following section Mr. Mill deals with the supposed *necessity* of these truths. Taking this to mean the inconceivability of the negation of them, he explains it in somewhat the same way as Hume explained the idea of cause, namely, by means of the law of association. But that which in Locke and Hume had been merely a special explanation of particular phenomena has in the meantime grown into an extensive and most successful science of Psychology. It began, as you remember, in the form of a link between two impressions that occur frequently together. Perhaps the most important step was Hartley's idea of "mental chemistry"; that the result of two linked impressions might not put in evidence either of the components any more than water exhibits to us the hydrogen and the oxygen which it contains. In the hands of James Mill and Mr. Bain this mode of explanation has been applied with marked success to a vast number of mental phenomena; so that when Mr. Mill makes use of it to account for the inconceivability of that which has not yet been experienced, he is backed by an enormous mass of similar and most successful explanations.

This view, that the supplementary part of our sensations is an accumulation of past experience, has been further defended by Mr. Bain in many excellent books. But there is one respect in which the doctrines of Mr. Mill and Mr. Bain differ very importantly from the one which we have next to consider—that of Mr. Herbert Spencer. He also believes that the whole of our knowledge comes from experience; but while in the former view this experience is *our own*, and has been acquired during the lifetime of the individual, in the latter it is not the experience of you or me, but of all our ancestors. The perceptions, not only of former generations of men, but of those lower organisms from which they were originally derived, beginning even with the first molecule that was complex enough to preserve records of its own changes; all these have been built into the organism, have determined its character, and have been handed down to us by hereditary descent. The effect of this upon Kant's doctrine may be best displayed by another quotation:—

"The universal law that, other things equal, the cohesion of psychical states is proportionate to the frequency with which they have followed one another in experience, supplies an explanation of the so-called 'forms of thought,' as soon as it is supplemented by the law that habitual psychical successions entail some hereditary tendency to such successions, which, under persistent conditions, will become cumulative in generation after generation. We saw that the establishment of those compound reflex actions called instincts is comprehensible on the principle that inner relations are, by perpetual repetition, organised into correspondence with outer relations. We have now to observe that the establishment of those consolidated, those indissoluble, those instinctive mental relations constituting our ideas of Space and Time, is comprehensible on the same principle. . . .

"In the sense, then, that there exist in the nervous system certain pre-established relations answering to relations in the environment, there is a truth in the doctrine of 'forms of intuition'—not the truth which its defenders suppose, but a parallel truth. Corresponding to absolute external relations, there are established in the structure of the nervous system absolute internal relations—relations that are potentially

present before birth in the shape of definite nervous connections; that are antecedent to, and independent of, individual experiences; and that are automatically disclosed along with the first cognitions. And, as here understood, it is not only these fundamental relations which are thus pre-determined; but also hosts of other relations of a more or less constant kind, which are congenitally represented by more or less complete nervous connections. But these pre-determined internal relations, though independent of the experiences of the individual, are not independent of experiences in general: they have been determined by the experiences of preceding organisms. The corollary here drawn from the general argument is that the human brain is an organised register of infinitely numerous experiences received during the evolution of life, or rather, during the evolution of that series of organisms through which the human organism has been reached. The effects of the most uniform and frequent of these experiences have been successively bequeathed, principal and interest; and have slowly mounted to that high intelligence which lies latent in the brain of the infant—which the infant in after-life exercises and perhaps strengthens or further complicates—and which, with minute additions, it bequeathes to future generations. And thus it happens that the European inherits from twenty to thirty cubic inches more brain than the Papuan. Thus it happens that faculties, as of music, which scarcely exist in some inferior human races, become congenital in superior ones. Thus it happens that out of savages unable to count up to the number of their fingers, and speaking a language containing only nouns and verbs, arise at length our Newtons and our Shakespeares."—*Principles of Psychology*, § 208, vol. i. pp. 466, 470.

This doctrine of Mr. Spencer's is what I believe to be really the truth about the matter; and I shall have to return to it again by and by. But I have a remark to make here. It seems to me that the Kantian dilemma about universal propositions is just as valid now, in spite of these explanations, as it was in his time. How am I to know that the angles of a triangle are exactly equal to two right angles under all possible circumstances; not only in those regions of space

where the solar system has been, but everywhere else? The accumulated experience of all my ancestors for a hundred and fifty million years is no more competent to tell me *that* than my own experience of the last five minutes. Either I have some source of knowledge other than experience, and I must admit the existence of *à priori* truths, independent of experience; or I cannot know that any universal statement is true. Now the doctrine of evolution itself forbids me to admit any transcendental source of knowledge; so that I am driven to conclude in regard to every apparently universal statement, either that it is not really universal, but a particular statement about my nervous system, about my apparatus of thought; or that I do not know that it is true. And to this conclusion, by a detailed examination of various apparently universal statements, I shall in subsequent lectures endeavour to lead you.

II.—KNOWLEDGE AND FEELING

The following fragment appears to represent what was the conclusion of the series of Lectures as they were delivered in March 1873. It was found among Professor Clifford's papers without any external indication of its proper context; and as the Lectures now stand after the author's revision, it seems to come in better as an appendix to the first of them. Clifford himself regarded it apparently (note to the Third Lecture in *Nineteenth Century*, March 1879) as superseded by his article on "The Nature of Things-in-themselves"; but it contains critical remarks and illustrations which are not there, and it has seemed best to the editors to let it stand in this place.

In order to consider at this point what it is that we have arrived at, we must call to mind the point from which we started. We said that the whole of our sensations could not possibly be a message from outside, but that some part at least of them must be a supplement or filling-in of this message, added by ourselves. A theory came before us—that of Mr. Herbert Spencer—according to which this filling-in was accounted for as the product of past experience, which had taken effect on the brains of our ancestors and produced certain changes in them. These changes have gradually moulded the structure of the nervous system which was handed on to us by hereditary descent. There was one

obstacle to our acceptance of that theory as a sufficient account of the matter; namely, that we apparently had some knowledge which could not possibly have been got in that way—knowledge that certain general statements are absolutely and universally true. This obstacle I shall endeavour to remove, by showing that such general statements may be divided into two classes; of which those in the first class may for all we know be false, while those in the second class are general statements only in form, and really are judgments about the apparatus of thought. If this be so, we are at liberty to accept the view that all human knowledge is derived from experience; and that of the two factors in sensation, that supplement which we provide of ourselves is a giving out again of what has originally belonged to the other factor, to experience proper. But here a doubt suggests itself which appears exactly to reverse all that we have done. We said there were two factors of experience: that all of it could not be direct message; and we have come to the conclusion that the two factors are really of the same kind. But we did not show that any of it *was* direct message from outside; we only showed that some portions of it were not. Suppose it is all supplement, and there is no message at all! In that case our two factors will indeed be reduced to one; but in what sense can we say that our knowledge is derived from experience? It will of course be derived from experience in the large sense, that is, from sensation; but in the sense in which we have used the term, as meaning that part of sensation which is not supplied by ourselves, there will be no experience for us to derive knowledge from. This question then is an extremely important one; for if we have to admit that there is no real message from without, *all* the sciences will become pure sciences, all knowledge will be *à priori* knowledge; and we may construct the universe by sitting down and thinking about it. It is this question then that I propose to consider for a short time, a time very much too short for the consideration of it, but perhaps long enough to let me indicate in some way the kind of answer which is given by an extension of that Physiological Method which we began by using.

We traced the message of sight to the retina of the eye,

saying that the only direct message possible is contained in the picture there drawn. But we may go a little farther. The picture consists in an aggregate of forms and colours having a certain mode of connection. It is carried inwards by the optic nerve; but in order to be so carried, it has to undergo a still further transformation. The optic nerve is a great bundle of telegraph wires, each carrying its own message undisturbed by the rest. Each wire only tells what is happening at a particular point of the retina; that is to say, what colour and what intensity the light impinging on the point has. Now in order to tell the colour and intensity, it appears that it must consist of three distinct strands; for it has been made out that every sensation of colour is composed of three simple sensations combined in a certain proportion, this proportion varying from colour to colour. Does then the optic nerve carry the picture itself as a message? It is clear that it cannot; but it may take an account of every point in it, and of their relations of contiguity; that is, it carries an aggregate of elementary messages, which has a point-for-point connection with the picture, of such a nature as to retain the relations of nextness or contiguity. But the point to notice is that two messages carried by the optic nerve differ only as two chords played upon the same organ, or as two books written in the same alphabet; they are combinations or connected aggregates of the same elementary messages, selected and fastened together in different ways. The difference is a matter of arrangement and building up; not a difference of the elements that are built up. This very important step in the theory of sensation was made by Helmholtz, following in the steps of Müller, equally in the case of sight and sound. It was he who made out clearly that the special nerves of the senses had not absolutely special functions of transmitting their particular sensation as a whole, but that the difference consisted in the various ways of combining together the same elementary nerve-message. Where, then, are these messages taken? They are taken to the gray corpuscles within the brain; and apparently each nerve goes to its own corpuscle, and sets it in commotion with the message. Finally we get this result: that the presence of a picture on the retina involves the commotion

a certain number of gray corpuscles; the selection of which and the amount of excitement given to each are determined by the picture. And the same thing happens for every other kind of sensation. Now the direct knowledge that we get can only be knowledge of this commotion in the gray matter. For we can tap the telegraph, so to speak, and transmit a false message by it; and it is found that if the optic nerve be excited either by pressure of the eye or by an electric shock, the sensation of sight is produced, although no light has been present. The difference, then, of different sensations is made by the difference of the gray corpuscles excited; and the immediate knowledge that is given to us by experience can only be knowledge of more or less excitement of certain parts of the gray matter. This applies equally to touch, taste, smell, muscular action, the organic sensations of pain or pleasure. If you and I, then, choose to contemplate another person, we shall say that the world which he directly perceives is really inside his brain, and not outside; but that corresponding to these changes that go on in his brain there are certain changes going on outside of him, and that in many cases there is such a correspondence of the relations of contiguity in one case to the relation of contiguity in the other, that conclusions about the outer world may fairly be drawn from the world in his brain.

But now, if instead of considering this other person, I consider myself, the case is rather altered. I shall conclude by analogy that this world which I directly perceive is not really outside of me; that the things which are apparently made known to me by my perceptions are really themselves only groups of my perceptions; that the universe which I perceive is made up of my feelings; that in fact it is really *me*. And—by analogy also—I shall conclude that there *is* something besides this, different from it; the changes in which correspond in a certain way to the changes in my universe. Is it then possible for me to know what that is? or is there nothing at all except my feelings?

If, instead of approaching this question from the physiological side, we adopt another point of view, it is not unlikely that we shall be led to the latter conclusion. If I consider merely my own feelings, and ask what evidence they give of

anything beyond them, it seems to me that I must answer, no evidence at all. This at least was the answer given by Berkeley in a passage which has been quoted here before by Professor Huxley, but will bear quoting again :—

"Some truths there are so near and obvious to the mind that a man need only open his eyes to see them. Such I take this important one to be, viz. that all the choir of heaven and furniture of the earth, in a word, all those bodies which compose the mighty frame of the world, have not any subsistence without a mind, that their *being* is to be perceived or known; that consequently so long as they are not actually perceived by me, or do not exist in my mind or that of any other created spirit, they must either have no existence at all, or else subsist in the mind of some Eternal Spirit."—*Principles of Human Knowledge*, § 6.

If I say that such and such things existed at some previous time, I mean that if I had been there I could have perceived them; if I say that there is hydrogen in the sun, I mean that if I could get any of that gas I should be able to burn it in oxygen and produce exactly the same impressions on my senses as those which, in the aggregate, I call *water*.

This doctrine, that the essence of things consists in my perceiving them, is called Idealism. The form of it held by Berkeley, however, is not altogether pure. He believed that no material external world exists; but only spirits exist, thinking beings whose nature consists of conception and volition. Now, from this point of view, fairly accepted, you are only phenomena of my consciousness as much as the rest of the world; I cannot allow the existence of any spirits, but only of one spirit, myself. And even this language is hardly suitable; for why should I give myself a class-name like *spirit* when I am really the sum-total of the universe? Notwithstanding this failure to reach complete idealism, the doctrine of Berkeley, in its positive aspect, is a distinct and most important step in philosophy; it established in a security that has never yielded to attack the subjective character of the world of phenomena; that this world which I perceive *is* my perceptions and nothing more. Whether there is anything else quite different which corresponds to it in a certain

way, is another question; Berkeley said there were also spirits.

According to Berkeley, moreover, there exists, besides this world of my perceptions, a particular spirit, *me*, that perceives them. To get rid of this imaginary soul or substance, underlying the succession of my feelings, was the work of Hume. Just as an object, in Berkeley's theory, is merely a bundle of perceptions which always occur together, a linked aggregate of feelings; so, said Hume, out of the swift current of ideas that succeed one another we construct a unity which we call Self or Ego. But this, he said, is a pure illusion; and the ego, when analysed, turns out to be only the whole complex of my feelings. This, you see, is a step towards simplification; we had to begin with an external thing which is perceived; then the perception or feeling; then the soul or self which perceives. With Berkeley we get rid of the thing perceived; it is reduced to a bundle of perceptions. With Hume we get rid also of the perceiving self; it is reduced to the whole aggregate of feelings, linked together and succeeding one another in a certain manner.

The step made by Mill is a more complete definition of the same view, and an explanation by means of the law of association of the way in which we come to believe in an external world. He says that objects are completely described by the phrase, "permanent possibilities of sensation."

"The Psychological Theory maintains that there are associations naturally and even necessarily generated by the order of our sensations and of our reminiscences of sensation, which, supposing no intuition of an external world to have existed in consciousness, would inevitably generate the belief, and would cause it to be regarded as an intuition. . . . The conception I form of the world existing at any moment comprises, along with the sensations I am feeling, a countless variety of possibilities of sensation: namely, the whole of those which past observation tells me that I could, under any supposable circumstances, experience at this moment, together with an indefinite and illimitable multitude of others which though I do not know that I could, yet it is possible that I might, experience in circumstances not known to me. These

various possibilities are the important thing to me in the world. My present sensations are generally of little importance, and are moreover fugitive: the possibilities, on the contrary, are permanent, which is the character that mainly distinguishes our idea of Substance or Matter from our notion of sensation. . . . Matter, then, may be defined, a Permanent Possibility of Sensation."[1]

In the meanwhile, you observe, the association-theory of the mind had been created; and it is here applied to defend the position of Hume. It is worth while to notice now where we are. The universe consists of feelings. A certain cable of feelings, linked together in a particular manner, constitutes me. Similar cables constitute you. That is all there is. But in the cable of feelings that make up me there are certain persistent bundles or strands, which occasionally come to the outside; there are similar strands in the cables of which you are constituted. These correspond to external objects; we only think them external for the reasons assigned.

Now, when we pass to Mr. Herbert Spencer, we come into the presence of another great department of science that has not had so strong an action upon Mr. Mill; and that is the anatomy of the nervous system. The effect of investigations in this subject is to analyse all the various kinds of nervous action into different combinations of two simple elements; the transmission of messages along nerve-threads of white matter, and the excitement of nerve-cells of gray matter. Apparently all the nerve-threads are alike, and all the nerve-cells are alike. The only thing that remains to produce the very different effects that we observe is the variety of ways in which selections may be made from the nerve-cells to be excited at any moment. The direct effects of nerve-action are the effect on muscular tissue of contraction or release, and the effect on glands of secretion.

Here, then, were two great branches of analysis present to Mr. Spencer: the analysis of mental action given by the association-theory, which reduced everything to the linking-together of feelings, and the analysis of nervous action supplied

[1] J. S. Mill, *Examination of Sir W. Hamilton's Philosophy*, pp. 192, 193, 198, 2d edit.

by the histologists. It was his business to supply not merely the link between the two, but an account of their simultaneous evolution. If we find that certain complicated forms of mental action always accompany certain forms of nervous action; if each of these can be reduced into elements, and the relation of each compound to its elements is the same—the bricks different, but the mode of putting them together identical in these two houses—there is a very strong presumption that the element of mental action always accompanies the element of nervous action. But this presumption is converted into knowledge when we have an account of their origin. When the evolution of the living organism is traced upwards from the simplest forms to the most complex, and it is found that the evolution of mind proceeds *pari passu* with it, following the same laws and passing through the same stages, either evolution being expressed as a continual building up with the same element, we have actual evidence that the one element goes with the other.

Here, then, is the great advantage of Mr. Herbert Spencer in the study of both orders of facts. He can make any step in analysis of the one help in the analysis of the other. And accordingly he has carried both to an extent which leaves all previous investigators far behind. But you will see at once that we must look at the question of idealism from the physiological point of view. And accordingly he considers that there *is* something different from our perceptions, the changes in which correspond in a certain way to the changes in the worlds we perceive. He thinks, however, that we can never know what it is; and he says:—

"We can think of Matter only in terms of Mind. We can think of Mind only in terms of Matter. When we have pushed our explorations of the first to the uttermost limit, we are referred to the second for a final answer; and when we have got the final answer of the second, we are referred back to the first for an interpretation of it. We find the value of x in terms of y; then we find the value of y in terms of x; and so on we may continue for ever without coming nearer to a solution. The antithesis of subject and object, never to be transcended while consciousness lasts, renders impossible all knowledge of that Ultimate Reality in

which subject and object are united."—*Principles of Psychology*, § 272 (vol. i. p. 627).

Now, the singular character of this realism is that it is defended from the idealistic point of view, namely, Mr. Spencer attempts to make my feelings give me evidence of something which is not included among them. A careful study of all his arguments to that effect has only convinced me over again that the attempt is hopeless. In this respect he differs considerably from Mr. Shadworth Hodgson, who must be regarded as an advance, within the British school, in the direction of Berkeley and Hume. He accepts the analysis of the individual ego or self into a complex of feeling; and, like Hume or Mill, makes the universe to consist of feelings variously bound together. But this is only one aspect of it and of all contained phenomena. Every phenomenon has two aspects; in its subjective aspect it is a feeling, in its objective aspect a quality. But it is not necessarily a feeling of my consciousness or of your consciousness; it may be a feeling of the general or universal consciousness, which is coextensive with all existence. The universal consciousness bears the same relation to the universal Ego of Schelling or Hegel that the stream of feelings does to the soul; it is an analysis of it into elements.

The important thing here is the conclusion that there is only one world, combined with the analysis of mental phenomena. The German Idealist attempted to construct the world out of very abstract ideas, which are the most complex of all forms of mental action. In this way we did get one world, a mental world; but the bricks of which it was built were made by the ingenious piling together of houses. I do not think that that process is likely to produce serviceable bricks. Now Mr. Hodgson's element, feeling, although it seems to imply something too complicated, is yet at least a step in the way of analysis, an indication that analysis is desired.

Can we now get out of our hobble, and arrive at real knowledge derived from external experience, from messages and not from imagination? I think we can. But it is necessary to say first what is the character of the knowledge we desire. It will be of the nature of inference, and not of

absolute certainty. Now inference depends on the assumption of the uniformity of nature; and what does this rest on? We cannot infer that which is the ground of all inference; but although I cannot give you a logical reason for believing it, I can give you a physical explanation of the fact that we all do believe it. We believe a thing when we are prepared to act as if it were true. Now, if you and I had not habitually acted on the assumption of the uniformity of nature from the time when we could act at all, we should not be here to discuss the question. Nature is selecting for survival those individuals and races who act as if she were uniform; and hence the gradual spread of that belief over the civilised world.

This uniformity may be merely a uniformity of *phenomena*, a law relating to my feelings. So long as I only am concerned, it seems to me that the idealist theory is perfectly sufficient. It is quite capable of explaining *me;* but when *you* come into the question, it is utterly at a loss. The distinction between the universal and the individual ego seems to me a merely useless abstraction that throws dust in our eyes. I do believe that you are conscious in the same way as I am; and once that is conceded, the whole idealist theory falls to pieces. For there are feelings which are not my feelings, which are entirely outside my consciousness; so that there is at least an external world. But let us consider now in what way we infer it; why do I believe that there are feelings which are not mine? Because, as I belong to a gregarious race, the greater part of my life consists in acting upon the supposition that it is true.

But now further, have I reason for believing that the changes in this external world correspond in any way with the changes in my world which I perceive? I think so. The complex of feelings which constitutes *you* corresponds in a definite way with the changes which I might perceive in your brain. By inferences that I have previously indicated, I conclude that the ultimate element into which your feeling can be analysed goes with the ultimate element out of which the changes of the nerve-matter in your brain are built up. But physiological action is complicated chemistry in the same way that chemistry is complicated mechanics. The actions

that take place in the brain differ in no way from other material actions, except in their complexity. Conjoin with this the doctrine of Evolution, and you will see evidence that the simplest mental change goes always with the simplest material change, whether in the brain or not. The external world, then, is a complex of mental changes; the ultimate elements into which feeling can be analysed; so simple that the simplest feeling which we can experience is an enormously complex mass of them. Some of these are built up into sufficiently complicated forms to constitute what we call personality, will, consciousness. They all succeed one another according to certain laws; and in virtue of these any conscious aggregate of them is acted upon by the rest; the changes so produced in it are what we call a material world.

There is thus only one world of elementary feelings; which is perceived by me as my material world. And I am not to look for those complex forms of mental action called intelligence and consciousness, except where I can perceive a correspondingly complex aggregation of matter.

III.—THE POSTULATES OF THE SCIENCE OF SPACE

In my first lecture I said that, out of the pictures which are all that we can really see, we imagine a world of solid things; and that this world is constructed so as to fulfil a certain code of rules, some called axioms, and some called definitions, and some called postulates, and some assumed in the course of demonstration, but all laid down in one form or another in Euclid's *Elements of Geometry.* It is this code of rules that we have to consider to-day. I do not, however, propose to take this book that I have mentioned, and to examine one after another the rules as Euclid has laid them down or unconsciously assumed them; notwithstanding that many things might be said in favour of such a course. This book has been for nearly twenty-two centuries the encouragement and guide of that scientific thought which is one thing with the progress of man from a worse to a better state. The encouragement; for it contained a body of knowledge that was really known and could be relied on, and that moreover

was growing in extent and application. For even at the time this book was written—shortly after the foundation of the Alexandrian Museum—Mathematic was no longer the merely ideal science of the Platonic school, but had started on her career of conquest over the whole world of Phenomena. The guide; for the aim of every scientific student of every subject was to bring his knowledge of that subject into a form as perfect as that which geometry had attained. Far up on the great mountain of Truth, which all the sciences hope to scale, the foremost of that sacred sisterhood was seen, beckoning to the rest to follow her. And hence she was called, in the dialect of the Pythagoreans, "the purifier of the reasonable soul." Being thus in itself at once the inspiration and the aspiration of scientific thought, this Book of Euclid's has had a history as chequered as that of human progress itself. It embodied and systematised the truest results of the search after truth that was made by Greek, Egyptian, and Hindu. It presided for nearly eight centuries over that promise of light and right that was made by the civilised Aryan races on the Mediterranean shores; that promise, whose abeyance for nearly as long an interval is so full of warning and of sadness for ourselves. It went into exile along with the intellectual activity and the goodness of Europe. It was taught, and commented upon, and illustrated, and supplemented, by Arab and Nestorian, in the Universities of Bagdad and of Cordova. From these it was brought back into barbaric Europe by terrified students who dared tell hardly any other thing of what they had learned among the Saracens. Translated from Arabic into Latin, it passed into the schools of Europe, spun out with additional cases for every possible variation of the figure, and bristling with words which had sounded to Greek ears like the babbling of birds in a hedge. At length the Greek text appeared and was translated; and, like other Greek authors, Euclid became an authority. There had not yet arisen in Europe "that fruitful faculty," as Mr. Winwood Reade calls it, "with which kindred spirits contemplate each other's works; which not only takes, but gives; which produces from whatever it receives; which embraces to wrestle, and wrestles to embrace." Yet it was coming; and though that criticism of first principles

which Aristotle and Ptolemy and Galen underwent waited longer in Euclid's case than in theirs, it came for him at last. What Vesalius was to Galen, what Copernicus was to Ptolemy, that was Lobatchewsky to Euclid. There is, indeed, a somewhat instructive parallel between the last two cases. Copernicus and Lobatchewsky were both of Slavic origin. Each of them has brought about a revolution in scientific ideas so great that it can only be compared with that wrought by the other. And the reason of the transcendent importance of these two changes is that they are changes in the conception of the Cosmos. Before the time of Copernicus, men knew all about the Universe. They could tell you in the schools, pat off by heart, all that it was, and what it had been, and what it would be. There was the flat earth, with the blue vault of heaven resting on it like the dome of a cathedral, and the bright cold stars stuck into it; while the sun and planets moved in crystal spheres between. Or, among the better informed, the earth was a globe in the centre of the universe, heaven a sphere concentric with it; intermediate machinery as before. At any rate, if there was anything beyond heaven, it was a void space that needed no further description. The history of all this could be traced back to a certain definite time, when it began; behind that was a changeless eternity that needed no further history. Its future could be predicted in general terms as far forward as a certain epoch, about the precise determination of which there were, indeed, differences among the learned. But after that would come again a changeless eternity, which was fully accounted for and described. But in any case the Universe was a known thing. Now the enormous effect of the Copernican system, and of the astronomical discoveries that have followed it, is that, in place of this knowledge of a little, which was called knowledge of the Universe, of Eternity and Immensity, we have now got knowledge of a great deal more; but we only call it the knowledge of Here and Now. We can tell a great deal about the solar system; but, after all, it is our house, and not the city. We can tell something about the star-system to which our sun belongs; but, after all, it is our star-system, and not the Universe. We are talking about Here with the consciousness of a There beyond it, which we may know

some time, but do not at all know now. And though the nebular hypothesis tells us a great deal about the history of the solar system, and traces it back for a period compared with which the old measure of the duration of the Universe from beginning to end is not a second to a century, yet we do not call this the history of eternity. We may put it all together and call it Now, with the consciousness of a Then before it, in which things were happening that may have left records; but we have not yet read them. This, then, was the change effected by Copernicus in the idea of the Universe. But there was left another to be made. For the laws of space and motion, that we are presently going to examine, implied an infinite space and an infinite duration, about whose properties as space and time everything was accurately known. The very constitution of those parts of it which are at an infinite distance from us, "geometry upon the plane at infinity," is just as well known, if the Euclidean assumptions are true, as the geometry of any portion of this room. In this infinite and thoroughly well-known space the Universe is situated during at least some portion of an infinite and thoroughly well-known time. So that here we have real knowledge of something at least that concerns the Cosmos; something that is true throughout the Immensities and the Eternities. That something Lobatchewsky and his successors have taken away. The geometer of to-day knows nothing about the nature of actually existing space at an infinite distance; he knows nothing about the properties of this present space in a past or a future eternity. He knows, indeed, that the laws assumed by Euclid are true with an accuracy that no direct experiment can approach, not only in this place where we are, but in places at a distance from us that no astronomer has conceived; but he knows this as of Here and Now; beyond his range is a There and Then of which he knows nothing at present, but may ultimately come to know more. So, you see, there is a real parallel between the work of Copernicus and his successors on the one hand, and the work of Lobatchewsky and his successors on the other. In both of these the knowledge of Immensity and Eternity is replaced by knowledge of Here and Now. And in virtue of these two revolutions the idea of the Universe,

the Macrocosm, the All, as subject of human knowledge, and therefore of human interest, has fallen to pieces.

It will now, I think, be clear to you why it will not do to take for our present consideration the postulates of geometry as Euclid has laid them down. While they were all certainly true, there might be substituted for them some other group of equivalent propositions; and the choice of the particular set of statements that should be used as the groundwork of the science was to a certain extent arbitrary, being only guided by convenience of exposition. But from the moment that the actual truth of these assumptions becomes doubtful, they fall of themselves into a necessary order and classification; for we then begin to see which of them may be true independently of the others. And for the purpose of criticising the evidence for them, it is essential that this natural order should be taken; for I think you will see presently that any other order would bring hopeless confusion into the discussion.

Space is divided into parts in many ways. If we consider any material thing, space is at once divided into the part where that thing is and the part where it is not. The water in this glass, for example, makes a distinction between the space where it is and the space where it is not. Now, in order to get from one of these to the other you must cross the *surface* of the water; this surface is the boundary of the space where the water is which separates it from the space where it is not. Every *thing*, considered as occupying a portion of space, has a surface which separates the space where it is from the space where it is not. But, again, a surface may be divided into parts in various ways. Part of the surface of this water is against the air, and part is against the glass. If you travel over the surface from one of these parts to the other, you have to cross the *line* which divides them; it is this circular edge where water, air, and glass meet. Every part of a surface is separated from the other parts by a line which bounds it. But now suppose, further, that this glass had been so constructed that the part towards you was blue and the part towards me was white, as it is now. Then this line, dividing two parts of the surface of the water, would itself be divided into two parts; there would be a part where it was against the blue glass, and a part where it was against

the white glass. If you travel in thought along that line, so as to get from one of these two parts to the other, you have to cross a *point* which separates them, and is the boundary between them. Every part of a line is separated from the other parts by points which bound it. So we may say altogether—

The boundary of a solid (*i.e.* of a part of space) is a surface.

The boundary of a part of a surface is a line.

The boundaries of a part of a line are points.

And we are only settling the meanings in which words are to be used. But here we may make an observation which is true of all space that we are acquainted with: it is that the process ends here. There are no parts of a point which are separated from one another by the next link in the series. This is also indicated by the reverse process.

For I shall now suppose this point—the last thing that we got to—to move round the tumbler so as to trace out the line, or edge, where air, water, and glass meet. In this way I get a series of points, one after another; a series of such a nature that, starting from any one of them, only two changes are possible that will keep it within the series: it must go forwards or it must go backwards, and each of these is perfectly definite. The line may then be regarded as an aggregate of points. Now let us imagine, further, a change to take place in this line, which is nearly a circle. Let us suppose it to contract towards the centre of the circle, until it becomes indefinitely small, and disappears. In so doing it will trace out the upper surface of the water, the part of the surface where it is in contact with the air. In this way we shall get a series of circles one after another—a series of such a nature that, starting from any one of them, only two changes are possible that will keep it within the series: it must expand or it must contract. This series, therefore, of circles, is just similar to the series of points that make one circle; and just as the line is regarded as an aggregate of points, so we may regard this surface as an aggregate of lines. But this surface is also in another sense an aggregate of points, in being an aggregate of aggregates of points. But, starting from a point in the surface, more than two changes are

possible that will keep it within the surface, for it may move in any direction. The surface, then, is an aggregate of points of a different kind from the line. We speak of the line as a point-aggregate of one dimension, because, starting from one point, there are only two possible directions of change; so that the line can be traced out in one motion. In the same way, a surface is a line-aggregate of one dimension, because it can be traced out by one motion of the line; but it is a point-aggregate of two dimensions, because, in order to build it up of points, we have first to aggregate points into a line, and then lines into a surface. It requires two motions of a point to trace it out.

Lastly, let us suppose this upper surface of the water to move downwards, remaining always horizontal till it becomes the under surface. In so doing it will trace out the part of space occupied by the water. We shall thus get a series of surfaces one after another, precisely analogous to the series of points which make a line, and the series of lines which make a surface. The piece of solid space is an aggregate of surfaces, and an aggregate of the same kind as the line is of points; it is a surface-aggregate of one dimension. But at the same time it is a line-aggregate of two dimensions, and a point-aggregate of three dimensions. For if you consider a particular line which has gone to make this solid, a circle partly contracted and part of the way down, there are more than two opposite changes which it can undergo. For it can ascend or descend, or expand or contract, or do both together in any proportion. It has just as great a variety of changes as a point in a surface. And the piece of space is called a point-aggregate of three dimensions, because it takes three distinct motions to get it from a point. We must first aggregate points into a line, then lines into a surface, then surfaces into a solid.

At this step it is clear, again, that the process must stop in all the space we know of. For it is not possible to move that piece of space in such a way as to change every point in it. When we moved our line or our surface, the new line or surface contained no point whatever that was in the old one; we started with one aggregate of points, and by moving it we got an entirely new aggregate, all the points of which were

new. But this cannot be done with the solid; so that the process is at an end. We arrive, then, at the result that *space is of three dimensions.*

Is this, then, one of the postulates of the science of space? No; it is not. The science of space, as we have it, deals with relations of distance existing in a certain space of three dimensions, but it does not at all require us to assume that no relations of distance are possible in aggregates of more than three dimensions. The fact that there are only three dimensions does regulate the number of books that we write, and the parts of the subject that we study: but it is not itself a postulate of the science. We investigate a certain space of three dimensions, on the hypothesis that it has certain elementary properties; and it is the assumptions of these elementary properties that are the real postulates of the science of space. To these I now proceed.

The first of them is concerned with *points,* and with the relation of space to them. We spoke of a line as an aggregate of points. Now there are two kinds of aggregates, which are called respectively continuous and discrete. If you consider this line, the boundary of part of the surface of the water, you will find yourself believing that between any two points of it you can put more points of division, and between any two of these more again, and so on; and you do not believe there can be any end to the process. We may express that by saying you believe that between any two points of the line there is an infinite number of other points. But now here is an aggregate of marbles, which, regarded as an aggregate, has many characters of resemblance with the aggregate of points. It is a series of marbles, one after another; and if we take into account the relations of nextness or contiguity which they possess, then there are only two changes possible from one of them as we travel along the series: we must go to the next in front, or to the next behind. But yet it is not true that between any two of them there is an infinite number of other marbles; between these two, for example, there are only three. There, then, is a distinction at once between the two kinds of aggregates. But there is another, which was pointed out by Aristotle in his Physics and made the basis of a definition of continuity. I have here a row of two different kinds of

marbles, some white and some black. This aggregate is divided into two parts, as we formerly supposed the line to be. In the case of the line the boundary between the two parts is a point which is the element of which the line is an aggregate. In this case before us, a marble is the element; but here we cannot say that the boundary between the two parts is a marble. The boundary of the white parts is a white marble, and the boundary of the black parts is a black marble; these two adjacent parts have different boundaries. Similarly, if instead of arranging my marbles in a series, I spread them out on a surface, I may have this aggregate divided into two portions—a white portion and a black portion; but the boundary of the white portion is a row of white marbles, and the boundary of the black portion is a row of black marbles. And lastly, if I made a heap of white marbles, and put black marbles on the top of them, I should have a discrete aggregate of three dimensions divided into two parts: the boundary of the white part would be a layer of white marbles, and the boundary of the black part would be a layer of black marbles. In all these cases of discrete aggregates, when they are divided into two parts, the two adjacent parts have different boundaries. But if you come to consider an aggregate that you believe to be continuous, you will see that you think of two adjacent parts as having the *same* boundary. What is the boundary between water and air here? Is it water? No; for there would still have to be a boundary to divide that water from the air. For the same reason it cannot be air. I do not want you at present to think of the actual physical facts by the aid of any molecular theories; I want you only to think of what appears to be, in order to understand clearly a conception that we all have. Suppose the things actually in contact. If, however much we magnified them, they still appeared to be thoroughly homogeneous, the water filling up a certain space, the air an adjacent space; if this held good indefinitely through all degrees of conceivable magnifying, then we could not say that the surface of the water was a layer of water and the surface of air a layer of air; we should have to say that the same surface was the surface of both of them, and was itself neither one nor the other—that this surface occupied *no* space at all. Accordingly, Aristotle defined the continuous

as that of which two adjacent parts have the same boundary; and the discontinuous or discrete as that of which two adjacent parts have direct boundaries.[1]

Now the first postulate of the science of space is that space is a continuous aggregate of points, and not a discrete aggregate. And this postulate—which I shall call the postulate of continuity—is really involved in those three of the six[2] postulates of Euclid for which Robert Simson has retained the name of postulate. You will see, on a little reflection, that a discrete aggregate of points could not be so arranged that any two of them should be relatively situated to one another in exactly the same manner, so that any two points might be joined by a straight line which should always bear the same definite relation to them. And the same difficulty occurs in regard to the other two postulates. But perhaps the most conclusive way of showing that this postulate is really assumed by Euclid is to adduce the proposition he proves, that every finite straight line may be bisected. Now this could not be the case if it consisted of an odd number of separate points. As the first of the postulates of the science of space, then, we must reckon this postulate of Continuity; according to which two adjacent portions of space, or of a surface, or of a line, have the *same* boundary, viz.—a surface, a line, or a point; and between every two points on a line there is an infinite number of intermediate points.

The next postulate is that of Elementary Flatness. You know that if you get hold of a small piece of a very large circle, it seems to you nearly straight. So, if you were to take any curved line, and magnify it very much, confining your attention to a small piece of it, that piece would seem straighter to you than the curve did before it was magnified.

[1] Phys. Ausc. V. 3, p. 227, ed. Bekker. Τὸ δὲ συνεχὲς ἔστι μὲν ὅπερ ἐχόμενόν τι, λέγω δ' εἶναι συνεχὲς ὅταν ταὐτὸ γένηται καὶ ἓν τὸ ἑκατέρου πέρας οἷς ἅπτονται, καὶ ὥσπερ σημαίνει τοὔνομα συνέχηται. Τοῦτο δ' οὐχ οἷόν τε δυοῖν ὄντοιν εἶναι τοῖν ἐσχάτοιν.

A little farther on he makes the important remark that on the hypothesis of continuity a line is not *made up* of points in the same way that a whole is made up of parts, VI. 1, p. 231. 'Αδύνατον ἐξ ἀδιαιρέτων εἶναι τι συνεχές, οἷον γραμμὴν ἐκ στιγμῶν, εἴπερ ἡ γραμμὴ μὲν συνεχές, ἡ στιγμὴ δὲ ἀδιαίρετον.

[2] See De Morgan, in Smith's *Dict. of Biography and Mythology*, Art. "Euclid"; and in the *English Cyclopædia*, Art. "Axiom."

At least, you can easily conceive a curve possessing this property, that the more you magnify it, the straighter it gets. Such a curve would possess the property of elementary flatness. In the same way, if you perceive a portion of the surface of a very large sphere, such as the earth, it appears to you to be flat. If, then, you take a sphere of say a foot diameter, and magnify it more and more, you will find that the more you magnify it the flatter it gets. And you may easily suppose that this process would go on indefinitely; that the curvature would become less and less the more the surface was magnified. Any curved surface which is such that the more you magnify it the flatter it gets, is said to possess the property of elementary flatness. But if every succeeding power of our imaginary microscope disclosed new wrinkles and inequalities without end, then we should say that the surface did not possess the property of elementary flatness.

But how am I to explain how solid space can have this property of elementary flatness? Shall I leave it as a mere analogy, and say that it is the same kind of property as this of the curve and surface, only in three dimensions instead of one or two? I think I can get a little nearer to it than that; at all events I will try.

If we start to go out from a point on a surface, there is a certain choice of directions in which we may go. These directions make certain angles with one another. We may suppose a certain direction to start with, and then gradually alter that by turning it round the point: we find thus a single series of directions in which we may start from the point. According to our first postulate, it is a continuous series of directions. Now when I speak of a direction from the point, I mean a direction of starting; I say nothing about the subsequent path. Two different paths may have the same direction at starting; in this case they will touch at the point; and there is an obvious difference between two paths which touch and two paths which meet and form an angle. Here, then, is an aggregate of directions, and they can be changed into one another. Moreover, the changes by which they pass into one another have magnitude, they constitute distance-relations; and the amount of change necessary to turn one of them into another is called the angle between them. It is involved in

this postulate that we are considering, that angles can be compared in respect of magnitude. But this is not all. If we go on changing a direction of start, it will, after a certain amount of turning, come round into itself again, and be the same direction. On every surface which has the property of elementary flatness, the amount of turning necessary to take a direction all round into its first position is the same for all points of the surface. I will now show you a surface which at one point of it has not this property. I take this circle of paper from which a sector has been cut out, and bend it round so as to join the edges; in this way I form a surface which is called a *cone*. Now on all points of this surface but one, the law of elementary flatness holds good. At the vertex of the cone, however, notwithstanding that there is an aggregate of directions in which you may start, such that by continuously changing one of them you may get it round into its original position, yet the whole amount of change necessary to effect this is not the same at the vertex as it is at any other point of the surface. And this you can see at once when I unroll it; for only part of the directions in the plane have been included in the cone. At this point of the cone, then, it does not possess the property of elementary flatness; and no amount of magnifying would ever make a cone seem flat at its vertex.

To apply this to solid space, we must notice that here also there is a choice of directions in which you may go out from any point; but it is a much greater choice than a surface gives you. Whereas in a surface the aggregate of directions is only of one dimension, in solid space it is of two dimensions. But here also there are distance-relations, and the aggregate of directions may be divided into parts which have quantity. For example, the directions which start from the vertex of this cone are divided into those which go inside the cone, and those which go outside the cone. The part of the aggregate which is inside the cone is called a solid angle. Now in those spaces of three dimensions which have the property of elementary flatness, the whole amount of solid angle round one point is equal to the whole amount round another point. Although the space need not be exactly similar to itself in all parts, yet the aggregate of directions round one point is exactly similar to the aggregate of directions round

another point, if the space has the property of elementary flatness.

How does Euclid assume this postulate of Elementary Flatness? In his fourth postulate he has expressed it so simply and clearly that you will wonder how anybody could make all this fuss. He says, "All right angles are equal."

Why could I not have adopted this at once, and saved a great deal of trouble? Because it assumes the knowledge of a surface possessing the property of elementary flatness in all its points. Unless such a surface is first made out to exist, and the definition of a right angle is restricted to lines drawn upon it—for there is no necessity for the word *straight* in that definition—the postulate in Euclid's form is obviously not true. I can make two lines cross at the vertex of a cone so that the four adjacent angles shall be equal, and yet not one of them equal to a right angle.

I pass on to the third postulate of the science of space—the postulate of Superposition. According to this postulate a body can be moved about in space without altering its size or shape. This seems obvious enough, but it is worth while to examine a little closely into the meaning of it. We must define what we mean by size and by shape. When we say that a body can be moved about without altering its size, we mean that it can be so moved as to keep unaltered the length of all the lines in it. This postulate therefore involves that lines can be compared in respect of magnitude, or that they have a length independent of position; precisely as the former one involved the comparison of angular magnitudes. And when we say that a body can be moved about without altering its shape, we mean that it can be so moved as to keep unaltered all the angles in it. It is not necessary to make mention of the motion of a body, although that is the easiest way of expressing and of conceiving this postulate; but we may, if we like, express it entirely in terms which belong to space, and that we should do in this way. Suppose a figure to have been constructed in some portion of space; say that a triangle has been drawn whose sides are the shortest distances between its angular points. Then if in any other portion of space two points are taken whose shortest distance is equal to a side of the triangle, and at one of them an angle is made equal to

one of the angles adjacent to that side, and a line of shortest distance drawn equal to the corresponding side of the original triangle, the distance from the extremity of this to the other of the two points will be equal to the third side of the original triangle, and the two will be equal in all respects; or generally, if a figure has been constructed anywhere, another figure, with all its lines and all its angles equal to the corresponding lines and angles of the first, can be constructed anywhere else. Now this is exactly what is meant by the principle of superposition employed by Euclid to prove the proposition that I have just mentioned. And we may state it again in this short form—All parts of space are exactly alike.

But this postulate carries with it a most important consequence. It enables us to make a pair of most fundamental definitions—those of the plane and of the straight line. In order to explain how these come out of it when it is granted, and how they cannot be made when it is not granted, I must here say something more about the nature of the postulate itself, which might otherwise have been left until we come to criticise it.

We have stated the postulate as referring to solid space. But a similar property may exist in surfaces. Here, for instance, is part of the surface of a sphere. If I draw any figure I like upon this, I can suppose it to be moved about in any way upon the sphere, without alteration of its size or shape. If a figure has been drawn on any part of the surface of a sphere, a figure equal to it in all respects may be drawn on any other part of the surface. Now I say that this property belongs to the surface itself, is a part of its own internal economy, and does not depend in any way upon its relation to space of three dimensions. For I can pull it about and bend it in all manner of ways, so as altogether to alter its relation to solid space; and yet, if I do not stretch it or tear it, I make no difference whatever in the length of any lines upon it, or in the size of any angles upon it.[1] I do not in

[1] This figure was made of linen, starched upon a spherical surface, and taken off when dry. That mentioned in the next paragraph was similarly stretched upon the irregular surface of the head of a bust. For durability these models should be made of two thicknesses of linen starched together in such a way that the fibres of one bisect the angles between the fibres of the

any way alter the figures drawn upon it, or the possibility of drawing figures upon it, *so far as their relations with the surface itself are concerned.* This property of the surface, then, could be ascertained by people who lived entirely in it, and were absolutely ignorant of a third dimension. As a point-aggregate of two dimensions, it has in itself properties determining the distance-relations of the points upon it, which are absolutely independent of the existence of any points which are not upon it.

Now here is a surface which has not that property. You observe that it is not of the same shape all over, and that some parts of it are more curved than other parts. If you drew a figure upon this surface, and then tried to move it about, you would find that it was impossible to do so without altering the size and shape of the figure. Some parts of it would have to expand, some to contract, the lengths of the lines could not all be kept the same, the angles would not hit off together. And this property of the surface—that its parts are different from one another—is a property of the surface itself, a part of its internal economy, absolutely independent of any relations it may have with space outside of it. For, as with the other one, I can pull it about in all sorts of ways, and, so long as I do not stretch it or tear it, I make no alteration in the length of lines drawn upon it or in the size of the angles.

Here, then, is an intrinsic difference between these two surfaces, as surfaces. They are both point-aggregates of two dimensions; but the points in them have certain relations of distance (distance measured always *on* the surface), and these relations of distance are not the same in one case as they are in the other.

The supposed people living in the surface and having no idea of a third dimension might, without suspecting that third dimension at all, make a very accurate determination of the nature of their *locus in quo.* If the people who lived on the surface of the sphere were to measure the angles of a triangle, they would find them to exceed two right angles by a quantity proportional to the area of the triangle. This excess of the

other, and the edge should be bound by a thin slip of paper. They will then retain their curvature unaltered for a long time.

angles above two right angles, being divided by the area of the triangle, would be found to give exactly the same quotient at all parts of the sphere. That quotient is called the curvature of the surface; and we say that a sphere is a surface of uniform curvature. But if the people living on this irregular surface were to do the same thing, they would not find quite the same result. The sum of the angles would, indeed, differ from two right angles, but sometimes in excess and sometimes in defect, according to the part of the surface where they were. And though for small triangles in any one neighbourhood the excess or defect would be nearly proportional to the area of the triangle, yet the quotient obtained by dividing this excess or defect by the area of the triangle would vary from one part of the surface to another. In other words, the curvature of this surface varies from point to point; it is sometimes positive, sometimes negative, sometimes nothing at all.

But now comes the important difference. When I speak of a triangle, what do I suppose the sides of that triangle to be?

If I take two points near enough together upon a surface, and stretch a string between them, that string will take up a certain definite position upon the surface, marking the line of shortest distance from one point to the other. Such a line is called a geodesic line. It is a line determined by the intrinsic properties of the surface, and not by its relations with external space. The line would still be the shortest line, however the surface were pulled about without stretching or tearing. A geodesic line may be *produced*, when a piece of it is given; for we may take one of the points, and, keeping the string stretched, make it go round in a sort of circle until the other end has turned through two right angles. The new position will then be a prolongation of the same geodesic line.

In speaking of a triangle, then, I meant a triangle whose sides are geodesic lines. But in the case of a spherical surface—or, more generally, of a surface of constant curvature—these geodesic lines have another and most important property. They are *straight*, so far as the surface is concerned. On this surface a figure may be moved about without altering its size or shape. It is possible, therefore, to draw a line which shall

be of the same shape all along and on both sides. That is to say, if you take a piece of the surface on one side of such a line, you may slide it all along the line and it will fit; and you may turn it round and apply it to the other side, and it will fit there also. This is Leibnitz's definition of a straight line, and, you see, it has no meaning except in the case of a surface of constant curvature, a surface all parts of which are alike.

Now let us consider the corresponding things in solid space. In this also we may have geodesic lines; namely, lines formed by stretching a string between two points. But we may also have geodesic surfaces; and they are produced in this manner. Suppose we have a point on a surface, and this surface possesses the property of elementary flatness. Then among all the directions of starting from the point, there are some which start *in the surface*, and do not make an angle with it. Let all these be prolonged into geodesics; then we may imagine one of these geodesics to travel round and coincide with all the others in turn. In so doing it will trace out a surface which is called a geodesic surface. Now in the particular case where a space of three dimensions has the property of superposition, or is all over alike, these geodesic surfaces are *planes*. That is to say, since the space is all over alike, these surfaces are also of the same shape all over and on both sides; which is Leibnitz's definition of a plane. If you take a piece of space on one side of such a plane, partly bounded by the plane, you may slide it all over the plane and it will fit; and you may turn it round and apply it to the other side, and it will fit there also. Now it is clear that this definition will have no meaning unless the third postulate be granted. So we may say that when the postulate of Superposition is true, then there are planes and straight lines; and they are defined as being of the same shape throughout and on both sides.

It is found that the whole geometry of a space of three dimensions is known when we know the curvature of three geodesic surfaces at every point. The third postulate requires that the curvature of all geodesic surfaces should be everywhere equal to the same quantity.

I pass to the fourth postulate, which I call the postulate

of Similarity. According to this postulate, any figure may be magnified or diminished in any degree without altering its shape. If any figure has been constructed in one part of space, it may be reconstructed to any scale whatever in any other part of space, so that no one of the angles shall be altered, though all the lengths of lines will of course be altered. This seems to be a sufficiently obvious induction from experience; for we have all frequently seen different sizes of the same shape; and it has the advantage of embodying the fifth and sixth of Euclid's postulates in a single principle, which bears a great resemblance in form to that of Superposition, and may be used in the same manner. It is easy to show that it involves the two postulates of Euclid: "Two straight lines cannot enclose a space," and "Lines in one plane which never meet make equal angles with every other line."

This fourth postulate is equivalent to the assumption that the constant curvature of the geodesic surfaces is zero; or the third and fourth may be put together, and we shall then say that the three curvatures of space are all of them zero at every point.

The supposition made by Lobatchewsky was, that the three first postulates were true, but not the fourth. Of the two Euclidean postulates included in this, he admitted one, viz. that two straight lines cannot enclose a space, or that two lines which once diverge go on diverging for ever. But he left out the postulate about parallels, which may be stated in this form. If through a point outside of a straight line there be drawn another, indefinitely produced both ways; and if we turn this second one round so as to make the point of intersection travel along the first line, then at the very instant that this point of intersection disappears at one end it will reappear at the other, and there is only one position in which the lines do not intersect. Lobatchewsky supposed, instead, that there was a finite angle through which the second line must be turned after the point of intersection had disappeared at one end, before it reappeared at the other. For all positions of the second line within this angle there is then no intersection. In the two limiting positions, when the lines have just done meeting at one end, and when they

are just going to meet at the other, they are called parallel; so that two lines can be drawn through a fixed point parallel to a given straight line. The angle between these two depends in a certain way upon the distance of the point from the line. The sum of the angles of a triangle is less than two right angles by a quantity proportional to the area of the triangle. The whole of this geometry is worked out in the style of Euclid, and the most interesting conclusions are arrived at; particularly in the theory of solid space, in which a surface turns up which is not plane relatively to that space, but which, for purposes of drawing figures upon it, is identical with the Euclidean plane.

It was Riemann, however, who first accomplished the task of analysing all the assumptions of geometry, and showing which of them were independent. This very disentangling and separation of them is sufficient to deprive them for the geometer of their exactness and necessity; for the process by which it is effected consists in showing the possibility of conceiving these suppositions one by one to be untrue; whereby it is clearly made out how much is supposed. But it may be worth while to state formally the case for and against them.

When it is maintained that we know these postulates to be universally true, in virtue of certain deliverances of our consciousness, it is implied that these deliverances could not exist, except upon the supposition that the postulates are true. If it can be shown, then, from experience that our consciousness would tell us exactly the same things if the postulates are not true, the ground of their validity will be taken away. But this is a very easy thing to show.

That same faculty which tells you that space is continuous tells you that this water is continuous, and that the motion perceived in a wheel of life is continuous. Now we happen to know that if we could magnify this water as much again as the best microscopes can magnify it, we should perceive its granular structure. And what happens in a wheel of life is discovered by stopping the machine. Even apart, then, from our knowledge of the way nerves act in carrying messages, it appears that we have no means of knowing anything more about an aggregate than that it is too fine-grained for us to perceive its discontinuity, if it has any.

Nor can we, in general, receive a conception as positive knowledge which is itself founded merely upon inaction. For the conception of a continuous thing is of that which looks just the same however much you magnify it. We may conceive the magnifying to go on to a certain extent without change, and then, as it were, leave it going on, without taking the trouble to doubt about the changes that may ensue.

In regard to the second postulate, we have merely to point to the example of polished surfaces. The smoothest surface that can be made is the one most completely covered with the minutest ruts and furrows. Yet geometrical constructions can be made with extreme accuracy upon such a surface, on the supposition that it is an exact plane. If, therefore, the sharp points, edges, and furrows of space are only small enough, there will be nothing to hinder our conviction of its elementary flatness. It has even been remarked by Riemann that we must not shrink from this supposition if it is found useful in explaining physical phenomena.

The first two postulates may therefore be doubted on the side of the very small. We may put the third and fourth together, and doubt them on the side of the very great. For if the property of elementary flatness exist on the average, the deviations from it being, as we have supposed, too small to be perceived, then, whatever were the true nature of space, we should have exactly the conceptions of it which we now have, if only the regions we can get at were small in comparison with the areas of curvature. If we suppose the curvature to vary in an irregular manner, the effect of it might be very considerable in a triangle formed by the nearest fixed stars; but if we suppose it approximately uniform to the limit of telescopic reach, it will be restricted to very much narrower limits. I cannot perhaps do better than conclude by describing to you as well as I can what is the nature of things on the supposition that the curvature of all space is nearly uniform and positive.

In this case the Universe, as known, becomes again a valid conception; for the extent of space is a finite number of cubic miles.[1] And this comes about in a curious way. If

[1] The assumptions here made about the *Zusammenhang* of space are the

you were to start in any direction whatever, and move in that direction in a perfect straight line according to the definition of Leibnitz; after travelling a most prodigious distance, to which the parallactic unit—200,000 times the diameter of the earth's orbit—would be only a few steps, you would arrive at—this place. Only, if you had started upwards, you would appear from below. Now, one of two things would be true. Either, when you had got half-way on your journey, you came to a place that is opposite to this, and which you must have gone through, whatever direction you started in; or else all paths you could have taken diverge entirely from each other till they meet again at this place. In the former case, every two straight lines in a plane meet in two points, in the latter they meet only in one. Upon this supposition of a positive curvature, the whole of geometry is far more complete and interesting; the principle of duality, instead of half breaking down over metric relations, applies to all propositions without exception. In fact, I do not mind confessing that I personally have often found relief from the dreary infinities of homaloidal space in the consoling hope that, after all, this other may be the true state of things.

IV.—THE UNIVERSAL STATEMENTS OF ARITHMETIC

We have now to consider a series of alleged universal statements, the truth of which nobody has ever doubted. They are statements belonging to arithmetic, to the science of quantity, to pure logic, and to a branch of the science of space which is of quite recent origin, which applies to other objects besides space, and is called the analysis of position. I shall endeavour to show that the case of these statements is entirely different from that of the statements about space which I examined in my last lecture. There were four of those statements: that the space of three dimensions which we perceive is a continuous aggregate of points, that it is flat in its smallest parts, that figures may be moved in it without

simplest ones, but even the finite extent does not follow necessarily from uniform positive curvature, as Riemann seems to have supposed.

alteration of size or shape, and that similar figures of different sizes may be constructed in it. And the conclusion which I endeavoured to establish about these statements was that, for all we know, any or all of them may be false. In regard to the statements we have now to examine, I shall not maintain a similar doctrine; I shall only maintain that, for all we know, there may be times and places where they are unmeaning and inapplicable. If I am asked what two and two make I shall not reply that it depends upon circumstances, and that they make sometimes three and sometimes five; but I shall endeavour to show that unless our experience had certain definite characters there would be no such conception as two, or three, or four, and still less such a conception as the adding together of two numbers; and that we have no warrant for the absolute universality of these definite characters of experience.

In the first place it is clear that the moment we use language at all, we may make statements which are apparently universal, but which really only assign the meaning of words. Whenever we have called a thing by two names, so that every individual of a certain class bears the name A and also the name B, then we may affirm the apparently universal proposition that every A is B. But it is really only the particular proposition that the name A has been conventionally settled to have the same meaning as the name B. I may, for example, enunciate the proposition that all depth is profundity, and all profundity is depth. This statement appears to be of universal generality; and nobody doubts that it is true. But for all that it is not a statement of some fact which is true of nature as a whole; it is only a statement about the use of certain words in the English language. In this case the meaning of the two words is co-extensive; one means exactly as much as, and no more than, the other. But if we suppose the word *crow* to mean a black bird having certain peculiarities of structure, the statement, "All crows are black," is in a similar case. For the word *black* has part of the meaning of the word *crow;* and the proposition only states this connection between the two words. Are the propositions of arithmetic, then, mere statements about the meanings of words? No; but these examples will help us to

understand them. Language is part of the apparatus of thought; it is that by which I am able to talk to myself. But it is not all of the apparatus of thought; and just as these apparently general propositions, "All crows are black," "All depth is profundity," are really statements about language, so I shall endeavour to show that the statements of arithmetic are really statements about certain other apparatus of thought.

We know that six and three are nine. Wherever we find six things, if we put three things to them there are nine things altogether. The terms are so simple and so familiar that it seems as if there were no more to be said, as if we could not examine into the nature of these statements any further.

No more there is, if we are obliged to take words as they stand, with the complex meanings which at present belong to them. But the real fact is that the meanings of *six* and *three* are already complex meanings, and are capable of being resolved into their elements. This resolution is due—I believe equally and independently—to two great living mathematicians, by whose other achievements this country has retained the scientific position which Newton won for her at a time of fierce competition when no ordinary genius could possibly have attained it. The conception of *number*, as represented by that word and also by the particular signs, three, six, and so on, has been shown to embody in itself a certain proposition, upon the repetition of which the whole science of arithmetic is based. By means of this remark of Cayley and Sylvester, we are able to assign the true nature of arithmetical propositions, and to pass from thence by an obvious analogy to those other cases that we have to consider.

What do I do to find out that a certain set of things are six in number? I count them; and all counting, like the names of numbers, belongs first to the fingers. Now this is the operation of counting; I take my fingers in a certain definite order—say I begin with the thumb of each hand, and with the right hand. Then I lay my fingers in this order upon the things to be counted; or if they are too far away, I imagine that I lay them. And I observe what finger it is that is laid upon the *last* thing, and call the things by the

name of this finger. In the present case it is the thumb of my left hand; and if we were savages that thumb would be called six. At any rate, if the order of my fingers is settled beforehand, and known to everybody, I can quite easily make the statement, "Here are six things," by holding up the thumb of my left hand.

But, if I have only gone through this process once, there is already a great assumption made. For, although the order in which I use my fingers is fixed, there is nothing at all said about the order in which the things are touched by them. It is assumed that if the things are taken in any other order and applied to my fingers, the last one so touched will be the thumb of my left hand. If this were not true, or were not assumed, the word "number" could not have its meaning. There is implied and bound up in that word the assumption that a group of things comes ultimately to the same finger in whatever order they are counted. This is the proposition of which I spoke as the foundation of the whole science of number. It is involved not only in the general term "number," but also in all the particular names of numbers; and not only in these words, but in the sign of holding up a finger to indicate how many things there are.

Let us now look in this light at the statement that six and three are nine. I have counted a group of things and come to the conclusion that there are six of them. I have already said, therefore, that they may be counted in any order whatever and will come to the same number, six. I have counted another distinct group, and come to the conclusion that there are three of them. Then I put them altogether and count them. Now, without seeing or knowing any more of the things than is implied in the previous statements, I can already count them *in a certain order* with my fingers. For I will first suppose the six to be counted; the last of them, by hypothesis, is attached in thought to the thumb of my left hand. Now I will count the other three; they are then attached, by hypothesis, to the first three fingers of my right hand. I can now go on counting the aggregate group by attaching to these three fingers the successive fingers of my left hand; for thus I shall attach the remaining three things to those fingers. I find in this way that the last of them

comes to the fourth finger of my left hand, counting the thumb as first; and I know, therefore, that if the aggregate group has any number at all, that number must be *nine.*

But this is an operation performed on my fingers; and the statement that we have founded on it must therefore be, at least in part, a statement about my counting apparatus. We may easily understand what is meant by saying that six and three are nine *on my fingers*, independently of any other things than those; this is a particular statement only. The statement we want to examine is that this is equally true of any two distinct groups whatever of six things and three things, which appears to be a universal statement. Now I say that this latter statement can be resolved into two as follows:—

1. The particular statement aforesaid: six and three are nine *on my fingers.*

2. If there is a group of things which can be attached to certain of my fingers, one to each, and another group of things which can be attached to certain other of my fingers, one to each, then the compound group can be attached to the whole set of my fingers that have been used, one to each.

Now this latter, it seems to me, is a tautology or identical proposition, depending merely upon the properties of language. The arithmetical proposition, then, is resolved or analysed in this way into two parts—a particular statement about my counting apparatus, and a particular statement about language; and it is not really general at all. But this, it is important to notice, is not the complete solution of the problem; there is a certain part of it reserved. For I only arrive at the number nine by certain definite ways of counting; I must count the six things first and then the three things after them. And I only arrive at the result that if the aggregate group of things has any number at all, that number is nine. It is not yet proved that they may be counted in any order whatever, and will always come to that number. Here, then, we are driven back to consider the nature of that fundamental assumption that the number of any finite group of distinct things is independent of the order of counting. Here is a proposition apparently still more general than any statement about the sum of two numbers. Do I or do I not know that

this is true of very large numbers? Consider, for example, the molecules of water in this glass. According to Sir William Thomson, if a drop of water were magnified to the size of the earth it would appear coarser-grained than a heap of small shot, and finer-grained than a heap of cricket-balls. We may therefore soon find that the number of molecules in this glass very far transcends our powers of conception. Do I know that if these molecules were counted in a certain order, and then counted over again in a certain other order, the results of these two countings would be the same? For the operations are absolutely impossible in anybody's lifetime. Can I know anything about the equivalence of two impossible operations, neither of which can be conceived except in a symbolic way? And if I do, how is it possible for this knowledge to come from experience?

I reply that I do know it; that such knowledge of things as there is in it has come from experience; and that, in fact, it is made up of a particular statement and a conventional use of words. These views will appear paradoxical; but the justification of them is to be found in the analysis of that fundamental assumption which lies at the basis of the idea of number.

In the first place I shall *prove* this fundamental assumption in the case of the number six—that is to say, I shall show that it is involved in suppositions which are already made before there is any question of it. The proposition we have to prove is: if a group of distinct things comes to six when counted in a certain order, it will come to six when counted in any other order. I say that the proposition is involved in the meaning of the phrase *distinct things*, and may be got out of it by help of a particular observation.

What, then, is meant by "a group of distinct things"? That they are all distinct from one another, or that any one and any other of them make two. That is, if they are attached to two of my fingers in a certain order, they can also be attached to the same two fingers in the other order. Now, for simplicity, let us take the letters in the word *spring*, and count them first as they occur in that word and then in the alphabetical order. I say that, merely on the supposition that they are distinct from one another, I can change one

order into the other while I use the same fingers to attach them to.

1	2	3	4	5	6
S	P	R	I	N	G
G	P	R	I	N	S
G	I	R	P	N	S
G	I	N	P	R	S

In the new order I want G to be first; now the letters G and S are by hypothesis distinct, they are two letters. I can therefore interchange the fingers to which they are attached without using more or fewer fingers than before. The same thing is true by hypothesis of I and P, and finally of N and R. By these steps, then, I have changed one order into the other without altering the fingers used in counting—that is, without altering the number. And each of these steps is involved in the meaning of the words *distinct things*—that is, it is made possible by the assumptions which these words involve. But now observe further: how do I know that I can make enough steps to effect the whole change required? In this way. It is given to me in the hypothesis that the things have been counted once; I can therefore go to them one by one till I come to the end. But as I go to each one I can substitute by this process the new one which is wanted in its stead in such a way that the required new order shall hold good behind me. Thus you see that all the steps are involved in the word *distinct*, by the help of an observation on two of my fingers; and that the possibility of a sufficient number of them to effect the change is involved in the hypothesis that the things have been once counted. Here I have two distinct statements: the first is that the things are distinct, and have been once counted as six; the second is that in another order they come to the same. When I examine into the meaning of these, I find that they are not statements of different facts, but different statements of the same facts. That one statement is true, or that the other statement is true,—that is a matter of experience; but that if one is true the other is true, that is a matter of language.

I have only spoken, however, of the particular number six; how am I to extend these remarks to numbers which cannot be counted, like the number of molecules in this glass of water? In the first place we all know that cultivated races do not count directly with their fingers, but with the names of them—with the words one, two, three, four. Next, this system of names has been extended indefinitely, by a process to which no end can be conceived. But the remarks that we have made about finger-counting will hold good in every case in which the actual counting can be performed. Now in those cases in which this is not true—in the case of a billion, for example—we have two statements made, neither of which can be adequately represented in thought, but which, in so far as they can be represented, are identical statements. That there are a billion grains of sand in a certain heap, provided they be counted in a certain order—this is a supposition which can only be made symbolically. But in so far as it can be made, it is the same supposition as that they also come to a billion in any other order. Any step towards the representation in thought of the one statement is the same step towards the representation in thought of the other; and I do not know any other way in which two symbolic statements can be statements of the same facts. Pure water is the same thing as *aqua pura;* and wherever there are seventy thousand million tons of pure water there are seventy thousand million tons of *aqua pura.* I know that to be true, but it is not a statement of fact: it is a statement about language, notwithstanding that the language is used to symbolise that which cannot be actually represented in thought. So when I say of these molecules of water, "If they are distinct things, the number of them counted in one order is equal to the number of them counted in any other order," I make a supposition which I cannot realise in thought. I cannot possibly call up those molecules two and two to observe their distinctness. The supposition is only represented symbolically by language; but the statement that follows it is the same supposition represented symbolically by other language; and the equivalence of the two is, after all, a statement about language and not about facts.

But you will say, I do know that these molecules are

distinct things; and so I am able to make these equivalent statements about them. I know that they have a definite number, which is the same however they are counted.

Yes, I know that they are distinct things; but only by inference, on the assumption of the uniformity of nature; and about that there is more to be said. The distinctness of things—the fact that one thing and one thing make two—this belongs to our experience. It is a fact that impressions hang together in groups which persist as groups, and in virtue of this persistence we call them things. So long as our experience consists of things, we may build out of it the conceptions of number; and the nature and connection of these conceptions are determined by the primary sensation of things as individuals. Now there can, I think, be no doubt that the experience of a hundred or a hundred and fifty million years has so modified our nervous systems that without total disruption of them we cannot cease to aggregate our perceptions into more or less persistent groups; the continuity of things has become a form of sense. If we were placed in circumstances where these aggregations of feeling were not naturally produced, where perceptible things were not continuous in their changes, we should go on perceiving chaos as made of individual things for at least some time. But the perception would be a false one, and in acting upon it we should come to grief. Meanwhile, however, the science of number would be perfectly true of our perceptions, though practically inapplicable to the world.

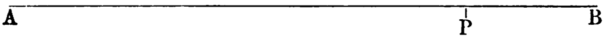
To sum up, then, we carry about with us a certain apparatus of counting, which was primarily our fingers, but is now extended into a series of signs which we can remember in a certain order—the names of numbers. Our language is so formed as to make us able to talk to ourselves about the results of counting. The propositions of arithmetic are compounded in general of two parts; a statement about the counting apparatus, and a statement about the different ways of describing its results.

But before quite leaving this let us fix our attention for a short time on the mode of use of the counting apparatus. The operation of counting a certain group of things consists in assigning one of these numeral words to each of them; in

establishing a correspondence between two groups, so that to every thing or element of the one group is assigned one particular thing or element of the other. There is here a one-to-one correspondence of two aggregates, one of which is carried about as a standard; and the propositions arrived at are always of this kind:—if a group of things can have this correspondence with the standard group, then those properties of the standard group which are carried over by the correspondence will belong to the new group. Now this establishment of correspondence between two aggregates and investigation of the properties that are carried over by the correspondence may be called the central idea of modern mathematics; it runs through the whole of the pure science and of its applications. It may be conceived, therefore, that propositions which are apparently as general and certain as those we have discussed to-day may be analysed in the same manner, and shown to be really statements about the apparatus of thought.

In my second lecture I endeavoured to explain the difference between a discrete and a continuous aggregate. In a row of marbles, which is a discrete aggregate, we can find between any two marbles only a finite number of others, and sometimes none at all. But if two points are taken on a line, the hypothesis of continuity supposes that there is no end to the number of intermediate points that we can find. Precisely the same difference holds good between *number* and *continuous quantity*. The several marbles, beginning at any one of them, may be numbered one, two, three, etc.; and the number attached to each marble will be the number of marbles from the starting-point to that marble inclusive. If the points on a line are regarded as forming a continuous aggregate, then lengths measured along the line from an arbitrary point on it are called *continuous quantities*. So also, if the instants of time are regarded as forming a continuous aggregate—that is, if we suppose that between any two instants there is no end to the number of intermediate ones that might be found—then intervals or lengths of time will be continuous quantities. And just as we may attach our numbers one by one to the marbles which form a discrete aggregate, so we may attach continuous quantities (or shortly *quantities*) one by one to the

points which form a continuous aggregate. Thus to the point P will be attached the quantity or length A P. And we



see thus that between any two quantities there may be found an infinite number of intermediate quantities, while between two numbers there can only be found a finite number of intermediate numbers, and sometimes none at all. That is to say, continuous quantities form a continuous aggregate, while numbers form a discrete aggregate. Thus the science of quantity is a totally different thing from the science of number.

Notwithstanding that this difference was clearly perceived by the ancients, attempts have constantly been made by the moderns to treat the two sciences as one, and to found the science of quantity upon the science of number. The method is to treat rational fractions as a necessary extension of numerical division, and then to deal with incommensurable quantities by way of continual approximation. In the science of number, while five-sevenths of fourteen has a meaning, namely, ten, five-sevenths of twelve is nonsense. Let us then treat it as if it were sense, and see what comes of it. A repetition of this process with every impossible operation that occurs is supposed to lead in time to continuous quantities. The results of such attempts are the substitution of algebra for the fifth book of Euclid or some equivalent doctrine of continuous ratios, and the substitution of the differential calculus for the method of fluxions. For my own part, I believe this method to be logically false and educationally mischievous. For reasons too long to give here, I do not believe that the provisional use of unmeaning arithmetical symbols can ever lead to the science of quantity; and I feel sure that the attempt to found it on such abstractions obscures its true physical nature. The science of number is founded on the hypothesis of the distinctness of things; the science of quantity is founded on the totally different hypothesis of continuity. Nevertheless, the relations between the two sciences are very close and extensive. The scale of numbers is used, as we shall see, in forming the mental apparatus

of the scale of quantities, and the fundamental conception of equality of ratios is so defined that it can be reasoned about in the terms of arithmetic.[1] The operations of addition and subtraction of quantities are closely analogous to the operations of the same name performed on numbers and follow the same laws. The composition of ratios includes numerical multiplication as a particular case, and combines in the same way with addition and subtraction. So close and far-reaching is this analogy that the processes and results of the two sciences are expressed in the same language, verbal and symbolical, while no confusion is produced by this ambiguity of meaning, except in the minds of those who try to make familiarity with language do duty for knowledge of things.

Just as in operations of counting there is a comparison of some aggregate of discrete things with a scale of numbers carried about with us as a standard, so in operations of measuring, real or ideal, there is comparison of some piece of a continuous thing with a scale of quantities. We may best understand this scale by the example of time. To indicate exactly the time elapsed from the beginning of the century to some particular instant of to-day, it is necessary and sufficient to name the date and point to the hands of a clock which was going right and was stopped at that instant. This is equivalent to saying that the whole quantity of time consists, first, of a certain number of hours, specified by comparison with the scale of numbers already constructed, and, secondly, of a certain part of an hour, which being a continuous quantity can only be adequately specified by another continuous quantity representing it on some definite scale. In the present case this is conveniently taken to be the arc of a circle described by the point of the minute-hand. On the scale in which that whole circumference represents an hour, this arc represents the portion of an hour which remains to be added. With the help of the scale of numbers, then, any assigned continuous quantity will serve as a standard by which the whole scale of quantities may be represented. And when we assert that any

[1] Defining a fraction as the ratio of two numbers, Euclid's definition of proportion is equivalent to the following :—Two quantity-ratios are equal if every fraction is either less than both, equal to both, or greater than both of them.

theorem, *e.g.* the binomial theorem, is true of all quantities whatever, whether of length, of time, of weight, or of intensity, we really assert two things: first, this theorem is true *on the standard;* secondly, relations of the measures of quantities on the standard are relations of the quantities themselves. The first is (in regard to the *kind* of quantity) a particular statement; the second is involved in the meaning of the words "quantity" and "measurement."

But the most familiar and perhaps the most natural form of the scale of quantities is that in which it is supposed to be marked off on a straight line, starting from an arbitrarily assumed point which is called the *origin.* If we make the four assumptions of Euclidean or parabolic geometry, the position of every point in space may be specified by three quantities marked off on three straight lines at right angles to each other, their common point of intersection being taken as origin, and the direction in which each of the quantities is measured being also assigned. Namely, these three quantities are the distances from the origin to the feet of perpendiculars let fall from the point to be specified on the three straight lines respectively. In all space of three dimensions the position of a point may be specified in general by a set of three quantities; but two or more points may belong to the same set of quantities, or two or more sets may specify the same point; and there may be exceptional sets specifying not one point, but all the points on a curve or surface, and exceptional points belonging to an infinite number of sets of quantities subject to some condition. There are three kinds of space of three dimensions in which this specification is *unique,* one point for one set of quantities, one set of quantities for every point, and *without any exceptional cases.* These three are the hypothetical space of Euclid, with no curvature; the space of Lobatchewsky, with constant negative curvature; and the space I described at the end of my second lecture, with constant positive curvature. In only one of these, the space of Euclid, are the three quantities specifying a point actual distances of the point from three planes. In this alone we have a simple and direct representation of the scale of quantities. Now, if we remember that the scale of quantities is a mental apparatus depending only on the first of our four

assumptions about space, we may see in this distinctive property of Euclidean space a probable origin for the curious opinion that it has some *à priori* probability or even certainty, as the true character of the universe we inhabit, over and above the observation that within the limits of experience that universe does approximately conform to its rules. It has even been maintained that if our space has curvature, it must be contained in a space of more dimensions and no curvature. I can think of no grounds for such an opinion except the property of flat spaces which I have just mentioned.

BODY AND MIND[1]

THE subject of this Lecture is one in regard to which a great change has recently taken place in the public mind. Some time ago it was the custom to look with suspicion upon all questions of a metaphysical nature as being questions that could not be discussed with any good result, and which, leading inquirers round and round in the same circle, never came to an end. But quite of late years there is an indication that a large number of people are waking up to the fact that Science has something to say upon these subjects; and the English people have always been very ready to hear what Science can say—understanding by Science what we shall now understand by it, that is, organised common sense.

When I say Science, I do not mean what some people are pleased to call Philosophy. The word "philosopher," which meant originally "lover of wisdom," has come in some strange way to mean a man who thinks it his business to explain everything in a certain number of large books. It will be found, I think, that in proportion to his colossal ignorance is the perfection and symmetry of the system which he sets up; because it is so much easier to put an empty room tidy than a full one. A man of science, on the other hand, explains as much as ever he can, and then he says, "This is all I can do; for the rest you must ask the next man." And with regard to such explanations as he has given, whether the next man comes at all, whether there is any next man or any further explanation or no (and we may have to wait hundreds or even thousands of years before another step is made),—yet if the

[1] Sunday Lecture Society, November 1, 1874; *Fortnightly Review*, December 1874.

original step was a scientific step, was made by true scientific methods, and was an organisation of the normal experience of healthy men, that step will remain good for ever, no matter how much is left unexplained by it.

Now the supposition that this subject in itself is necessarily one which cannot be discussed to good purpose, that is to say, in such a way as to lead to definite results, is a mistake. The fact that the subject has been discussed for many hundreds of years to no good purpose, and without leading to definite results, by great numbers of people, is due to the method which was employed, and not to the subject itself; and, in fact, if we like to look in the same way upon other subjects as we have been accustomed to look upon metaphysics—if we regard every man who has written about mathematics or mechanics as having just the same right to speak and to be heard that we give to every man who has written about metaphysics—then I think we shall find that exactly the same thing can be said about the most certain regions of human science.

Those who like to read the last number of the *Edinburgh Review*,[1] for example, will find, from an article on "Comets and Meteors," that it is at present quite an open question whether bodies which are shot out from the sun by eruptive force may not come to circle about the sun in orbits which are like those of the planets. Now that is not an open question; the supposition is an utterly absurd one, and has been utterly absurd from the time of Kepler. Again, those who are curious enough to read a number of pamphlets that are to be found here and there may think it is an open question whether the ratio of the circumference of a circle to its diameter may not be expressed by certain finite numbers. It is not an open question to Science; it is only open to those people who do not know any Trigonometry, and who will not learn it. In exactly the same way there are numbers of questions relating to the connection of the mind with the body which have ceased to be open questions, because Science has had her word to say about them; and they are only open now to people who do not know what that word of Science is, and who will not try to learn it.

[1] October 1874.

The whole field of human knowledge may be divided roughly, for the sake of convenience, into three great regions. There are first of all what we call *par excellence* the Physical Sciences—those which deal with inanimate matter. Next, there are those sciences which deal with organic bodies—the bodies of living things, whether plants or animals, and the rules according to which those things move. And lastly, there are those sciences which make a further supposition—which suppose that besides this physical world, including both organic and inorganic bodies, there are also certain other facts, namely, that other men besides me, and most likely other animals besides men, are *conscious*. The sciences which make that supposition are the sciences of Ethics and Politics, which are still in the practical stage, and especially the more advanced science which is now to be considered—Psychology, the Science of Mind itself; that is to say, the science of the laws which regulate the succession of feelings in any one consciousness. Each of these three great divisions began in the form of a number of perfectly disconnected subjects, between which nobody knew of any relation; but in the history of science each of them has been woven together, in consequence of connections being found between the different subjects included in it, into a complete whole; and the further progress of the history of science requires that each of these great threads, into which all the little threads have been twined, should themselves be twined together into a single string.

With regard to the first two groups,—the group of mechanical sciences as we may call them, or the physics of inorganic bodies, and the group of biological sciences, or the physics of organic bodies—the gulf between these two has in these last days been firmly bridged over. A description of that bridge, and an account of the doctrines which form it, will be found in Professor Huxley's admirable lecture delivered at Belfast before the British Association. That bridge, as we have it now, is, in the conception of it, mainly due to Descartes; but parts of it have been worked out since his time by a vast number of physiologists, with the expenditure of an enormous amount of labour and thought. Such facts as that discovered by Harvey, that the movement of the blood was a mere

question of Hydrodynamics, and was to be explained upon the same principles as the motion of water in pipes—facts like these have been piled up, one upon another, and have gradually led to the conclusion that the science of organic bodies is only a complication of the science of inorganic bodies.

It would not be advisable here to describe in detail the stones which compose this bridge; but we have to ask whether it is possible to construct some similar bridge between the now united Science of Physics, which deals with all phenomena, whether organic or inorganic, in fact with all the material world, and the other science, the Science of Consciousness, which deals with the Laws of Mind and with the subject of Ethics. This is the question which we have now to discuss.

In order to make this bridge a firm one, so that it will not break down like those which philosophers have made, it is necessary to observe with great care what is the exact difference between the two classes of facts. If we confuse the two things together to begin with, if we do not recognise the great difference between them, we shall not be likely to find any explanation which will reduce them to some common term. The first thing, therefore, that we have to do is to realise as clearly as possible how profound the gulf is between the facts which we call Physical facts and the facts which we call Mental facts. The difference is one which has been observed from primeval times, when man or his pre-human ancestor found it not good to be alone; for the very earliest precept that we find set forth in all societies to regulate the lives of those who belong to them is, "Put yourself in his place;" that is to say, ascribe to other men a consciousness which is like your own. And this belief, which the lowest savage got, that there was something else than the physical organisation in other men, is the foundation of Natural Ethics as well as of the modern Science of Consciousness. But in very early times an hypothesis was formed which was supposed to make this belief easier. If you eat too much you will dream when you are asleep; if you eat too little you will dream when you are awake, or have visions; and those dreams of savages whose food was very precarious led them to a biological hypothesis. They saw in those dreams their fellows, other

men, when it appeared from evidence furnished to them afterwards that those other men were not there when they were dreaming. Consequently they supposed that the actions of the organic body were caused by some other body which was not physical in the ordinary sense, which was not made of ordinary matter, and this other body was called the Soul. Animism, as Mr. Tylor calls this belief, was at first, then, an hypothesis in the domain of biology. It was a physical hypothesis to account for the peculiar way in which living things went about. But then when people had got this belief in another body which was not a physical body, after a long series of years they reasoned in this way. It is very difficult indeed to suppose that the ordinary matter which makes a man's body can be conscious. This Me is quite different from the flesh and blood which make up a man; but then as to this other body, or soul, we do not know anything about it, so that it may as well be conscious as not. That hypothesis put upon the soul, whose basis was in the phenomena of dreams, the explanation of the consciousness which we cannot help believing to exist in other men. I have mentioned this early hypothesis on the subject, because out of it grew the almost universal custom of holding at this time of the year the Festival of the Dead which we preserve in our All Souls' Day.

But now let us see what it is that Science can tell us and what we can believe in place of that early hypothesis of our savage ancestors. In the first place, let us consider a little more narrowly what we mean by the body, and more especially what we mean by the nervous system; for it is the great discovery of Descartes that the nervous system is that part of the body which is related directly to the mind. This can hardly be better expressed than it is by the first of that series of propositions which Professor Huxley has stated in his lecture.

I. "*The brain is the organ of sensation, thought, and emotion; that is to say, some change in the condition of the matter of this organ is the invariable antecedent of the state of consciousness to which each of these terms is applied.*" We may complete this statement by saying not only that some change in the matter of this organ is the invariable antecedent, but that some other

change is the invariable concomitant of sensation, thought, and emotion; and that is rather an important remark, as you will see presently.

Let us now look at the general structure of the brain and see what it is like. We can easily make a rough picture of it, which will serve our present purpose.[1] A parachute is a round piece of paper, like the top of a parasol, with strings going from its circumference to a cork. Let us imagine a parachute with two corks, a red and a blue one; each of these corks being attached by strings, not only to the circumference of our piece of paper, but to innumerable points in the inside of it. Moreover, let innumerable other strings go across from point to point of the paper, like a spider's web spun in the inside of a parasol. And the corks themselves must be tied to each other and to a third cork, say a white one, while from all three streamers fly away in all directions.

This is our diagram. Now the sheet of paper represents the *cerebral hemispheres*, a great sheet of gray nervous matter which forms the outside of your brain, and lies just under your skull. Our red and blue corks are two other masses of gray matter lying at the base of the brain, and called the *optic thalami* and the *corpora striata* respectively. The white cork is another mass of gray matter called the *medulla oblongata*, which is the top of the spinal cord. Our strings which tie part of the parachute together, and our streamers which go out in all directions from the corks, represent the nerves, white threads that run all over the body. And they are of two kinds: there are some which go to the brain from any part of the body, and others which come from the brain to it. As regards the position of the nerves this is the same thing for both of them, but it is not the same thing with regard to what they do. The nerves which are called Sensory nerves, and which go to the brain, are those which are excited whenever any part of the body is touched. When your finger is touched, a certain excitement is given to the nerves which end in your finger, and that excitement is carried along your arm and away up to the medulla, represented by our white cork. But when you are going to move your arm the excitement starts from the brain, and goes along the other set of

[1] [See the diagram at p. 253 below.]

nerves which are called Motor nerves, or moving nerves, and goes to the muscles which work the part of the arm which you want to move. And that excitement of the nerves by purely mechanical means makes those muscles contract so as to move the part which you want to move. We have then a connection between the brain and any part of the body which is of a double kind: there is the means of sending a message to the brain from this part of the body, and the means of taking a message from the brain to this part. The nerves which carry the message to the brain are called the "Sensory nerves," because they accompany what we call sensation; the nerves which carry the message from the brain are called "Motor nerves" because they are the agents in the motion of that part of the body.

All this is expressed in Professor Huxley's second and third propositions.

II. "*The movements of animals are due to the change of form of the muscles, which shorten and become thicker; and this change of form in a muscle arises from a motion of the substance contained within the nerves which go to the muscle.*"

III. "*The sensations of animals are due to a motion of the substance of the nerves which connect the sensory organs with the brain.*"

I pass on to his fourth proposition:—

IV. "*The motion of the matter of a sensory nerve may be transmitted through the brain to motor nerves, and thereby give rise to a contraction of the muscles to which these motor nerves are distributed; and this reflection of motion from a sensory into a motor nerve may take place without volition, or even contrary to it.*"

Let us take that organ of sense which always occurs to us as a type of the others, because it is the most perfect—the eye. The optic nerve which runs from the eye towards the brain may be represented by one of our streamers going to the red cork, to which it is fastened by a knot that is called the "Optic ganglion." Supposing that you move your hand rapidly towards anybody's eye, a message with news of this movement goes along the nerve to the optic ganglion, and it comes away back again by another streamer, not direct from the ganglion, but from a point on the blue cork very near it, to the muscles which move the eyelid, and that makes the

eye wink. You know that the winking of the eye, when anybody moves his hand very rapidly towards it, is not a thing which you determine to do, and which you consider about; it is a thing which happens without your interference with it; and in fact it is not you who wink your eye, but your body that does it. This is called Automatic or involuntary motion, or again it is called Reflex action, because it is a purely mechanical thing. A wave runs along that nerve, and comes back on another nerve, and that without any deliberation; and at the point where it stops and comes back it is just a reflection like the wave which you send along a string, and which comes back from the end of the string, or like a wave of water which is sent up against a sea-wall, and which reflects itself back along the sea.

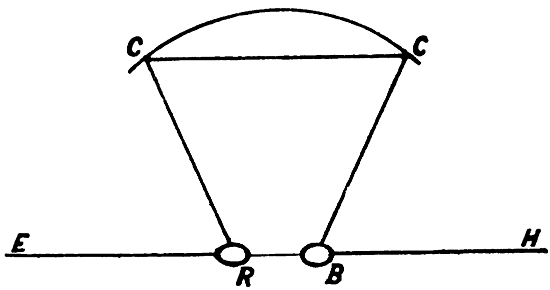
V. "*The motion of any given portion of the matter of the brain, excited by the motion of a sensory nerve, leaves behind it a readiness to be moved in the same way in that part, and anything which resuscitates the motion gives rise to the appropriate feeling. This is the physical mechanism of memory.*" We can, perhaps, make this a little more clear in the following manner:—Suppose two messages are sent at once to the brain; each of them is reflected back, but the two disturbances which they set up in the brain create, in some way or other, a link between them, so that when one of these disturbances is set up afterwards the other one is also set up. It is as if every time two bells of a house were rung together, that of itself made a string to tie them together, so that when you rang one bell it was necessary to ring the other bell in consequence. That, remember, is purely a physical circumstance of which we know that it happens. There is a physical excitation or disturbance which is sent along two different nerves, and which produces two different disturbances in the brain, and the effect of these two disturbances taking place together is to make a change in the character of the brain itself, so that when the one of them takes place it produces the other.

Now there are two different ways in which a stimulus coming to the eye can be made to move the hand. In the first place, suppose you are copying out a book; you have the book before you, and you read the book whilst you are copying with your hand, and consequently the light coming into

your eye from the book directs your hand to move in a certain way. It is possible for this light impinging upon the eye to send a message along the optic nerve into the ganglion, and that message may go almost, though not quite, direct to the hand, so as to make the hand move, and that causes the hand to describe the letter which you have seen in the book; or else the message may go by a longer route which takes more time. A simple experiment to distinguish between these processes was tried by Donders, the great Dutch physiologist. He made a sign to a man at a distance, and when he made this sign the man was to put down a key with his hand. He measured the time which was taken in this process, that is to say, the time which was taken by the message in going from the eye to the ganglion, and then to the hand. Measurements of the rate of nerve-motions have also been made by Helmholtz. The velocity varies to a certain extent in different people, but it is something like one hundred feet a second. But Donders also made another measurement. Suppose it is not decided beforehand whether the man is to move the key with his right or left hand, and this is to be determined by the nature of the signal, then before he can move his hand he has to decide which hand he will use. The time taken for that process of decision was also measured. That process of decision, when looked at from the physical side, means this. The message goes up from the eye to the ganglion. It is immediately connected there with the mass of gray matter represented by our red cork. From that mass of gray matter there go white threads away to the whole of the surface of the cerebral hemispheres, or the paper of our parachute, and they take that message, therefore, which comes from the eye to the ganglion away to all this gray matter which is put round the inside of your skull. There are also white threads which connect all the parts of this gray matter together, and they run across from every part of it to almost every other part of it. As soon as a message has been taken to this gray matter, there is a vast interchange of messages going on between those parts; but finally, as the result of that, a number of messages come upon other white threads to another piece of gray matter, which is represented by our blue cork; from that the message is then taken to the muscles of the

hand. There are then two different ways in which a message may go from the eye to the hand. It may go to the optic ganglion, and then almost straight to the hand, and in that case you do not know much about it—you only know that something has taken place, you do not think that you have done it yourself; or it may go to the optic ganglion, and be sent up to the cerebral hemispheres, and then be sent back to the sensory tract and then on to the hand. But that takes more time, and it implies that you have deliberated upon the act.

The diagram here drawn may make this point more clear. Here E is the eye, R and B are the red and blue corks, and



H is the hand. The curve C C represents the cerebral hemispheres, or the top of our parachute. If the action is so habitually associated with the signal that it takes place involuntarily, without any effort of the will, the message goes from the eye to the hand along the line E R B H. This may happen with a practised performer when it is settled beforehand which hand he is to use. But if it is necessary to deliberate about the action, to call in the exercise of the will, the message goes round the loop-line, E R C C B H; from the eye to the optic thalami, from them to the cerebrum, thence to the corpora striata, and so through the medulla to the hand.

Besides this fact which we have just explained, the fact of a message going from one part of the body to the brain and coming out in the motion of some other part of the body, there is another thing which is going on continually, and that

is this:—There is a faint reproduction of some excitement which has previously existed in the cerebral hemispheres, and which calls up, by the process which we have just now described, all those that have become associated with it; and it is continually sending down faint messages which do not actually tell the muscles to move, but which as it were begin to tell them to move. They are not always strong enough to produce actual motions, but they produce just the beginnings of those motions: and that process goes on even when there is apparently no sensation and no motion. If a man is in a brown study, with his eyes shut, although he apparently sees and feels nothing at all, there is a certain action going on inside his brain which is not sensation, but is like it, because it is the transmission to the cerebral hemispheres of faint messages which are copies of previous sensations; and it does not produce motion, but it produces something like it; it produces incipient motion, the beginnings of motion which do not actually take effect. Sometimes a train of thought may so increase in strength as to produce motion. A man may get so excited by a train of thought that he jumps up and does something in consequence. And the sensory impressions which are taken from the ganglia to the hemispheres may be so strong as to produce an illusion; he may think that he sees something, he may think that he sees a ghost, when he does not. This continuous action of the brain depends upon the presence of blood; so long as the proper amount of blood is sent to the brain it is active, and when the blood is taken away it becomes inactive. And it is a curious property of the nervous system that it can direct the supply of blood which is to be sent to a particular part of it. It is possible, by directing your attention to a particular part of your hand, to make a determination of blood to that part which shall in time become a sore place. Some people have given this explanation, which seems a very probable one, of what has happened to those saints who have meditated so long upon the crucifixion that they have got what are called stigmata, that is, marks of wounds corresponding to the wounds they were thinking about.

That, then, is the general character of the nervous system which we have to consider in connection with the mind.

There is a train of facts between stimulus and motion which may be of two kinds: it may be direct or it may be indirect, it may go round the loop-line or not; and also there is a continuous action of the brain even when these steps are not taking place in completeness. Moreover, when two actions take place simultaneously, they form a sort of link between them, so that if one of them is afterwards repeated the other gets repeated with it. That is what we have to remember chiefly as to the character of the brain.

Now let us consider the other class of facts and the connections between them—the facts of consciousness. An eminent divine once said to me that he thought there were only two kinds of consciousness—to have a feeling, and to know that you have a feeling. It seems to me that there is only one kind of consciousness, and that is to have fifty thousand feelings at once, and to know them all in different degrees. Whenever I try to analyse any particular state of consciousness in which I am, I find that it is an extremely complex one. I cannot help at this moment having a consciousness of all the different parts of this hall, and of a great sea of faces before me; and I cannot help having the consciousness, at the same time, of all the suggestions that that picture makes, that each face represents a person sitting there and listening or not, as the case may be. And I cannot help combining with them at the same moment a number of actions which they suggest to me, and in particular the action of going on speaking. There are a great number of elements of complexity which I cannot describe, because I am so faintly conscious of them that I cannot remember them. Any state of our consciousness, then, as we are at present constituted, is an exceedingly complex thing; but it certainly possesses this property, that if two feelings have occurred together, and one of them afterwards occurs again, it is very likely that the other will be called up by it. That is to say, two states of consciousness which have taken place at the same moment produce a link between them, so that a repetition of the one calls up a repetition of the other.

Again I find a certain train of facts between my sensations and my exertions. When I see a thing, I may go through a long process of deliberation as to what I shall do with it, and

then afterwards I may do that which I have deliberated and decided upon. But, on the other hand, I may, by seeing a thing, be quite suddenly forced into doing something without any chance of deliberation at all. If I suddenly see a cab coming upon me from the corner of a street where I did not at all expect it, I jump out of the way without thinking that it is a very desirable thing to get out of the way of the cab. But if I see a cab a little while before, and have more time to think about it, then it occurs to me that it will be unpleasant and undesirable to be run over by that cab, and that I can avoid it by walking out of the way. You here see that there are in the case of the mind two distinct trains of facts between sensation and exertion. There is an involuntary train of facts when the exertion follows the sensation without asking my leave, and there is a voluntary train in which it does ask my leave.

Then, again, there is this fact: that even when there is no actual sensation and no actual exertion, there may still be a long train of facts and sensations which hang together; there may be faint reproductions of sensation which are not so vivid as are the sensations themselves, but which form a series of pictures of sensations which pass continually before my mind; and there will be faint beginnings of action. Now the sense in which those are faint beginnings of action is very instructive. Any beginning of an action is what we call a judgment. When you see a thing, you in the first instance form no judgment about it at all—you are not prepared to assert any proposition—you merely have the feeling of a certain sight or sound presented to you; but after a very short space of time, so short that you cannot perceive it, you begin to frame propositions. If you consider what a proposition means, you will see it must correspond to the beginning of some sort of exertion. When you say that A is B, you mean that you are going to act as if A were B. If I see water with a particularly dull surface, and with stones resting upon the surface of it, then, first of all, I have merely an impression of a certain sheet of colour, and of certain objects which interrupt the colour of that sheet. But the second thing that I do is to come to the conclusion that the water is frozen, and that therefore I may walk upon it. The

assertion that the water is frozen implies a bundle of resolves; which means, given certain other conditions, I shall go and walk upon it. So, then, an act of judgment or an assertion of any kind implies a certain incipient action of the muscles, not actually carried out at that time and place, but preparing a certain condition of the mind such as afterwards, when the occasion comes, will guide the action that we shall take up.

Now, then, what is it that we mean by the *character* of a person? You judge of a person's character by what he thinks and does under certain circumstances. Let us see what determines this. We can only be speaking here of voluntary actions—those actions in which the person is consulted, and which are not done by his body without his leave. In those voluntary actions what takes place is that a certain sensation is communicated to the mind, the sensation is manipulated by the mind, and conclusions are drawn from it, and then a message is sent out which causes certain motions to take place. The character of the person is evidently determined by the nature of this manipulation. If the sensation suggests a wrong thing, the character of the person will be bad; if the sensation suggests in the great majority of cases a right thing, you will say that the character of the person is good. So, then, it is the character of the mind which determines what it will do with a given sensation, and what act will follow from it,—which determines what we call the personality of any person; and that character is persistent in the main, although it is continually changing a little. The vast mass of it is a thing which lasts through the whole of every individual's life, although everything which happens to him makes some small change in it, and that constitutes the education of the man.

Then the question arises, Is there anything else in your consciousness of a different nature from what we have here described? That is a question which every man has to decide by examining his own consciousness. I do not find anything else in mine. If you find anything else in yours, it is extremely important that you should analyse it and find out all that you possibly can about it, and state it in the clearest form to other people; because it is one of the most important problems of philosophy to account for the whole of

consciousness out of individual feelings. It seems to me that the account of which I have only given a very rough sketch, which was begun by Locke and Hume, and has been carried out by their successors, chiefly in this country, is in its great general features complete, and leaves nothing but more detailed explanations to be desired. It seems to me that I find nothing in myself which is not accounted for when I describe myself as a stream of feelings such that each of them is capable of a faint repetition, and that when two of them have occurred together the repetition of the one calls up the other, and that there are rules according to which the resuscitated feeling calls up its fellows. These are, in the main, fixed rules which determine and are determined by my character; but my character is gradually changing in consequence of the education of life. It seems to me that this is a complete account of all the kinds of facts which I can find in myself; and, as I said before, if anybody finds any other kinds of facts in himself, it is an exceedingly important thing that he should describe them as clearly as he possibly can.

We have described two classes of facts; let us now notice the parallelism between them. First, we have these two parallel facts, that two actions of the brain which occur together form a link between themselves, so that the one being called up the other is called up; and two states of consciousness which occur together form a link between them, so that when one is called up the other is called up. But also we find a train of facts between the physical fact of the stimulus of light going into the eye and the physical fact of the motion of the muscles. Corresponding to a part of that train, we have found a train of facts between sensation, the mental fact which corresponds to a message arriving from the eye, and exertion, the mental fact which corresponds to the motion of the hand by a message going out along the nerves. And we have found a correspondence between the continuous action of the brain and the continuous existence of consciousness apparently independent of sensation and exertion.

But let us look at this correspondence a little more closely; we shall find that there are one or two things which can be established with practical certainty. In the first place, it is

not the whole of the physical train of facts which corresponds to the mental train of facts. The beginning of the physical train consists of light going into the eye and exciting the retina, and then of that wave of excitation being carried along the optic nerve to the ganglion. For all we know, and it is a very probable thing, the mental fact begins here, at the ganglion. There is no sensation till the message has got to the optic ganglion, for this reason, that if you press the optic nerve behind the eye you can produce the sensation of light. It is like tapping a telegraph, and sending a message which has not come from the station from which it ought to have come; nobody at the other end can tell whether it has come from that station or not. The optic ganglion cannot tell whether this message which comes along the nerve has come from the eye or is the result of a tapping of the telegraph, whether it is produced by light or by pressure upon the nerve. It is a fact of immense importance that all these nerves are exactly of the same kind. The only thing which the nerve does is to transmit a message which has been given to it; it does not transmit a message in any other way than the telegraph wire transmits a message—that is to say, it is excited at certain intervals, and the succession of these intervals determines what this message is, not the nature of the excitation which passes along the wire. So that if we watched the nerve excited by pressure the message going along to the ganglion would be exactly the same as if it were the actual sight of the eye. We may draw from this the conclusion that the mental fact does not begin anywhere before the optic ganglion. Again, a man who has had one of his legs cut off can try to move his toes, which he feels as if they were still there; and that shows that the consciousness of the motor impulse which is sent out along the nerve does not go to the end to see whether it is obeyed or not. The only way in which we know whether our orders, given to any parts of our body, are obeyed, is by having a message sent back to say that they are obeyed. If I tell my hand to press against this black-board the only way in which I know that it does press is by having a message sent back by my skin to say that it is pressed. But supposing there is no skin there, I can have the exertion that precedes the action

without actually performing it, because I can send out a message, and consciousness stops with the sending of the message, and does not know anything further. So that the mental fact is somewhere or other in the region R C C B of the diagram, and does not include the two ends. That is to say, it is not the whole of the bodily fact that the mental fact corresponds to, but only an intermediate part of it. If it just passes through the points R B, without going round the loop from C to C, then we merely have the sensation that something has taken place—we have had no voice in the nature of it and no choice about it. If it has gone round from C to C, we have a much larger fact—we have that fact which we call choice, or the exercise of volition. We may conclude, then—I am not able in so short a space as I have to give you the whole evidence which goes to an assertion of this kind; but there is evidence which is sufficient to satisfy any competent scientific man of this day—that every fact of consciousness is parallel to some disturbance of nerve matter, although there are some nervous disturbances which have no parallel in consciousness, properly so called; that is to say, disturbances of my nerves may exist which have no parallel in my consciousness.

We have now observed two classes of facts and the parallelism between them. Let us next observe what an enormous gulf there is between these two classes of facts.

The state of a man's brain and the actions which go along with it are things which every other man can perceive, observe, measure, and tabulate; but the state of a man's own consciousness is known to him only, and not to any other person. Things which appear to us and which we can observe are called *objects* or *phenomena.* Facts in a man's consciousness are not objects or phenomena to any other man; they are capable of being observed only by him. We have no possible ground, therefore, for speaking of another man's consciousness as in any sense a part of the physical world of objects or phenomena. It is a thing entirely separate from it; and all the evidence that we have goes to show that the physical world gets along entirely by itself, according to practically universal rules. That is to say, the laws which hold good in the physical world hold good everywhere in it—they hold

good with practical universality, and there is no reason to suppose anything else but those laws in order to account for any physical fact; there is no reason to suppose anything but the universal laws of mechanics in order to account for the motion of organic bodies. The train of physical facts between the stimulus sent into the eye, or to any one of our senses, and the exertion which follows it, and the train of physical facts which goes on in the brain, even when there is no stimulus and no exertion,—these are perfectly complete physical trains, and every step is fully accounted for by mechanical conditions. In order to show what is meant by that, I will endeavour to explain another supposition which might be made. When a stimulus comes into the eye there is a certain amount of energy transferred from the ether, which fills space, to this nerve; and this energy travels along into the ganglion, and sets the ganglion into a state of disturbance which may use up some energy previously stored in it. The amount of energy is the same as before by the law of the conservation of energy. That energy is spread over a number of threads which go out to the brain, and it comes back again and is reflected from there. It may be supposed that a very small portion of energy is created in that process, and that while the stimulus is going round this loop-line it gets a little push somewhere, and then, when it comes back to the ganglia, it goes away to the muscle and sets loose a store of energy in the muscle so that it moves the limb. Now the question is, Is there any creation of energy anywhere? Is there any part of the physical progress which cannot be included within ordinary physical laws? It has been supposed, I say, by some people, as it seems to me merely by a confusion of ideas, that there is, at some part or other of this process, a creation of energy; but there is no reason whatever why we should suppose this. The difficulty in proving a negative in these cases is similar to that in proving a negative about anything which exists on the other side of the moon. It is quite true that I am not absolutely certain that the law of the conservation of energy is exactly true; but there is no more reason why I should suppose a particular exception to occur in the brain than anywhere else. I might just as well assert that whenever anything passes over the Line, when it

goes from the north side of the Equator to the south, there is a certain creation of energy, as that there is a creation of energy in the brain. If I chose to say that the amount was so small that none of our present measurements could appreciate it, it would be difficult or indeed impossible for anybody to disprove that assertion; but I should have no reason whatever for making it. There being, then, an absence of positive evidence that the conditions are exceptional, the reasons which lead us to assert that there is no loss of energy in organic any more than in inorganic bodies are absolutely overwhelming. There is no more reason to assert that there is a creation of energy in any part of an organic body, because we are not absolutely sure of the exact nature of the law, than there is reason, because we do not know what there is on the other side of the moon, to assert that there is a sky-blue peacock there with forty-five eyes in his tail.

Therefore it is not a right thing to say, for example, that the mind is a force, because if the mind were a force we should be able to perceive it. I should be able to perceive your mind and to measure it, but I cannot; I have absolutely no means of perceiving your mind. I judge by analogy that it exists, and the instinct which leads me to come to that conclusion is the social instinct, as it has been formed in me by generations during which men have lived together; and they could not have lived together unless they had gone upon that supposition. But I may very well say that among the physical facts which go along at the same time with mental facts there are forces at work. That is perfectly true, but the two things are on two utterly different platforms—the physical facts go along by themselves, and the mental facts go along by themselves. There is a parallelism between them, but there is no interference of one with the other. Again, if anybody says that the will influences matter, the statement is not untrue, but it is nonsense. The will is not a material thing, it is not a mode of material motion. Such an assertion belongs to the crude materialism of the savage. The only thing which influences matter is the position of surrounding matter or the motion of surrounding matter. It may be conceived that at the same time with every exercise

of volition there is a disturbance of the physical laws; but this disturbance, being perceptible to me, would be a physical fact accompanying the volition, and could not be the volition itself, which is not perceptible to me. Whether there is such a disturbance of the physical laws or no is a question of fact to which we have the best of reasons for giving a negative answer; but the assertion that another man's volition, a feeling in his consciousness which I cannot perceive, is part of the train of physical facts which I may perceive,—this is neither true nor untrue, but nonsense; it is a combination of words whose corresponding ideas will not go together.

Thus we are to regard the body as a physical machine, which goes by itself according to a physical law, that is to say, is automatic. An automaton is a thing which goes by itself when it is wound up, and we go by ourselves when we have had food. Excepting the fact that other men are conscious, there is no reason why we should not regard the human body as merely an exceedingly complicated machine which is wound up by putting food into the mouth. But it is not *merely* a machine, because consciousness goes with it. The mind, then, is to be regarded as a stream of feelings which runs parallel to, and simultaneous with, a certain part of the action of the body, that is to say, that particular part of the action of the brain in which the cerebrum and the sensory tract are excited.

Then, you say, if we are automata what becomes of the freedom of the will? The freedom of the will, according to Kant, is that property which enables us to originate events independently of foreign determining causes; which, it seems to me, amounts to saying precisely that we are automata, that is, that we go by ourselves, and do not want anybody to push or pull us. The distinction between an automaton and a puppet is that the one goes by itself when it is wound up and the other requires to be pushed or pulled by wires or strings. We do not want any stimulus from without, but we go by ourselves when we have had our food, and therefore so far as that distinction goes we are automata. But we are more than automata, because we are conscious; mental facts go along with the bodily facts. That does not hinder us from describing the bodily facts by themselves, and if we re-

strict our attention to them we must describe ourselves as automata.

The objection which many people feel to this doctrine is derived, I think, from the conception of such automata as are made by man. In that case there is somebody outside the automaton who has constructed it in a certain definite way, with definite intentions, and has meant it to go in that way; and the whole action of the automaton is determined by that person outside. If we consider, for example, a machine such as Frankenstein made, and imagine ourselves to have been put together as that fearful machine was put together by a German student, the conception naturally strikes us with horror; but if we consider the actual fact, we shall see that our own case is not an analogous one. For, as a matter of fact, we were not made by any Frankenstein, but we made ourselves. I do not mean that every individual has made the whole of his own character, but that the human race as a whole has made itself during the process of ages. The action of the whole race at any given time determines what the character of the race shall be in the future. From the continual storing up of the effects of such actions, graven into the character of the race, there arises in process of time that exact human constitution which we now have. By the process of natural selection all the actions of our ancestors are built into us and form our character, and in that sense it may be said that the human race has made itself. In that sense also we are individually responsible for what the human race will be in the future, because every one of our actions goes to determine what the character of the race shall be to-morrow. If, on the contrary, we suppose that in the action of the brain there is some point where physical causes do not apply, and where there is a discontinuity, then it will follow that some of our actions are not dependent upon our character. Provided the action which goes on in my brain is a continuous one, subject to physical rules, then it will depend upon what the character of my brain is; or if I look at it from the mental side, it will depend upon what my mental character is; but if there is a certain point where the law of causation does not apply, where my action does not follow by regular physical causes from what I am, then I am not responsible for

it, because it is not I that do it. So you see the notion that we are not automata destroys responsibility; because, if my actions are not determined by my character in accordance with the particular circumstances which occur, then I am not responsible for them, and it is not I that do them.

Moreover, if we once admit that physical causes are not continuous, but that there is some break, then we leave the way open for the doctrine of a destiny or a Providence outside of us, overruling human efforts and guiding history to a foregone conclusion. Now of course it is the business of the seeker after truth to find out whether a proposition is true or no, and not what are the moral consequences which may be expected to follow from it. But I do think that if it is right to call any doctrine immoral, it is right so to call this doctrine, when we remember how often it has paralysed the efforts of those who were climbing honestly up the hillside towards the light and the right, and how often it has nerved the sacrilegious arm of the fanatic or the adventurer who was conspiring against society.

I want now, very briefly indeed, to consider to what extent these doctrines furnish a bridge between the two classes of facts. I have said that the series of mental facts corresponds to only a portion of the action of the organism. But we have to consider not only ourselves, but also those animals which are next below us in the scale of organisation, and we cannot help ascribing to them a consciousness which is analogous to our own. We find, when we attempt to enter into that, and to judge by their actions what sort of consciousness they possess, that it differs from our own in precisely the same way that their brains differ from our brains. There is less of the co-ordination which is implied by a message going round the loop-line. A much larger number of the messages which go in at a cat's eyes and come out at her paws go straight through without any loop-line at all than do so in the case of a man; but still there is a little loop-line left. And the lower we go down in the scale of organisation the less of this loop-line there is; yet we cannot suppose that so enormous a jump from one creature to another should have occurred at any point in the process of evolution as the introduction of a fact entirely different and absolutely separate

from the physical fact. It is impossible for anybody to point out the particular place in the line of descent where that event can be supposed to have taken place. The only thing that we can come to, if we accept the doctrine of evolution at all, is that even in the very lowest organisms, even in the Amœba which swims about in our own blood, there is something or other, inconceivably simple to us, which is of the same nature with our own consciousness, although not of the same complexity—that is to say (for we cannot stop at organic matter, knowing as we do that it must have arisen by continuous physical processes out of inorganic matter), we are obliged to assume, in order to save continuity in our belief, that along with every motion of matter, whether organic or inorganic, there is some fact which corresponds to the mental fact in ourselves. The mental fact in ourselves is an exceedingly complex thing; so also our brain is an exceedingly complex thing. We may assume that the quasi-mental fact which corresponds and which goes along with the motion of every particle of matter is of such inconceivable simplicity, as compared with our own mental fact, with our consciousness, as the motion of a molecule of matter is of inconceivable simplicity when compared with the motion in our brain.

This doctrine is not merely a speculation, but is a result to which all the greatest minds that have studied this question in the right way have gradually been approximating for a long time.

Again, let us consider what takes place when we perceive anything by means of our eye. A certain picture is produced upon the retina of the eye, which is like the picture on the ground-glass plate in a photographic camera; but it is not there that the consciousness begins, as I have shown before. When I see anything there is a picture produced on the retina, but I am not conscious of it there; and in order that I may be conscious the message must be taken from each point of this picture along the special nerve-fibre to the ganglion. These innumerable fine nerves which come away from the retina go each of them to a particular point of the ganglion, and the result is that, corresponding to that picture at the back of the retina, there is a disturbance of a great number of centres of gray matter in the ganglion. If certain

parts of the retina of my eye, having light thrown upon them, are disturbed so as to produce the figure of a square, then certain little pieces of gray matter in this ganglion, which are distributed we do not know how, will also be disturbed, and the impression corresponding to that is a square. Consciousness belongs to this disturbance of the ganglion, and not to the picture in the eye; and therefore it is something quite different from the thing which is perceived. But at the same time, if we consider another man looking at something, we shall say that the fact is this—there is something outside of him which is matter in motion, and that which corresponds inside of him is also matter in motion. The external motion of matter produces in the optic ganglion something which corresponds to it, but is not like it. Although for every point in the object there is a point of disturbance in the optic ganglion, and for every connection between two points in the object there is a connection between two disturbances, yet they are not like one another. Nevertheless they are made of the same stuff; the object outside and the optic ganglion are both matter, and that matter is made of molecules moving about in ether. When I consider the impression which is produced upon my mind of any fact, that is just a part of my mind; the impression is a part of me. The hall which I see now is just an impression produced on my mind by something outside of it, and that impression is a part of me.

We may conclude from this theory of sensation, which is established by the discoveries of Helmholtz, that the feeling which I have in my mind—the picture of this hall—is something corresponding, point for point, to the actual reality outside. Though every small part of the reality which is outside corresponds to a small part of my picture, though every connection between two parts of that reality outside corresponds to a connection between two parts of my picture, yet the two things are not alike. They correspond to one another, just as a map may be said in a certain sense to correspond with the country of which it is a map, or as a written sentence may be said to correspond to a spoken sentence. But then I may conclude from what I said before that, although the two corresponding things are not alike, yet they are made of the same stuff. Now what is my picture made

of? My picture is made of exceedingly simple mental facts, so simple that I only feel them in groups. My picture is made up of these elements; and I am therefore to conclude that the real thing which is outside me, and which corresponds to my picture, is made up of similar things; that is to say, the reality which underlies matter, the reality which we perceive as matter, is that same stuff which, being compounded together in a particular way, produces mind. What I perceive as your brain is really in itself your consciousness, is You; but then that which I call your brain, the material fact, is merely my perception. Suppose we put a certain man in the middle of the hall, and we all looked at him. We should all have perceptions of his brain; those would be facts in our consciousness, but they would be all different facts. My perception would be different from the picture produced upon you, and it would be another picture, although it might be very like it. So that corresponding to all those pictures which are produced in our minds from an external object there is a reality which is not like the pictures, but which corresponds to them point for point, and which is made of the same stuff that the pictures are. The actual reality which underlies what we call matter is not the same thing as the mind, is not the same thing as our perception, but it is made of the same stuff. To use the words of the old disputants, we may say that matter is not of the *same* substance as mind, not *homoousion*, but it is of *like* substance, it is made of similar stuff differently compacted together, *homoiousion*.

With the exception of just this last bridge connecting the two great regions of inquiry that we have been discussing, the whole of what I have said is a body of doctrine which is accepted now, as far as I know, by all competent people who have considered the subject. There are, of course, individual exceptions with regard to particular points, such as that I have mentioned about the possible creation of energy in the brain; but these are few, and they occur mainly, I think, among those who are so exceedingly well acquainted with one side of the subject that they regard the whole of it from the point of view of that side, and do not sufficiently weigh what may come from the other side. With such exceptions

as those, and with the exception of the last speculation of all, the doctrine which I have expounded to you is the doctrine of Science at the present day.

These results may now be applied to the consideration of certain questions which have always been of great interest. The application which I shall make is a purely tentative one, and must be regarded as merely indicating that such an application becomes more possible every day. The first of these questions is that of the possible existence of consciousness apart from a nervous system, of mind without body. Let us first of all consider the effect upon this question of the doctrines which are admitted by all competent scientific men. All the consciousness that we know of is associated with a brain in a certain definite manner, namely, it is built up out of elements in the same way as part of the action of the brain is built up out of elements; an element of one corresponds to an element in the other; and the mode of connection, the shape of the building, is the same in the two cases. The mere fact that all the consciousness we know of is associated with certain complex forms of matter need only make us exceedingly cautious not to imagine any consciousness apart from matter without very good reason indeed; just as the fact of all swans having turned out white up to a certain time made us quite rightly careful about accepting stories that involved black swans. But the fact that mind and brain are associated in a definite way, and in that particular way that I have mentioned, affords a very strong presumption that we have here something which can be *explained;* that it is possible to find a reason for this exact correspondence. If such a reason can be found, the case is entirely altered; instead of a provisional probability which may rightly make us cautious, we should have the highest assurance that Science can give, a practical certainty on which we are bound to act, that there is no mind without a brain. Whatever, therefore, is the probability that an explanation exists of the connection of mind with brain in action, such is also the probability that each of them involves the other.

If, however, that particular explanation which I have ventured to offer should turn out to be the true one, the case becomes even stronger. If mind is the reality or substance

of that which appears to us as brain-action, the supposition of mind without brain is the supposition of an organised material substance not affecting other substances (for if it did it might be perceived), and therefore not affected by them; in other words, it is the supposition of immaterial matter, a contradiction in terms to the fundamental assumption of the uniformity of nature, without practically believing in which we should none of us have been here to-day. But if mind without brain is a contradiction, is it not still possible that an organisation like the brain can exist without being perceived, without our being able to hold it fast, and weigh it, and cut it up? Now this is a physical question, and we know quite enough about the physical world to say, "Certainly not." It is made of atoms and ether, and there is no room in it for ghosts.

The other question which may be asked is this: Can we regard the universe, or that part of it which immediately surrounds us, as a vast brain, and therefore the reality which underlies it as a conscious mind? This question has been considered by the great naturalist Du Bois Reymond, and has received from him that negative answer which I think we also must give. For we found that the particular organisation of the brain which enables its action to run parallel with consciousness amounts to this—that disturbances run along definite channels, and that two disturbances which occur together establish links between the channels along which they run, so that they naturally occur together again. It will, I think, be clear to every one that these are not characteristics of the great interplanetary spaces. Is it not possible, however, that the stars we can see are just atoms in some vast organism, bearing some such relation to it as the atoms which make up our brains bear to us? I am sure I do not know. But it seems clear that the knowledge of such an organism could not extend to events taking place on the earth, and that its volition could not be concerned in them. And if some vast brain existed far away in space, being invisible because not self-luminous, then, according to the laws of matter at present known to us, it could affect the solar system only by its weight.

On the whole, therefore, we seem entitled to conclude that during such time as we can have evidence of, no intelligence

or volition has been concerned in events happening within the range of the Solar system, except that of animals living on the planets. The weight of such probabilities is, of course, estimated differently by different people, and the questions are only just beginning to receive the right sort of attention. But it does seem to me that we may expect in time to have negative evidence on this point of the same kind and of the same cogency as that which forbids us to assume the existence between the Earth and Venus of a planet as large as either of them.

Now, about these conclusions which I have described as probable ones, there are two things that may be said. In the first place, it may be said that they make the world a blank, because they take away the objects of very important and widespread emotions of hope and reverence and love, which are human faculties and require to be exercised, and that they destroy the motives for good conduct. To this it may be answered that we have no right to call the world a blank while it is full of men and women, even though our one friend may be lost to us. And in the regular everyday facts of this common life of men, and in the promise which it holds out for the future, there is room enough and to spare for all the high and noble emotions of which our nature is capable. Moreover, healthy emotions are felt about facts and not about phantoms; and the question is not "What conclusion will be most pleasing or elevating to my feelings?" but "What is the truth?" For it is not all human faculties that have to be exercised, but only the good ones. It is not right to exercise the faculty of feeling terror or of resisting evidence. And if there are any faculties which prevent us from accepting the truth and guiding our conduct by it, these faculties ought not to be exercised. As for the assertion that these conclusions destroy the motive for good conduct, it seems to me that it is not only utterly untrue, but, because of its great influence upon human action, one of the most dangerous doctrines that can be set forth. The two questions which we have last discussed are exceedingly difficult and complex questions; the ideas and the knowledge which we used in their discussion are the product of long centuries of laborious investigation and thought; and perhaps, although we all make our little

guesses, there is not one man in a million who has any right to a definite opinion about them. But it is not necessary to answer these questions in order to tell an honest man from a rogue. The distinction of right and wrong grows up in the broad light of day out of natural causes wherever men live together; and the only right motive to right action is to be found in the social instincts which have been bred into mankind by hundreds of generations of social life. In the target of every true Englishman's allegiance the bull's-eye belongs to his countrymen, who are visible and palpable and who stand around him; not to any far-off shadowy centre beyond the hills, *ultra montes*, either at Rome or in heaven. Duty to one's countrymen and fellow-citizens, which is the social instinct guided by reason, is in all healthy communities the one thing sacred and supreme. If the course of things is guided by some unseen intelligent person, then this instinct is his highest and clearest voice, and because of it we may call him good. But if the course of things is not so guided, that voice loses nothing of its sacredness, nothing of its clearness, nothing of its obligation.

In the second place it may be said that Science ought not to deal with these questions at all; that while scientific men are concerned with physical facts, they are *dans leur droit*, but that in treating of such subjects as these they are going out of their domain, and must do harm.

What is the domain of Science? It is all possible human knowledge which can rightly be used to guide human conduct.

In many parts of Europe it is customary to leave a part of the field untilled for the Brownie to live in, because he cannot live in cultivated ground. And if you grant him this grace, he will do a great deal of your household work for you in the night while you sleep. In Scotland the piece of ground which is left wild for him to live in is called "the good man's croft." Now there are people who indulge a hope that the ploughshare of Science will leave a sort of good man's croft around the field of reasoned truth; and they promise that in that case a good deal of our civilising work shall be done for us in the dark, by means we know nothing of. I do not share this hope; and I feel very sure that it will not be realised: I think that we should do our work with our own

hands in a healthy straightforward way. It is idle to set bounds to the purifying and organising work of Science. Without mercy and without resentment she ploughs up weed and briar; from her footsteps behind her grow up corn and healing flowers; and no corner is far enough to escape her furrow. Provided only that we take as our motto and our rule of action, Man speed the plough.

ON THE NATURE OF THINGS-IN-THEMSELVES[1]

MEANING OF THE INDIVIDUAL OBJECT

MY feelings arrange and order themselves in two distinct ways. There is the internal or subjective order, in which sorrow succeeds the hearing of bad news, or the abstraction "dog" symbolises the perception of many different dogs. And there is the external or objective order, in which the sensation of letting go is followed by the sight of a falling object and the sound of its fall. The objective order, *quâ* order, is treated by physical science, which investigates the uniform relations of *objects* in time and space. Here the word *object* (or *phenomenon*) is taken merely to mean a group of my feelings, which persists as a group in a certain manner; for I am at present considering only the objective order of my feelings. The object, then, is a set of changes *in* my consciousness, and not anything out of it. Here is as yet no metaphysical doctrine, but only a fixing of the meaning of a word. We may subsequently find reason to infer that there is something which is not object, but which corresponds in a certain way with the object; this will be a metaphysical doctrine, and neither it nor its denial is involved in the present determination of meaning. But the determination must be taken as extending to all those inferences which are made by science in the objective order. If I hold that there is hydrogen in the sun, I mean that if I could get some of it in a bottle, and explode it with half its volume of oxygen, I should get that group of possible sensations which we call "water." The inferences of physical science are all inferences

[1] "Mind," January 1878.

of my real or possible feelings; inferences of something actually or potentially in my consciousness, not of anything outside it.

DISTINCTION OF OBJECT AND EJECT

There are, however, some inferences which are profoundly different from those of physical science. When I come to the conclusion that *you* are conscious, and that there are objects in your consciousness similar to those in mine, I am not inferring any actual or possible feelings of my own, but *your* feelings, which are not, and cannot by any possibility become, objects in my consciousness. The complicated processes of your body and the motions of your brain and nervous system, inferred from evidence of anatomical researches, are all inferred as things possibly visible to me. However remote the inference of physical science, the thing inferred is always a part of me, a possible set of changes in my consciousness bound up in the objective order with other known changes. But the inferred existence of your feelings, of objective groupings among them similar to those among my feelings, and of a subjective order in many respects analogous to my own,—these inferred existences are in the very act of inference *thrown out* of my consciousness, recognised as outside of it, as *not* being a part of me. I propose, accordingly, to call these inferred existences *ejects*, things thrown out of my consciousness, to distinguish them from *objects*, things presented in my consciousness, phenomena. It is to be noticed that there is a set of changes of my consciousness symbolic of the eject, which may be called my conception of you; it is (I think) a rough picture of the whole aggregate of my consciousness, under imagined circumstances like yours; *quâ* group of my feelings, this conception is like the object in substance and constitution, but differs from it in implying the existence of something that is not itself, but corresponds to it, namely, of the eject. The existence of the object, whether perceived or inferred, carries with it a group of beliefs; these are always beliefs in the future sequence of certain of my feelings. The existence of this table, for example, as an object in my consciousness, carries with it the belief that if I

climb up on it I shall be able to walk about on it as if it were the ground. But the existence of my conception of you in my consciousness carries with it a belief in the existence of you outside of my consciousness, a belief which can never be expressed in terms of the future sequence of my feelings. How this inference is justified, how consciousness can testify to the existence of anything outside of itself, I do not pretend to say; I need not untie a knot which the world has cut for me long ago. It may very well be that I myself am the only existence, but it is simply ridiculous to suppose that anybody else is. The position of absolute idealism may, therefore, be left out of count, although each individual may be unable to justify his dissent from it.

FORMATION OF THE SOCIAL OBJECT

The belief, however, in the existence of other men's consciousness, in the existence of ejects, dominates every thought and every action of our lives. In the first place, it profoundly modifies the object. This room, the table, the chairs, your bodies, are all objects in my consciousness; as simple objects, they are parts of me. But I somehow infer the existence of similar objects in your consciousness, and these are not objects to me, nor can they ever be made so; they are ejects. This being so, I bind up with each object as it exists in my mind the thought of similar objects existing in other men's minds; and I thus form the complex conception, "this table, as an object in the minds of men," —or, as Mr. Shadworth Hodgson puts it, an object of consciousness in general. This conception symbolises an indefinite number of ejects, together with one object which the conception of each eject more or less resembles. Its character is therefore mainly ejective in respect of what it symbolises, but mainly objective in respect of its nature. I shall call this complex conception the *social object;* it is a symbol of one thing (the *individual object*, it may be called for distinction's sake) which is in my consciousness, and of an indefinite number of other things which are ejects and out of my consciousness. Now, it is probable that the individual

object, as such, never exists in the mind of man. For there is every reason to believe that we were gregarious animals before we became men properly so called. And a belief in the eject—some sort of recognition of a kindred consciousness in one's fellow-beings—is clearly a condition of gregarious action among animals so highly developed as to be called conscious at all. Language, even in its first beginnings, is impossible without that belief; and any sound which, becoming a sign to my neighbour, becomes thereby a mark to myself, must by the nature of the case be a mark of the social object, and not of the individual object. But if not only this conception of the particular social object, but all those that have been built up out of it, have been formed at the same time with, and under the influence of, language, it seems to follow that the belief in the existence of other men's minds like our own, but not part of us, must be inseparably associated with every process whereby discrete impressions are built together into an object. I do not, of course, mean that it presents itself in consciousness as distinct; but I mean that as an object is formed in my mind, a fixed habit causes it to be formed as a social object, and insensibly embodies in it a reference to the minds of other men. And this sub-conscious reference to supposed ejects is what constitutes the impression of *externality* in the object, whereby it is described as *not-me*. At any rate, the formation of the social object supplies an account of this impression of outness, without requiring me to assume any ejects or things outside my consciousness except the minds of other men. Consequently, it cannot be argued from the impression of outness that there is anything outside of my consciousness except the minds of other men. I shall argue presently that we have grounds for believing in non-personal ejects, but these grounds are not in any way dependent on the impression of outness, and they are not included in the ordinary or common-sense view of things. It seems to me that the prevailing belief of un-instructed people is merely a belief in the social object, and not in a non-personal eject, somehow corresponding to it; and that the question whether the latter exists or not is one which cannot be put to them so as to convey any meaning without considerable preliminary training. On this

point I agree entirely with Berkeley, and not with Mr. Spencer.

DIFFERENCE BETWEEN MIND AND BODY

I do not pause to show how belief in the Eject underlies the whole of natural ethic, whose first great commandment, evolved in the light of day by healthy processes wherever men have lived together, is, "Put yourself in his place." It is more to my present purpose to point out what is the true difference between body and mind. Your body is an object in my consciousness; your mind is not, and never can be. Being an object, your body follows the laws of physical science, which deals with the objective order of my feelings. That its chemistry is ordinary chemistry, its physics ordinary physics, its mechanics ordinary mechanics, may or may not be true; the circumstances are exceptional, and it is conceivable (to persons ignorant of the facts) that allowance may have to be made for them, even in the expression of the most general laws of nature. But in any case, every question about your body is a question about the physical laws of matter, and about nothing else. To say: "Up to this point science can explain; here the soul steps in," is not to say what is untrue, but to talk nonsense. If evidence were found that the matter constituting the brain behaved otherwise than ordinary matter, or if it were impossible to describe vital actions as particular examples of general physical rules, this would be a fact in physics, a fact relating to the motion of matter; and it must either be explained by further elaboration of physical science or else our conception of the objective order of our feelings would have to be changed. The question, "Is the mind a force?" is condemned by similar considerations. A certain variable quality of matter (the rate of change of its motion) is found to be invariably connected with the position relatively to it of other matter; considered as expressed in terms of this position, the quality is called Force. Force is thus an abstraction relating to *objective* facts; it is a mode of grouping of my feelings, and cannot possibly be the same thing as an eject, another man's consciousness. But the question: "Do the changes in a man's consciousness *run parallel* with the

changes of motion, and therefore with the forces in his brain?" is a real question, and not *primâ facie* nonsense. Objections of like character may be raised against the language of some writers who speak of changes in consciousness as *caused* by actions on the organism. The word *Cause*, πολλαχῶς λεγόμενον and misleading as it is, having no legitimate place in science or philosophy, may yet be of some use in conversation or literature, if it is kept to denote a relation between objective facts, to describe certain parts of the phenomenal order. But only confusion can arise if it is used to express the relation between certain objective facts in my consciousness and the ejective facts which are inferred as corresponding in some way to them and running parallel with them. For all that we know at present, this relation does not in any way resemble that expressed by the word Cause.

To sum up, the distinction between eject and object, properly grasped, forbids us to regard the eject, another man's mind, as coming into the world of objects in any way, or as standing in the relation of cause or effect to any changes in that world. I need hardly add that the facts do very strongly lead us to regard our bodies as merely complicated examples of practically universal physical rules, and their motions as determined in the same way as those of the sun and the sea. There is no evidence which amounts to a *primâ facie* case against the dynamical uniformity of Nature; and I make no exception in favour of that *slykick* force which fills existing lunatic asylums and makes private houses into new ones.

CORRESPONDENCE OF ELEMENTS OF MIND AND BRAIN-ACTION

I have already spoken of certain ejective facts—the changes in your consciousness—as running parallel with the changes in your brain, which are objective facts. The parallelism here meant is a parallelism of complexity, an analogy of structure. A spoken sentence and the same sentence written are two utterly unlike things, but each of them consists of elements; the spoken sentence of the elementary sounds of the language,

the written sentence of its alphabet. Now the relation between the spoken sentence and its elements is very nearly the same as the relation between the written sentence and its elements. There is a correspondence of element to element; although an elementary sound is quite a different thing from a letter of the alphabet, yet each elementary sound belongs to a certain letter or letters. And the sounds being built up together to form a spoken sentence, the letters are built up together, *in nearly the same way*, to form the written sentence. The two complex products are as wholly unlike as the elements are, but the manner of their complication is the same. Or, as we should say in the mathematics, a sentence spoken is the same function of the elementary sounds as the same sentence written is of the corresponding letters.

Of such a nature is the correspondence or parallelism between mind and body. The fundamental "deliverance" of consciousness affirms its own complexity. It seems to me impossible, as I am at present constituted, to have only one absolutely simple feeling at a time. Not only are my objective perceptions, as of a man's head or a candlestick, formed of a great number of parts ordered in a definite manner, but they are invariably accompanied by an endless string of memories, all equally complex. And those massive organic feelings with which, from their apparent want of connection with the objective order, the notion of consciousness has been chiefly associated,—those also turn out, when attention is directed to them, to be complex things. In reading over a former page of my manuscript, for instance, I found suddenly, on reflection, that although I had been conscious of what I was reading I paid no attention to it; but had been mainly occupied in debating whether faint red lines would not be better than blue ones to write upon, in picturing the scene in the shop when I should ask for such lines to be ruled, and in reflecting on the lamentable helplessness of nine men out of ten when you ask them to do anything slightly different from what they have been accustomed to do. This debate had been started by the observation that my handwriting varied in size according to the nature of the argument, being larger when that was diffuse and explanatory, occupied with a supposed audience; and smaller when it was close, occupied only with

the sequence of propositions. Along with these trains of thought went the sensation of noises made by poultry, dogs, children, and organ-grinders; and that vague diffused feeling in the side of the face and head which means a probable toothache in an hour or two. Under these circumstances, it seems to me that consciousness must be described as a succession of groups of changes, as analogous to a rope made of a great number of occasionally interlacing strands.

This being so, it will be said that there is a unity in all this complexity, that in all these varied feelings it is I who am conscious, and that this sense of personality, the self-perception of the Ego, is one and indivisible. It seems to me (here agreeing with Hume) that the "unity of apperception" does not exist in the instantaneous consciousness which it unites, but only in subsequent reflection upon it; and that it consists in the power of establishing a certain connection between the memories of any two feelings which we had at the same instant. A feeling, at the instant when it *exists*, exists *an und für sich*, and not as *my* feeling; but when on reflection I remember it as my feeling, there comes up not merely a faint repetition of the feeling, but inextricably connected with it a whole set of connections with the general stream of my consciousness. This memory, again, *quâ* memory, is relative to the past feeling which it partially recalls; but in so far as it is itself a feeling, it is absolute, *Ding-an-sich.* The feeling of personality, then, is a certain feeling of connection between faint images of past feelings; and personality itself is the fact that such connections are set up, the property of the stream of feelings that part of it consists of links binding together faint reproductions of previous parts. It is thus a relative thing, a mode of complication of certain elements, and a property of the complex so produced. This complex is consciousness. When a stream of feelings is so compact together that at each instant it consists of (1) new feelings, (2) fainter repetitions of previous ones, and (3) links connecting these repetitions, the stream is called a consciousness. A far more complicated grouping than is necessarily implied here is established when discrete impressions are run together into the perception of an object. The *conception* of a particular object, as object, is a group of feelings symbolic of many

different perceptions, and of links between them and other feelings. The distinction between Subject and Object is twofold; first, the distinction with which we started between the subjective and objective *orders* which simultaneously exist in my feelings; and secondly, the distinction between me and the social object, which involves the distinction between me and you. Either of these distinctions is exceedingly complex and abstract, involving a highly organised experience. It is not, I think, possible to separate one from the other; for it is just the objective order which I do suppose to be common to me and to other minds.

I need not set down here the evidence which shows that the complexity of consciousness is paralleled by complexity of action in the brain. It is only necessary to point out what appears to me to be a consequence of the discoveries of Müller and Helmholtz in regard to sensation: that at least those distinct feelings which can be remembered and examined by reflection are paralleled by changes in a portion of the brain only. In the case of sight, for example, there is a message taken from things outside to the retina, and therefrom sent in somewhither by the optic nerve; now we can tap this telegraph at any point and produce the sensation of sight, without any impression on the retina. It seems to follow that what is known *directly* is what takes place at the inner end of this nerve, or that the consciousness of sight is simultaneous and parallel in complexity with the changes in the gray matter at the internal extremity, and not with the changes in the nerve itself, or in the retina. So also a pain in a particular part of the body may be mimicked by neuralgia due to lesion of another part.

We come then, finally, to say that as your consciousness is made up of elementary feelings grouped together in various ways (ejective facts), so a part of the action in your brain is made up of more elementary actions in parts of it, grouped together *in the same ways* (objective facts). The knowledge of this correspondence is a help to the analysis of both sets of facts; but it teaches us in particular that any feeling, however apparently simple, which can be retained and examined by reflection, is already itself a most complex structure. We may, however, conclude that this correspondence extends to

the elements, and that each simple feeling corresponds to a special comparatively simple change of nerve-matter.

THE ELEMENTARY FEELING IS A THING-IN-ITSELF

The conclusion that elementary feeling co-exists with elementary brain-motion in the same way as consciousness co-exists with complex brain-motion involves more important consequences than might at first sight appear. We have regarded consciousness as a complex of feelings, and explained the fact that the complex is conscious as depending on the mode of complication. But does not the elementary feeling itself imply a consciousness in which alone it can exist, and of which it is a modification? Can a feeling exist by itself, without forming part of a consciousness? I shall say *no* to the first question, and *yes* to the second, and it seems to me that these answers are required by the doctrine of evolution. For if that doctrine be true, we shall have along the line of the human pedigree a series of imperceptible steps connecting inorganic matter with ourselves. To the later members of that series we must undoubtedly ascribe consciousness, although it must, of course, have been simpler than our own. But where are we to stop? In the case of organisms of a certain complexity consciousness is inferred. As we go back along the line, the complexity of the organism and of its nerve-action insensibly diminishes; and for the first part of our course we see reason to think that the complexity of consciousness insensibly diminishes also. But if we make a jump, say to the tunicate molluscs, we see no reason there to infer the existence of consciousness at all. Yet not only is it impossible to point out a place where any sudden break takes place, but it is contrary to all the natural training of our minds to suppose a breach of continuity so great. All this imagined line of organisms is a series of objects in my consciousness; they form an insensible gradation, and yet there is a certain unknown point at which I am at liberty to infer facts *out* of my consciousness corresponding to them! There is only one way out of the difficulty, and to that we are driven. Consciousness is a complex of ejective facts,—of elementary feelings, or rather of those remoter elements which cannot even

be felt, but of which the simplest feeling is built up. Such elementary ejective facts go along with the action of every organism, however simple; but it is only when the material organism has reached a certain complexity of nervous structure (not now to be specified) that the complex of ejective facts reaches that mode of complication which is called Consciousness. But as the line of ascent is unbroken, and must end at last in inorganic matter, we have no choice but to admit that every motion of matter is simultaneous with some ejective fact or event which might be part of a consciousness. From this follow two important corollaries.

1. A feeling can exist by itself, without forming part of a consciousness. It does not depend for its existence on the consciousness of which it may form a part. Hence a feeling (or an eject-element) is *Ding-an-sich*, an absolute, whose existence is not relative to anything else. *Sentitur* is all that can be said.

2. These eject-elements, which correspond to motions of matter, are connected together in their sequence and co-existence by counterparts of the physical laws of matter. For otherwise the correspondence could not be kept up.

MIND-STUFF IS THE REALITY WHICH WE PERCEIVE AS MATTER

That element of which, as we have seen, even the simplest feeling is a complex, I shall call *Mind-stuff*. A moving molecule of inorganic matter does not possess mind or consciousness; but it possesses a small piece of mind-stuff. When molecules are so combined together as to form the film on the under side of a jelly-fish, the elements of mind-stuff which go along with them are so combined as to form the faint beginnings of Sentience. When the molecules are so combined as to form the brain and nervous system of a vertebrate, the corresponding elements of mind-stuff are so combined as to form some kind of consciousness; that is to say, changes in the complex which take place at the same time get so linked together that the repetition of one implies the repetition of the other. When matter takes the complex form of a living human brain, the corresponding mind-stuff takes the form of a human consciousness, having intelligence and volition.

Suppose that I see a man looking at a candlestick. Both of these are objects, or phenomena, in my mind. An *image* of the candlestick, in the optical sense, is formed upon his retina, and nerve messages go from all parts of this to form what we may call a *cerebral image* somewhere in the neighbourhood of the optic thalami in the inside of his brain. This cerebral image is a certain complex of disturbances in the matter of these organs; it is a material or physical fact, therefore a group of my possible sensations, just as the candlestick is. The cerebral image is an imperfect representation of the candlestick, corresponding to it point for point in a certain way. Both the candlestick and the cerebral image are matter; but one material complex *represents* the other material complex in an imperfect way.

Now the candlestick is not the external reality whose existence is represented in the man's mind; for the candlestick is a mere perception in *my* mind. Nor is the cerebral image the man's perception of the candlestick; for the cerebral image is merely an idea of a possible perception in my mind. But there *is* a perception in the man's mind, which we may call the *mental image;* and this corresponds to some external reality. *The external reality bears the same relation to the mental image that the (phenomenal) candlestick bears to the cerebral image.* Now the candlestick and the cerebral image are both matter; they are made of the same stuff. Therefore the external reality is made of the same stuff as the man's perception or mental image, that is, it is made of mind-stuff. And as the cerebral image represents imperfectly the candlestick, in the same way and to the same extent the mental image represents the reality external to his consciousness. Thus in order to find the thing-in-itself which is represented by any object in my consciousness, such as a candlestick, I have to solve this question in proportion, or rule of three :—

> *As* the physical configuration of my cerebral image of the object
> *is to* the physical configuration of the object,
> *so is* my perception of the object (the object regarded as complex of my feelings)
> *to* the thing-in-itself.

Hence we are obliged to identify the thing-in-itself with

that complex of elementary mind-stuff which on other grounds we have seen reason to think of as going along with the material object. Or, to say the same thing in other words, the reality external to our minds which is represented in our minds as matter is in itself mind-stuff.

The universe, then, consists entirely of mind-stuff. Some of this is woven into the complex form of human minds containing imperfect representations of the mind-stuff outside them, and of themselves also, as a mirror reflects its own image in another mirror, *ad infinitum.* Such an imperfect representation is called a material universe. It is a picture in a man's mind of the real universe of mind-stuff.

The two chief points of this doctrine may be thus summed up:—

Matter is a mental picture in which mind-stuff is the thing represented.

Reason, intelligence, and volition are properties of a complex which is made up of elements themselves not rational, not intelligent, not conscious.

Note. The doctrine here expounded appears to have been arrived at independently by many persons; as was natural, seeing that it is (or seems to me) a necessary consequence of recent advances in the theory of perception. Kant[1] threw out a suggestion that the *Ding-an-sich* might be of the nature of mind; but the first statement of the doctrine in its true connection that I know of is by Wundt. Since it dawned on me, some time ago, I have supposed myself to find it more or less plainly hinted in many writings; but the question is one in which it is peculiarly difficult to make out precisely what another man means, and even what one means one's self.

Some writers (*e.g.* Dr. Tyndall) have used the word *matter* to mean the phenomenon *plus* the reality represented; and there are many reasons in favour of such usage in general. But for the purposes of the present discussion I have thought it clearer to use the word for the phenomenon as distinguished from the thing-in-itself.

[1] [*Kritik der reinen Vernunft,* pp. 287-8, ed. Rosenkranz. Wundt's statement is in the concluding paragraphs of *Grundzüge der physiologischen Psychologie.* Compare too Häckel, "Zellseelen and Seelenzellen," in *Deutsche Rundschau,* July 1878, vol. xvi. p. 40.]

ON THE SCIENTIFIC BASIS OF MORALS[1]

The crude essay which here follows is allowed to see the light rather as a text for the remarks to which it has given rise than for its own sake. It was written as a means of seeking for more light, and in that respect has succeeded. Some remarks of Mr. Darwin's (*Descent of Man*, part i. ch. 3), appeared to me to constitute a method of dealing with ethical problems bearing a close analogy to the methods which have been successful in all other practical questions, but differing somewhat in principle from the theories which are at present in vogue, while in its results it coincides with the highest and healthiest practical instincts of this and of all times. All that is attempted here is to show roughly what account is given by this method of some of the fundamental conceptions—right, and wrong, conscience, responsibility—and to indicate the nature of the standard which must guide their application. Exact definitions are not to be looked for; they come as the last product of a completed theory, and are sure to be wrong at an early stage of science. But though we may be unable to define fully what right is, we do, I think, arrive at principles which show us very clearly many things which it is not; and these conclusions are not only of great practical importance, but theoretically bear close analogy to the steps by which complete definition has been attained in the exact sciences.

BY Morals or Ethic I mean the doctrine of a special kind of pleasure or displeasure which is felt by the human mind in contemplating certain courses of conduct, whereby they are felt to be *right* or *wrong*, and of a special desire to do the right things and avoid the wrong ones. The pleasure or displeasure is commonly called the moral sense; the corresponding desire might be called the moral appetite. These are facts, existing in the consciousness of every man who need be considered in this discussion, and sufficiently marked out by these names; they need no further definition. In the same way the sense of taste is a feeling of pleasure or displeasure in things savoury or unsavoury, and is associated

[1] *Contemporary Review*, September 1875.

with a desire for the one and a repulsion from the other. We must assume that everybody knows what these words mean; the feelings they describe may be analysed or accounted for, but they cannot be more exactly defined as feelings.

The maxims of ethic are recommendations or commands of the form, "Do this particular thing because it is right," or "Avoid this particular thing because it is wrong." They express the immediate desire to do the right thing for itself, not for the sake of anything else: on this account the mood of them is called the categorical imperative. The particular things commanded or forbidden by such maxims depend upon the character of the individual in whose mind they arise. There is a certain general agreement in the ethical code of persons belonging to the same race at a given time, but considerable variations in different races and times. To the question "What is right?" can therefore only be answered in the first instance, "That which pleases your moral sense." But it may be further asked, "What is generally thought right?" and the reply will specify the ethic of a particular race and period. But the ethical code of an individual, like the standard of taste, may be modified by habit and education; and accordingly the question may be asked, "How shall I order my moral desires so as to be able to satisfy them most completely and continuously? What *ought* I to feel to be right?" The answer to this question must be sought in the study of the conditions under which the moral sense was produced and is preserved; in other words, in the study of its functions as a property of the human organism. The maxims derived from this study may be called maxims of abstract or absolute right; they are not absolutely universal, "eternal and immutable," but they are independent of the individual, and practically universal for the present condition of the human species.

I mean by Science the application of experience to new circumstances, by the aid of an order of nature which has been observed in the past, and on the assumption that such order will continue in the future. The simplest use of experience as a guide to action is probably not even conscious; it is the association by continually-repeated selection of certain

actions with certain circumstances, as in the unconsciously acquired craft of the maker of flint implements. I still call this science, although it is only a beginning; because the physiological process is a type of what takes place in all later stages. The next step may be expressed in the form of a hypothetical maxim,—"If you want to make brass, melt your copper along with this blue stone." To a maxim of this sort it may always be replied, "I do not want to make brass, and so I shall not do as you tell me." This reply is anticipated in the final form of science, when it is expressed as a statement or proposition: brass is an alloy of copper and zinc, and calamine is zinc carbonate. Belief in a general statement is an artifice of our mental constitution, whereby infinitely various sensations and groups of sensations are brought into connection with infinitely various actions and groups of actions. On the phenomenal side there corresponds a certain cerebral structure by which various combinations of disturbances in the sensor tract are made to lead to the appropriate combinations of disturbances in the motor tract. The important point is that science, though apparently transformed into pure knowledge, has yet never lost its character of being a *craft;* and that it is not the knowledge itself which can rightly be called science, but a special way of getting and of using knowledge. Namely, science is the getting of knowledge from experience on the assumption of uniformity in nature, and the use of such knowledge to guide the actions of men. And the most abstract statements or propositions in science are to be regarded as bundles of hypothetical maxims packed into a portable shape and size. Every scientific fact is a shorthand expression for a vast number of practical directions: if you want so-and-so, do so-and-so.

If with this meaning of the word "Science," there is such a thing as a scientific basis of Morals, it must be true that,—

1, The maxims of Ethic are hypothetical maxims

2, Derived from experience

3, On the assumption of uniformity in nature.

These propositions I shall now endeavour to prove; and in conclusion, I shall indicate the direction in which we may look for those general statements of fact whose organisation will complete the likeness of ethical and physical science.

THE TRIBAL SELF[1]

In the metaphysical sense, the word "self" is taken to mean the conscious subject, *das Ich*, the whole stream of feelings which make up a consciousness regarded as bound together by association and memory. But, in the more common and more restricted ethical sense, what we call *self* is a selected aggregate of feelings and of objects related to them which hangs together as a conception by virtue of long and repeated association. My self does not include all my feelings, because I habitually separate off some of them, say they do not properly belong to me, and treat them as my enemies. On the other hand, it does in general include my body regarded as an object, because of the feelings which occur simultaneously with events which affect it. My foot is certainly part of myself, because I get hurt when anybody treads on it. When we desire anything for its somewhat remote consequences, it is not common for these to be represented to the mind in the form of the actual feelings of pleasure which are ultimately to flow from the satisfaction of the desire; instead of this, they are replaced by a symbolic conception which represents the thing desired as doing good to the complex abstraction *self*. This abstraction serves thus to support and hold together those complex and remote motives which make up by far the greater part of the life of the intelligent races. When a thing is desired for no immediate pleasure that it can bring, it is generally desired on account of a certain symbolic substitute for pleasure, the feeling that this thing is suitable to the self. And, as in many like cases, this feeling, which at first derived its pleasurable nature from the faintly represented simple pleasures of which it was a symbol, ceases after a time to recall them and becomes a simple pleasure itself. In this way the self becomes a sort of centre about which our remoter motives revolve, and to which they always have regard; in virtue of which, moreover, they become immediate and simple, from having been complex and remote.

[1] This conception of an Extended Self I found many years ago that I had in common with my friend Mr. Macmillan. Since then I have heard and read in many places expressions of it more or less distinct.

If we consider now the simpler races of mankind, we shall find not only that immediate desires play a far larger part in their lives, and so that the conception of self is less used and less developed, but also that it is less definite and more wide. The savage is not only hurt when anybody treads on his foot, but when anybody treads on his tribe. He may lose his hut, and his wife, and his opportunities of getting food. In this way the tribe becomes naturally included in that conception of self which renders remote desires possible by making them immediate. The actual pains or pleasures which come from the woe or weal of the tribe, and which were the source of this conception, drop out of consciousness and are remembered no more; the symbol which has replaced them becomes a centre and goal of immediate desires, powerful enough in many cases to override the strongest suggestions of individual pleasure or pain.

Here a helping cause comes in. The tribe, *quâ* tribe, has to exist, and it can only exist by aid of such an organic artifice as the conception of the tribal self in the minds of its members. Hence the natural selection of those races in which this conception is the most powerful and most habitually predominant as a motive over immediate desires. To such an extent has this proceeded that we may fairly doubt whether the selfhood of the tribe is not earlier in point of development than that of the individual. In the process of time it becomes a matter of hereditary transmission, and is thus fixed as a specific character in the constitution of social man. With the settlement of countries, and the aggregation of tribes into nations, it takes a wider and more abstract form; and in the highest natures the tribal self is incarnate in nothing less than humanity. Short of these heights, it places itself in the family and in the city. I shall call that quality or disposition of man which consists in the supremacy of the family or tribal self as a mark of reference for motives by its old name *Piety*. And I have now to consider certain feelings and conceptions to which the existence of piety must necessarily give rise.

Before going further, however, it will be advisable to fix as precisely as may be the sense of the words just used. Self, then, in the ethical sense, is a conception in the mind of

the individual which serves as a peg on which remote desires are hung and by which they are rendered immediate. The individual self is such a peg for the hanging of remote desires which affect the individual only. The tribal self is a conception in the mind of the individual which serves as a peg on which those remote desires are hung which were implanted in him by the need of the tribe as a tribe. We must carefully distinguish the tribal self from society, or the "common consciousness"; it is something in the mind of each individual man which binds together his gregarious instincts.

The word *tribe* is here used to mean a group of that size which in the circumstances considered is selected for survival or destruction *as a group*. Self-regarding excellences are brought out by the natural selection of individuals; the tribal self is developed by the natural selection of groups. The size of the groups must vary at different times; and the extent of the tribal self must vary accordingly.

APPROBATION AND CONSCIENCE

The tribe has to exist. Such tribes as saw no necessity for it have ceased to live. To exist, it must encourage piety; and there is a method which lies ready to hand.

We do not like a man whose character is such that we may reasonably expect injuries from him. This dislike of a man on account of his character is a more complex feeling than the mere dislike of separate injuries. A cat likes your hand, and your lap, and the food you give her; but I do not think she has any conception of *you*.[1] A dog, however, may like *you* even when you thrash him, though he does not like the thrashing. Now such likes and dislikes may be felt by the tribal self. If a man does anything generally regarded as good for the tribe, my tribal self may say, in the first place, "I like that thing that you have done." By such common approbation of individual acts the influence of piety as a motive becomes defined; and natural selection will in the long run preserve those tribes which have approved the

[1] Present company always excepted I fully believe in the personal and *disinterested* affection of *my* cat.

right things; namely, those things which at that time gave the tribe an advantage in the struggle for existence. But in the second place, a man may as a rule and constantly, being actuated by piety, do good things for the tribe; and in that case the tribal self will say, I like *you*. The feeling expressed by this statement on the part of any individual, "In the name of the tribe, I like you," is what I call *approbation*. It is the feeling produced in pious individuals by that sort of character which seems to them beneficial to the community.

Now suppose that a man has done something obviously harmful to the community. Either some immediate desire, or his individual self, has for once proved stronger than the tribal self. When the tribal self wakes up, the man says, "In the name of the tribe, I do not like this thing that I, as an individual, have done." This Self-judgment in the name of the tribe is called Conscience. If the man goes further and draws from this act and others an inference about his own character, he may say, "In the name of the tribe, I do not like my individual self." This is remorse. Mr. Darwin has well pointed out that immediate desires are in general strong but of short duration, and cannot be adequately represented to the mind after they have passed; while the social forces, though less violent, have a steady and continuous action.

In a mind sufficiently developed to distinguish the individual from the tribal self, conscience is thus a necessary result of the existence of piety; it is ready to hand as a means for its increase. But to account for the existence of piety and conscience in the elemental form which we have hitherto considered is by no means to account for the present moral nature of man. We shall be led many steps in that direction if we consider the way in which society has used these feelings of the individual as a means for its own preservation.

RIGHT AND RESPONSIBILITY

A like or a dislike is one thing; the expression of it is another. It is attached to the feeling by links of association; and when this association has been selectively modified by

experience, whether consciously or unconsciously, the expression serves a *purpose* of retaining or repeating the thing liked, and of removing the thing disliked. Such a purpose is served by the expression of tribal approbation or disapprobation, however little it may be the conscious end of such expression to any individual. It is necessary to the tribe that the pious character should be encouraged and preserved, the impious character discouraged and removed. The process is of two kinds; direct and reflex. In the direct process the tribal dislike of the offender is precisely similar to the dislike of a noxious beast; and it expresses itself in his speedy removal. But in the reflex process we find the first trace of that singular and wonderful judgment by analogy which ascribes to other men a consciousness similar to our own. If the process were a conscious one, it might perhaps be described in this way: the tribal self says, "Put yourself in this man's place; he also is pious, but he has offended, and that proves that he is not pious enough. Still, he has some conscience, and the expression of your tribal dislike to his character, awakening his conscience, will tend to change him and make him more pious." But the process is not a conscious one: the social craft or art of living together is learned by the tribe and not by the individual, and the purpose of improving men's characters is provided for by complex social arrangements long before it has been conceived by any conscious mind. The tribal self learns to approve certain expressions of tribal liking or disliking; the actions whose open approval is liked by the tribal self are called right actions, and those whose open disapproval is liked are called wrong actions. The corresponding characters are called good or bad, virtuous or vicious.

This introduces a further complication into the conscience. Self-judgment in the name of the tribe becomes associated with very definite and material judgment by the tribe itself. On the one hand, this undoubtedly strengthens the motive-power of conscience in an enormous degree. On the other hand, it tends to guide the decisions of conscience; and since the expression of public approval or disapproval is made in general by means of some organised machinery of government, it becomes possible for conscience to be knowingly directed

by the wise or misdirected by the wicked, instead of being driven along the right path by the slow selective process of experience. Now right actions are not those which are publicly approved, but those whose public approbation a well-instructed tribal self would like. Still, it is impossible to avoid the guiding influence of expressed approbation on the great mass of the people; and in those cases where the machinery of government is approximately a means of expressing the true public conscience, that influence becomes a most powerful help to improvement.

Let us note now the very important difference between the direct and the reflex process. To clear a man away as a noxious beast, and to punish him for doing wrong, these are two very different things. The purpose in the first case is merely to get rid of a nuisance; the purpose in the second case is to improve the character either of the man himself or of those who will observe this public expression of disapprobation. The offence of which the man has been guilty leads to an inference about his character, and it is supposed that the community may contain other persons whose characters are similar to his, or tend to become so. It has been found that the expression of public disapprobation tends to awake the conscience of such people and to improve their characters. If the improvement of the man himself is aimed at, it is assumed that he has a conscience which can be worked upon and made to deter him from similar offences in future.

The word *purpose* has here been used in a sense to which it is perhaps worth while to call attention. Adaptation of means to an end may be produced in two ways that we at present know of; by processes of natural selection, and by the agency of an intelligence in which an image or idea of the end preceded the use of the means. In both cases the existence of the adaptation is accounted for by the necessity or utility of the end. It seems to me convenient to use the word *purpose* as meaning generally the end to which certain means are adapted, both in these two cases, and in any other that may hereafter become known, provided only that the adaptation is accounted for by the necessity or utility of the end. And there seems no objection to the use of the phrase "final cause" in this wider sense, if it is to be kept at all. The

word "design" might then be kept for the special case of adaptation by an intelligence. And we may then say that since the process of natural selection has been understood, *purpose* has ceased to suggest *design* to instructed people, except in cases where the agency of man is independently probable.

When a man can be punished for doing wrong with approval of the tribal self, he is said to be *responsible*. Responsibility implies two things:—(1) The act was a product of the man's character and of the circumstances, and his character may to a certain extent be inferred from the act; (2) The man had a conscience which might have been so worked upon as to prevent his doing the act. Unless the first condition be fulfilled, we cannot reasonably take any action at all in regard to the man, but only in regard to the offence. In the case of crimes of violence, for example, we might carry a six-shooter to protect ourselves against similar possibilities, but unless the fact of a man's having once committed a murder made it probable that he would do the like again, it would clearly be absurd and unreasonable to lynch the man. That is to say, we assume an uniformity of connection between character and actions, infer a man's character from his past actions, and endeavour to provide against his future actions either by destroying him or by changing his character. I think it will be found that in all those cases where we not only deal with the offence but treat it with moral reprobation, we imply the existence of a conscience which might have been worked upon to improve the character. Why, for example, do we not regard a lunatic as responsible? Because we are in possession of information about his character derived not only from his one offence but from other facts, whereby we know that even if he had a conscience left, his mind is so diseased that it is impossible by moral reprobation alone to change his character so that it may be subsequently relied upon. With his cure from disease and the restored validity of this condition, responsibility returns. There are, of course, cases in which an irresponsible person is punished as if he were responsible, *pour encourager les autres* who are responsible. The question of the right or wrong of this procedure is the question of its average effect on the character of men at any particular time.

THE CATEGORICAL IMPERATIVE

May we now say that the maxims of Ethic are hypothetical maxims? I think we may, and that in showing why we shall explain the apparent difference between them and other maxims belonging to an early stage of science. In the first place, ethical maxims are learned by the tribe and not by the individual. Those tribes have on the whole survived in which conscience approved such actions as tended to the improvement of men's characters as citizens and therefore to the survival of the tribe. Hence it is that the moral sense of the individual, though founded on the experience of the tribe, is purely intuitive; conscience gives no reasons. Notwithstanding this, the ethical maxims are presented to us as conditional; if you want to live together in this complicated way, your ways must be straight and not crooked, you must seek the truth and love no lie. Suppose we answer, "I don't want to live together with other men in this complicated way; and so I shall not do as you tell me." That is not the end of the matter, as it might be with other scientific precepts. For obvious reasons it is *right* in this case to reply, "Then in the name of my people I do not like you," and to express this dislike by appropriate methods. And the offender, being descended from a social race, is unable to escape his conscience, the voice of his tribal self which says, "In the name of the tribe, I hate myself for this treason that I have done."

There are two reasons, then, why ethical maxims appear to be unconditional. First, they are acquired from experience not directly but by tribal selection, and therefore in the mind of the individual they do not rest upon the true reasons for them. Secondly, although they are conditional, the absence of the condition in one born of a social race is rightly visited by moral reprobation.

ETHICS ARE BASED ON UNIFORMITY

I have already observed that to deal with men as a means of influencing their actions implies that these actions are a

product of character and circumstances; and that moral reprobation and responsibility cannot exist unless we assume the efficacy of certain special means of influencing character. It is not necessary to point out that such considerations involve that uniformity of nature which underlies the possibility of even unconscious adaptations to experience, of language, and of general conceptions and statements. It may be asked "Are you quite sure that these observed uniformities between motive and action, between character and motive, between social influence and change of character, are absolutely exact in the form in which you state them, or indeed that they are exact laws of any form? May there not be very slight divergences from exact laws, which will allow of the action of an 'uncaused will,' or of the interference of some 'extramundane force'?" I am sure I do not know. But this I do know: that our sense of right and wrong is derived from such order as we can observe, and not from such caprice of disorder as we may fancifully conjecture; and that to whatever extent a divergence from exactness became sensible, to that extent it would destroy the most widespread and worthy of the acquisitions of mankind.

THE FINAL STANDARD

By these views we are led to conclusions partly negative, partly positive; of which, as might be expected, the negative are the most definite.

First, then, Ethic is a matter of the tribe or community, and therefore there are no "self-regarding virtues." The qualities of courage, prudence, etc., can only be *rightly* encouraged in so far as they are shown to conduce to the efficiency of a citizen; that is, in so far as they cease to be self-regarding. The duty of private judgment, of searching after truth, the sacredness of belief which ought not to be misused on unproved statements, follow only on showing of the enormous importance to society of a true knowledge of things. And any diversion of conscience from its sole allegiance to the community is condemned *à priori* in the very nature of right and wrong.

Next, the end of Ethic is not the greatest happiness of the greatest number. Your happiness is of no use to the community, except in so far as it tends to make you a more efficient citizen—that is to say, happiness is not to be desired for its own sake, but for the sake of something else. If any end is pointed to, it is the end of increased efficiency in each man's special work, as well as in the social functions which are common to all. A man must strive to be a better citizen, a better workman, a better son, husband, or father. *Farvi migliori; questo ha da essere lo scopo della vostra vita.*[1]

Again, Piety is not Altruism. It is not the doing good to others as others, but the service of the community by a member of it, who loses in that service the consciousness that he is anything different from the community.

The social organism, like the individual, may be healthy or diseased. Health and disease are very difficult things to define accurately: but for practical purposes, there are certain states about which no mistake can be made. When we have even a very imperfect catalogue and description of states that are clearly and certainly diseases, we may form a rough preliminary definition of health by saying that it means the absence of all these states. Now the health of society involves among other things, that right is done by the individuals composing it. And certain social diseases consist in a wrong direction of the conscience. Hence the determination of abstract right depends on the study of healthy and diseased states of society. How much light can be got for this end from the historical records we possess? A very great deal, if, as I believe, for ethical purposes the nature of man and of society may be taken as approximately constant during the few thousand years of which we have distinct records.

The matters of fact on which rational ethic must be founded are the laws of modification of character, and the evidence of history as to those kinds of character which have most aided the improvement of the race. For although the moral sense is intuitive, it must for the future be directed by our conscious discovery of the tribal purpose which it serves.

[1] Mazzini, Doveri dell' Uomo.

RIGHT AND WRONG:

THE SCIENTIFIC GROUND OF THEIR DISTINCTION [1]

THE questions which are here to be considered are especially and peculiarly everybody's questions. It is not everybody's business to be an engineer, or a doctor, or a carpenter, or a soldier; but it is everybody's business to be a citizen. The doctrines and precepts which guide the practice of the good engineer are of interest to him who uses them and to those whose business it is to investigate them by mechanical science; the rest of us neither obey nor disobey them. But the doctrines and precepts of morality, which guide the practice of the good citizen, are of interest to all; they must be either obeyed or disobeyed by every human being who is not hopelessly and for ever separated from the rest of mankind. No one can say, therefore, that in this inquiry we are not minding our own business, that we are meddling with other men's affairs. We are in fact studying the principles of our profession, so far as we are able; a necessary thing for every man who wishes to do good work in it.

Along with the character of universal interest which belongs to our subject there goes another. What is everybody's practical business is also to a large extent what everybody knows; and it may be reasonably expected that a discourse about Right and Wrong will be full of platitudes and truisms. The expectation is a just one. The considerations I have to offer are of the very oldest and the very simplest commonplace and common sense; and no one can be

[1] Sunday Lecture Society, November 7, 1875; *Fortnightly Review*, December 1875.

more astonished than I am that there should be any reason to speak of them at all. But there is reason to speak of them, because platitudes are not all of one kind. Some platitudes have a definite meaning and a practical application, and are established by the uniform and long-continued experience of all people. Other platitudes, having no definite meaning and no practical application, seem not to be worth anybody's while to test; and these are quite sufficiently established by mere assertion, if it is audacious enough to begin with and persistent enough afterwards. It is in order to distinguish these two kinds of platitude from one another, and to make sure that those which we retain form a body of doctrine consistent with itself and with the rest of our beliefs, that we undertake this examination of obvious and widespread principles.

First of all, then, what are the facts?

We say that it is wrong to murder, to steal, to tell lies, and that it is right to take care of our families. When we say in this sense that one action is right and another wrong, we have a certain feeling towards the action which is peculiar and not quite like any other feeling. It is clearly a feeling towards the action and not towards the man who does it; because we speak of hating the sin and loving the sinner. We might reasonably dislike a man whom we knew or suspected to be a murderer, because of the natural fear that he might murder us; and we might like our own parents for taking care of us. But everybody knows that these feelings are something quite different from the feeling which condemns murder as a wrong thing, and approves parental care as a right thing. I say nothing here about the possibility of analysing this feeling, or proving that it arises by combination of other feelings; all I want to notice is that it is as distinct and recognisable as the feeling of pleasure in a sweet taste or of displeasure at a toothache. In speaking of right and wrong, we speak of qualities of action which arouse definite feelings that everybody knows and recognises. It is not necessary, then, to give a definition at the outset; we are going to use familiar terms which have a definite meaning in the same sense in which everybody uses them. We may ultimately come to something like a definition; but what we

have to do first is to collect the facts and see what can be made of them, just as if we were going to talk about limestone, or parents and children, or fuel.[1]

It is easy to conceive that murder and theft and neglect of the young might be considered wrong in a very simple state of society. But we find at present that the condemnation of these actions does not stand alone; it goes with the condemnation of a great number of other actions which seem to be included with the obviously criminal action in a sort of general rule. The wrongness of murder, for example, belongs in a less degree to any form of bodily injury that one man may inflict on another; and it is even extended so as to include injuries to his reputation or his feelings. I make these more refined precepts follow in the train of the more obvious and rough ones, because this appears to have been the traditional order of their establishment. "He that makes his neighbour blush in public," says the Mishna, "is as if he had shed his blood." In the same way the rough condemnation of stealing carries with it a condemnation of more refined forms of dishonesty: we do not hesitate to say that it is wrong for a tradesman to adulterate his goods, or for a labourer to scamp his work. We not only say that it is wrong to tell lies, but that it is wrong to deceive in other more ingenious ways; wrong to use words so that they shall have one sense to some people and another sense to other people; wrong to suppress the truth when that suppression leads to false belief in others. And again, the duty of parents towards their children is seen to be a special case of a very large and varied class of duties towards that great family to which we belong—to the fatherland and them that dwell therein. The word *duty* which I have here used, has as definite a sense to the general mind as the words *right* and *wrong;* we say that it is right to do our duty, and wrong to neglect it. These duties to the community serve in our minds to explain and define our duties to individuals. It is wrong to kill any one; unless we are an executioner, when it may be our duty to kill a criminal; or a soldier, when it may be our duty to kill the enemy of our country; and in

[1] These subjects were treated in the Lectures which immediately preceded and followed the present one.

general it is wrong to injure any man in any way in our private capacity and for our own sakes. Thus if a man injures us, it is only right to retaliate on behalf of other men. Of two men in a desert island, if one takes away the other's cloak, it may or may not be right for the other to let him have his coat also; but if a man takes away my cloak while we both live in society, it is my duty to use such means as I can to prevent him from taking away other people's cloaks. Observe that I am endeavouring to describe the facts of the moral feelings of Englishmen, such as they are now.

The last remark leads us to another platitude of exceedingly ancient date. We said that it was wrong to injure any man in our private capacity and for our own sakes. A rule like this differs from all the others that we have considered, because it not only deals with physical acts, words and deeds which can be observed and known by others, but also with thoughts which are known only to the man himself. Who can tell whether a given act of punishment was done from a private or from a public motive? Only the agent himself. And yet if the punishment was just and within the law, we should condemn the man in the one case and approve him in the other. This pursuit of the actions of men to their very sources, in the feelings which they only can know, is as ancient as any morality we know of, and extends to the whole range of it. Injury to another man arises from anger, malice, hatred, revenge; these feelings are condemned as wrong. But feelings are not immediately under our control, in the same way that overt actions are: I can shake anybody by the hand if I like, but I cannot always feel friendly to him. Nevertheless we can pay attention to such aspects of the circumstances, and we can put ourselves into such conditions, that our feelings get gradually modified in one way or the other; we form a habit of checking our anger by calling up certain images and considerations, whereby in time the offending passion is brought into subjection and control. Accordingly we say that it is right to acquire and to exercise this control; and the control is supposed to exist whenever we say that one feeling or disposition of mind is right and another wrong. Thus, in connection with the precept against stealing, we condemn envy and covetousness; we applaud a

sensitive honesty which shudders at anything underhand or dishonourable. In connection with the rough precept against lying, we have built up and are still building a great fabric of intellectual morality, whereby a man is forbidden to tell lies to himself, and is commanded to practise candour and fairness and open-mindedness in his judgments, and to labour zealously in pursuit of the truth. And in connection with the duty to our families, we say that it is right to cultivate public spirit, a quick sense of sympathy, and all that belongs to a social disposition.

Two other words are used in this connection which it seems necessary to mention. When we regard an action as right or wrong for ourselves, this feeling about the action impels us to do it or not to do it, as the case may be. We may say that the moral sense acts in this case as a motive; meaning by moral sense only the feeling in regard to an action which is considered as right or wrong, and by motive something which impels us to act. Of course there may be other motives at work at the same time, and it does not at all follow that we shall do the right action or abstain from the wrong one. This we all know to our cost. But still our feeling about the rightness or wrongness of an action does operate as a motive when we think of the action as being done by us; and when so operating it is called *conscience.* I have nothing to do at present with the questions about conscience, whether it is a result of education, whether it can be explained by self-love, and so forth; I am only concerned in describing well-known facts, and in getting as clear as I can about the meaning of well-known words. Conscience, then, is the whole aggregate of our feelings about actions as being right or wrong, regarded as tending to make us do the right actions and avoid the wrong ones. We also say sometimes, in answer to the question, "How do you know that this is right or wrong?" "My conscience tells me so." And this way of speaking is quite analogous to other expressions of the same form; thus if I put my hand into water, and you ask me how I know that it is hot, I might say, "My feeling of warmth tells me so."

When we consider a right or a wrong action as done by another person, we think of that person as worthy of moral

approbation or reprobation. He may be punished or not; but in any case this feeling towards him is quite different from the feeling of dislike towards a person injurious to us, or of disappointment at a machine which will not go.

Whenever we can morally approve or disapprove a man for his action, we say that he is morally responsible for it, and *vice versâ*. To say that a man is not morally responsible for his actions is the same thing as to say that it would be unreasonable to praise or blame him for them.

The statement that we ourselves are morally responsible is somewhat more complicated, but the meaning is very easily made out; namely, that another person may reasonably regard our actions as right or wrong, and may praise or blame us for them.

We can now, I suppose, understand one another pretty clearly in using the words right and wrong, conscience, responsibility; and we have made a rapid survey of the facts of the case in our own country at the present time. Of course I do not pretend that this survey in any way approaches to completeness; but it will supply us at least with enough facts to enable us to deal always with concrete examples instead of remaining in generalities; and it may serve to show pretty fairly what the moral sense of an Englishman is like. We must next consider what account we can give of these facts by the scientific method.

But first let us stop to note that we really have used the scientific method in making this first step; and also that to the same extent the method has been used by all serious moralists. Some would have us define virtue, to begin with, in terms of some other thing which is not virtue, and then work out from our definition all the details of what we ought to do. So Plato said that virtue was knowledge, Aristotle that it was the golden mean, and Bentham said that the right action was that which conduced to the greatest happiness of the greatest number. But so also, in physical speculations, Thales said that everything was Water, and Heraclitus said it was All-becoming, and Empedocles said it was made out of Four Elements, and Pythagoras said it was Number. But we only began to know about things when people looked straight at the facts, and made what they could out of them; and that is the only way in which we can know anything about

right and wrong. Moreover, it is the way in which the great moralists have set to work, when they came to treat of verifiable things and not of theories all in the air. A great many people think of a prophet as a man who, all by himself, or from some secret source, gets the belief that this thing is right and that thing wrong. And then (they imagine) he gets up and goes about persuading other people to feel as he does about it; and so it becomes a part of their conscience, and a new duty is created. This may be in some cases, but I have never met with any example of it in history. When Socrates puzzled the Greeks by asking them what they precisely meant by Goodness and Justice and Virtue, the mere existence of the words shows that the people, as a whole, possessed a moral sense, and felt that certain things were right and others wrong. What the moralist did was to show the connection between different virtues, the likeness of virtue to certain other things, the implications which a thoughtful man could find in the common language. Wherever the Greek moral sense had come from, it was there in the people before it could be enforced by a prophet or discussed by a philosopher. Again, we find a wonderful collection of moral aphorisms in those shrewd sayings of the Jewish fathers which are preserved in the Mishna or oral law. Some of this teaching is familiar to us all from the popular exposition of it which is contained in the three first Gospels. But the very plainness and homeliness of the precepts shows that they are just acute statements of what was already felt by the popular common sense; protesting, in many cases, against the formalism of the ceremonial law with which they are curiously mixed up. The Rabbis even show a jealousy of prophetic interference, as if they knew well that it takes not one man, but many men, to feel what is right. When a certain Rabbi Eliezer, being worsted in argument, cried out, "If I am right, let heaven pronounce in my favour!" there was heard a Bath-kol or voice from the skies, saying, "Do you venture to dispute with Rabbi Eliezer, who is an authority on all religious questions?" But Rabbi Joshua rose and said, "Our law is not in heaven, but in the book which dates from Sinai, and which teaches us that in matters of discussion the majority makes the law."[1]

[1] Treatise Baba Bathra, 59 *b*. I derive this story and reference from a most

One of the most important expressions of the moral sense for all time is that of the Stoic philosophy, especially after its reception among the Romans. It is here that we find the enthusiasm of humanity—the *caritas generis humani*—which is so large and important a feature in all modern conceptions of morality, and whose widespread influence upon Roman citizens may be traced in the Epistles of St. Paul. In the Stoic emperors, also, we find probably the earliest example of great moral principles consciously applied to legislation on a large scale. But are we to attribute this to the individual insight of the Stoic philosophers? It might seem at first sight that we must, if we are to listen to that vulgar vituperation of the older culture which has descended to us from those who had everything to gain by its destruction.[1] We hear enough of the luxurious feasting of the Roman capital, how it would almost have taxed the resources of a modern pastrycook; of the cruelty of gladiatorial shows, how they were nearly as bad as *autos-da-fè*, except that a man had his fair chance, and was

interesting book, "*Kôl Kôre* (*Vox Clamantis*), *La Bible, le Talmud, et l'Evangile;* par le R. Elie Soloweyczyk. Paris: E. Brière. 1870."

[1] Compare these passages from Merivale (*Romans under the Empire*, vi.), to whom "it seems a duty to protest against the common tendency of Christian moralists to dwell only on the dark side of Pagan society, in order to heighten by contrast the blessings of the Gospel":—

"Much candour and discrimination are required in comparing the sins of one age with those of another . . . the cruelty of our inquisitions and sectarian persecutions, of our laws against sorcery, our serfdom and our slavery; the petty fraudulence we tolerate in almost every class and calling of the community; the bold front worn by our open sensuality; the deeper degradation of that which is concealed; all these leave us little room for boasting of our modern discipline, and must deter the thoughtful inquirer from too confidently contrasting the morals of the old world and the new."

"Even at Rome, in the worst of times . . . all the relations of life were adorned in turn with bright instances of devotion, and mankind transacted their business with an ordinary confidence in the force of conscience and right reason. The steady development of enlightened legal principles conclusively proves the general dependence upon law as a guide and corrector of manners. In the camp, however, more especially, as the chief sphere of this purifying activity, the great qualities of the Roman character continued to be plainly manifested. This history of the Cæsars presents to us a constant succession of brave, patient, resolute, and faithful soldiers, men deeply impressed with a sense of duty, superior to vanity, despisers of boasting, content to toil in obscurity and shed their blood at the frontiers of the empire, unrepining at the cold mistrust of their masters, not clamorous for the honours so sparingly awarded to them, but satisfied in the daily work of their hands, and full of faith in the national destiny which they were daily accomplishing."

not tortured for torture's sake; of the oppression of provincials by people like Verres, of whom it may even be said that if they had been the East India Company they could not have been worse; of the complaints of Tacitus against bad and mad emperors (as Sir Henry Maine says); and of the still more serious complaints of the modern historian against the excessive taxation[1] which was one great cause of the fall of the empire. Of all this we are told a great deal; but we are not told of the many thousands of honourable men who carried civilisation to the ends of the known world, and administered a mighty empire so that it was loved and worshipped to the farthest corner of it. It is to these men and their common action that we must attribute the morality which found its organised expression in the writings of the Stoic philosophers. From these three cases we may gather that Right is a thing which must be done before it can be talked about, although after that it may only too easily be talked about without being done. Individual effort and energy may insist upon getting that done which was already felt to be right; and individual insight and acumen may point out consequences of an action which bring it under previously known moral rules. There is another dispute of the Rabbis that may serve to show what is meant by this. It was forbidden by the law to have any dealings with the Sabæan idolaters during the week preceding their idolatrous feasts. But the doctors discussed the case in which one of these idolaters owes you a bill; are you to let him pay it during that week or not? The school of Shammai said "No; for he will want all his money to enjoy himself at the feast." But the school of Hillel said, "Yes, let him pay it; for how can he enjoy his feast while his bills are unpaid?" The question here is about the consequences of an action; but there is no dispute about the moral principle, which is that consideration and kindness are to be shown to idolaters, even in the matter of their idolatrous rites.

It seems, then, that we are no worse off than anybody else who has studied this subject, in finding our materials ready made for us; sufficiently definite meanings given in the common speech to the words right and wrong, good and bad, with which we have to deal; a fair body of facts familiarly known,

[1] Finlay, *Greece under the Romans.*

which we have to organise and account for as best we can. But our special inquiry is, what account can be given of these facts by the scientific method? to which end we cannot do better than fix our ideas as well as we can upon the character and scope of that method.

Now the scientific method is a method of getting knowledge by inference, and that of two different kinds. One kind of inference is that which is used in the physical and natural sciences, and it enables us to go from known phenomena to unknown phenomena. Because a stone is heavy in the morning, I infer that it will be heavy in the afternoon; and I infer this by assuming a certain uniformity of nature. The sort of uniformity that I assume depends upon the extent of my scientific education; the rules of inference become more and more definite as we go on. At first I might assume that all things are always alike; this would not be true, but it has to be assumed in a vague way, in order that a thing may have the same name at different times. Afterwards I get the more definite belief that certain particular qualities, like weight, have nothing to do with the time of day; and subsequently I find that weight has nothing to do with the shape of the stone, but only with the quantity of it. The uniformity which we assume, then, is not that vague one that we started with, but a chastened and corrected uniformity. I might go on to suppose, for example, that the weight of the stone had nothing to do with the place where it was; and a great deal might be said for this supposition. It would, however, have to be corrected when it was found that the weight varies slightly in different latitudes. On the other hand, I should find that this variation was just the same for my stone as for a piece of iron or wood; that it had nothing to do with the kind of matter. And so I might be led to the conclusion that all matter is heavy, and that the weight of it depends only on its quantity and its position relative to the earth. You see here that I go on arriving at conclusions always of this form; that some one circumstance or quality has nothing to do with some other circumstance or quality. I begin by assuming that it is independent of everything; I end by finding that it is independent of some definite things. That is, I begin by assuming a vague uniformity. I always use this assumption to infer from

some one fact a great number of other facts; but as my education proceeds, I get to know what sort of things may be inferred and what may not. An observer of scientific mind takes note of just those things from which inferences may be drawn, and passes by the rest. If an astronomer, observing the sun, were to record the fact that at the moment when a sun spot began to shrink there was a rap at his front door, we should know that he was not up to his work. But if he records that sun-spots are thickest every eleven years, and that this is also the period of extra cloudiness in Jupiter, the observation may or may not be confirmed, and it may or may not lead to inferences of importance; but still it is the kind of thing from which inferences may be drawn. There is always a certain instinct among instructed people which tells them in this way what kinds of inferences may be drawn; and this is the unconscious effect of the definite uniformity which they have been led to assume in nature. It may subsequently be organised into a law or general truth, and no doubt becomes a surer guide by that process. Then it goes to form the more precise instinct of the next generation.

What we have said about this first kind of inference, which goes from phenomena to phenomena, is shortly this. It proceeds upon an assumption of uniformity in nature; and this assumption is not fixed and made once for all, but is a changing and growing thing, becoming more definite as we go on.

If I were told to pick out some one character which especially colours this guiding conception of uniformity in our present stage of science, I should certainly reply, Atomism. The form of this with which we are most familiar is the molecular theory of bodies; which represents all bodies as made up of small elements of uniform character, each practically having relations only with the adjacent ones, and these relations the same all through—namely, some simple mechanical action upon each other's motions. But this is only a particular case. A palace, a cottage, the tunnel of the underground railway, and a factory chimney, are all built of bricks; the bricks are alike in all these cases, each brick is practically related only to the adjacent ones, and the relation is throughout the same, namely, two flat sides are stuck together with

mortar. There is an atomism in the sciences of number, of quantity, of space; the theorems of geometry are groupings of individual points, each related only to the adjacent ones by certain definite laws. But what concerns us chiefly at present is the atomism of human physiology. Just as every solid is built up of molecules, so the nervous system is built up of nerve-threads and nerve-corpuscles. We owe to Mr. Lewes our very best thanks for the stress which he has laid on the doctrine that nerve-fibre is uniform in structure and function, and for the word *neurility*, which expresses its common properties. And similar gratitude is due to Dr. Hughlings Jackson for his long defence of the proposition that the element of nervous structure and function is a sensori-motor process. In structure, this is two fibres or bundles of fibres going to the same gray corpuscle; in function it is a message travelling up one fibre or bundle to the corpuscle, and then down the other fibre or bundle.[1] Out of this, as a brick, the house of our life is built. All these simple elementary processes are alike, and each is practically related only to the adjacent ones; the relation being in all cases of the same kind, viz. the passage from a simple to a complex message, or *vice versâ*.

The result of atomism in any form, dealing with any subject, is that the principle of uniformity is hunted down into the elements of things; it is resolved into the uniformity of these elements or atoms, and of the relations of those which are next to each other. By an element or an atom we do not here mean something absolutely simple or indivisible, for a molecule, a brick, and a nerve-process are all very complex things. We only mean that, for the purpose in hand, the properties of the still more complex thing which is made of them have nothing to do with the complexities or the differences of these elements. The solid made of molecules, the house made of bricks, the nervous system made of sensori-motor processes, are nothing more than collections of these practically uniform elements, having certain relations of nextness, and behaviour uniformly depending on that nextness.

The inference of phenomena from phenomena, then, is

[1] Mr. Herbert Spencer had assigned a slightly different element.—*Principles of Psychology*, vol. i. p. 28.

based upon an assumption of uniformity, which in the present stage of science may be called an atomic uniformity.

The other mode of inference which belongs to the scientific method is that which is used in what are called the mental and moral sciences; and it enables us to go from phenomena to the facts which underlie phenomena, and which are themselves not phenomena at all. If I pinch your arm, and you draw it away and make a face, I infer that you have felt pain. I infer this by assuming that you have a consciousness similar to my own, and related to your perception of your body as my consciousness is related to my perception of my body. Now is this the same assumption as before, a mere assumption of the uniformity of nature? It certainly seems like it at first; but if we think about it we shall find that there is a very profound difference between them. In physical inference I go from phenomena to phenomena; that is, from the knowledge of certain appearances or representations actually present to my mind I infer certain other appearances that might be present to my mind. From the weight of a stone in the morning—that is, from my feeling of its weight, or my perception of the process of weighing it, I infer that the stone will be heavy in the afternoon—that is, I infer the possibility of similar feelings and perceptions in me at another time. The whole process relates to me and my perceptions, to things contained in my mind. But when I infer that you are conscious from what you say or do, I pass from that which is *my* feeling or perception, which is in my mind and part of me, to that which is not my feeling at all, which is outside me altogether, namely, *your* feelings and perceptions. Now there is no possible physical inference, no inference of phenomena from phenomena, that will help me over that gulf. I am obliged to admit that this second kind of inference depends upon another assumption, not included in the assumption of the uniformity of phenomena.

How does a dream differ from waking life? In a fairly coherent dream everything seems quite real, and it is rare, I think, with most people to know in a dream that they are dreaming. Now, if a dream is sufficiently vivid and coherent, all physical inferences are just as valid in it as they are in waking life. In a hazy or imperfect dream, it is true, things

melt into one another unexpectedly and unaccountably; we fly, remove mountains, and stop runaway horses with a finger. But there is nothing in the mere nature of a dream to hinder it from being an exact copy of waking experience. If I find a stone heavy in one part of my dream, and infer that it is heavy at some subsequent part, the inference will be verified if the dream is coherent enough; I shall go to the stone, lift it up, and find it as heavy as before. And the same thing is true of all inferences of phenomena from phenomena. For physical purposes a dream is just as good as real life; the only difference is in vividness and coherence.

What, then, hinders us from saying that life is all a dream? If the phenomena we dream of are just as good and real phenomena as those we see and feel when we are awake, what right have we to say that the material universe has any more existence apart from our minds than the things we see and feel in our dreams? The answer which Berkeley gave to that question was, No right at all. The physical universe which I see, and feel, and infer, is just my dream and nothing else; that which you see is your dream; only it so happens that all our dreams agree in many respects. This doctrine of Berkeley's has now been so far confirmed by the physiology of the senses that it is no longer a metaphysical speculation, but a scientifically established fact.

But there is a difference between dreams and waking life which is of far too great importance for any of us to be in danger of neglecting it. When I see a man in my dream there is just as good a *body* as if I were awake; muscles, nerves, circulation, capability of adapting means to ends. If only the dream is coherent enough, no physical test can establish that it is a dream. In both cases I see and feel the same thing. In both cases I assume the existence of more than I can see and feel, namely, the consciousness of this other man. But now here is a great difference, and the only difference—in a dream this assumption is wrong; in waking life it is right. The man I see in my dream is a *mere* machine, a bundle of phenomena with no underlying reality; there is no consciousness involved except my consciousness, no feeling in the case except my feelings. The man I see in waking life is more than a bundle of phenomena; his body

and its actions are phenomena, but these phenomena are merely the symbols and representatives in my mind of a reality which is outside my mind, namely, the consciousness of the man himself which is represented by the working of his brain, and the simpler quasi-mental facts, not woven into his consciousness, which are represented by the working of the rest of his body. What makes life not to be a dream is the existence of those facts which we arrive at by our second process of inference; the consciousness of men and the higher animals, the sub-consciousness of lower organisms and the quasi-mental facts which go along with the motions of inanimate matter. In a book which is very largely and deservedly known by heart, *Through the Looking-glass*, there is a very instructive discussion upon this point. Alice has been taken to see the Red King as he lies snoring; and Tweedledee asks, "Do you know what he is dreaming about?" "Nobody can guess that," replies Alice. "Why, about *you*," he says triumphantly. "And if he stopped dreaming about you, where do you suppose you'd be?" "Where I am now of course," said Alice. "Not you," said Tweedledee, "you'd be nowhere. You are only a sort of thing in his dream." "If that there King was to wake," added Tweedledum, "you'd go out, bang! just like a candle." Alice was quite right in regarding these remarks as unphilosophical. The fact that she could see, think, and feel, was proof positive that she was not a sort of thing in anybody's dream. This is the meaning of that saying, *Cogito ergo sum*, of Descartes. By him, and by Spinoza after him, the verb *cogito* and the substantive *cogitatio* were used to denote consciousness in general, any kind of feeling, even what we now call sub-consciousness. The saying means that feeling exists in and for itself, not as a quality or modification or state or manifestation of anything else.

We are obliged in every hour of our lives to act upon beliefs which have been arrived at by inferences of these two kinds; inferences based on the assumption of uniformity in nature, and inferences which add to this the assumption of feelings which are not our own. By organising the "common sense" which embodies the first class of inferences, we build up the physical sciences; that is to say, all those sciences which deal with the physical, material, or phenomenal uni-

verse, whether animate or inanimate. And so by organising the common sense which embodies the second class of inferences, we build up various sciences of mind. The description and classification of feelings, the facts of their association with each other, and of their simultaneity with phenomena of nerve-action,—all this belongs to psychology, which may be historical and comparative. The doctrine of certain special classes of feelings is organised into the special sciences of those feelings; thus the facts about the feelings which we are now considering, about the feelings of moral approbation and reprobation, are organised into the science of ethics, and the facts about the feeling of beauty or ugliness are organised into the science of æsthetics, or, as it is sometimes called, the philosophy of art. For all of these the uniformity of nature has to be assumed as a basis of inference; but over and above that it is necessary to assume that other men are conscious in the same way that I am. Now in these sciences of mind, just as in the physical sciences, the uniformity which is assumed in the inferred mental facts is a growing thing which becomes more definite as we go on, and each successive generation of observers knows better what to observe and what sort of inferences may be drawn from observed things. But, moreover, it is as true of the mental sciences as of the physical ones that the uniformity is in the present stage of science an *atomic* uniformity. We have learned to regard our consciousness as made up of elements practically alike, having relations of succession in time and of contiguity at each instant, which relations are in all cases practically the same. The element of consciousness is the transference of an impression into the beginning of action. Our mental life is a structure made out of such elements, just as the working of our nervous system is made out of sensori-motor processes. And accordingly the interaction of the two branches of science leads us to regard the mental facts as the realities or things-in-themselves, of which the material phenomena are mere pictures or symbols. The final result seems to be that atomism is carried beyond phenomena into the realities which phenomena represent; and that the observed uniformities of nature, in so far as they can be expressed in the language of atomism, are actual uniformities of things in themselves.

So much for the two things which I have promised to bring together; the facts of our moral feelings, and the scientific method. It may appear that the latter has been expounded at more length than was necessary for the treatment of this particular subject; but the justification for this length is to be found in certain common objections to the claims of science to be the sole judge of mental and moral questions. Some of the chief of these objections I will now mention.

It is sometimes said that science can only deal with what is, but that art and morals deal with what ought to be. The saying is perfectly true, but it is quite consistent with what is equally true, that the facts of art and morals are fit subject-matter of science. I may describe all that I have in my house, and I may state everything that I want in my house; these are two very different things, but they are equally statements of facts. One is a statement about phenomena, about the objects which are actually in my possession; the other is a statement about my feelings, about my wants and desires. There are facts, to be got at by common sense, about the kind of thing that a man of a certain character and occupation will like to have in his house, and these facts may be organised into general statements on the assumption of uniformity in nature. Now the organised results of common sense dealing with facts are just science and nothing else. And in the same way I may say what men do at the present day, how we live now, or I may say what we ought to do, namely, what course of conduct, if adopted, we should morally approve; and no doubt these would be two very different things. But each of them would be a statement of facts. One would belong to the sociology of our time; in so far as men's deeds could not be adequately described to us without some account of their feelings and intentions, it would involve facts belonging to psychology as well as facts belonging to the physical sciences. But the other would be an account of a particular class of our feelings, namely, those which we feel towards an action when it is regarded as right or wrong. These facts may be organised by common sense on the assumption of uniformity in nature just as well as any other facts. And we shall see farther on that not only in this sense, but in a

deeper and more abstract sense, "what ought to be done" is a question for scientific inquiry.

The same objection is sometimes put into another form. It is said that laws of chemistry, for example, are general statements about what happens when bodies are treated in a certain way, and that such laws are fit matter for science; but that moral laws are different, because they tell us to do certain things, and we may or may not obey them. The mood of the one is indicative, of the other imperative. Now it is quite true that the word *law* in the expression "law of nature," and in the expressions "law of morals," "law of the land," has two totally different meanings, which no educated person will confound; and I am not aware that any one has rested the claim of science to judge moral questions on what is no better than a stale and unprofitable pun. But two different things may be equally matters of scientific investigation, even when their names are alike in sound. A telegraph post is not the same thing as a post in the War Office, and yet the same intelligence may be used to investigate the conditions of the one and the other. That such and such things are right or wrong, that such and such laws are laws of morals or laws of the land, these are facts, just as the laws of chemistry are facts; and all facts belong to science, and are her portion for ever.

Again, it is sometimes said that moral questions have been authoritatively settled by other methods; that we ought to accept this decision, and not to question it by any method of scientific inquiry; and that reason should give way to revelation on such matters. I hope before I have done to show just cause why we should pronounce on such teaching as this no light sentence of moral condemnation: first, because it is our duty to form those beliefs which are to guide our actions by the two scientific modes of inference, and by these alone; and, secondly, because the proposed mode of settling ethical questions by authority is contrary to the very nature of right and wrong.

Leaving this, then, for the present, I pass on to the most formidable objection that has been made to a scientific treatment of ethics. The objection is that the scientific method is not applicable to human action, because the rule of

uniformity does not hold good. Whenever a man exercises his will, and makes a voluntary choice of one out of various possible courses, an event occurs whose relation to contiguous events cannot be included in a general statement applicable to all similar cases. There is something wholly capricious and disorderly, belonging to that moment only; and we have no right to conclude that if the circumstances were exactly repeated, and the man himself absolutely unaltered, he would choose the same course.

It is clear that if the doctrine here stated is true, the ground is really cut from under our feet, and we cannot deal with human action by the scientific method. I shall endeavour to show, moreover, that in this case, although we might still have a feeling of moral approbation or reprobation towards actions, yet we could not reasonably praise or blame men for their deeds, nor regard them as morally responsible. So that if my contention is just, to deprive us of the scientific method is practically to deprive us of morals altogether. On both grounds, therefore, it is of the greatest importance that we should define our position in regard to this controversy; if, indeed, that can be called a controversy in which the practical belief of all mankind and the consent of nearly all serious writers are on one side.

Let us in the first place consider a little more closely the connection between conscience and responsibility. Words in common use, such as these two, have their meanings practically fixed before difficult controversies arise; but after the controversy has arisen, each party gives that slight tinge to the meaning which best suits its own view of the question. Thus it appears to each that the common language obviously supports their own view, that this is the natural and primary view of the matter, and that the opponents are using words in a new meaning and wresting them from their proper sense. Now this is just my position. I have endeavoured so far to use all words in their common everyday sense, only making this as precise as I can; and, with two exceptions, of which due warning will be given, I shall do my best to continue this practice in future. I seem to myself to be talking the most obvious platitudes; but it must be remembered that those who take the opposite view will think I am perverting the English language.

There is a common meaning of the word "responsible," which though not the same as that of the phrase "morally responsible," may throw some light upon it. If we say of a book, "A is responsible for the preface and the first half, and B is responsible for the rest," we mean that A wrote the preface and the first half. If two people go into a shop and choose a blue silk dress together, it might be said that A was responsible for its being silk and B for its being blue. Before they chose, the dress was undetermined both in colour and in material. A's choice fixed the material, and then it was undetermined only in colour. B's choice fixed the colour; and if we suppose that there were no more variable conditions (only one blue silk dress in the shop), the dress was then completely determined. In this sense of the word we say that a man is responsible for that part of an event which was undetermined when he was left out of account, and which became determined when he was taken account of. Suppose two narrow streets, one lying north and south, one east and west, and crossing one another. A man is put down where they cross, and has to walk. Then he must walk either north, south, east, or west, and he is not responsible for that; what he is responsible for is the choice of one of these four directions. May we not say in the present sense of the word that the external circumstances are responsible for the restriction on his choice? We should mean only that the fact of his going in one or other of the four directions was due to external circumstances and not to him. Again, suppose I have a number of punches of various shapes, some square, some oblong, some oval, some round, and that I am going to punch a hole in a piece of paper. *Where* I shall punch the hole may be fixed by any kind of circumstances; but the shape of the hole depends on the punch I take. May we not say that the punch is respon sible for the shape of the hole, but not for the position of it?

It may be said that this is not the whole of the meaning of the word "responsible," even in its loosest sense; that it ought never to be used except of a conscious agent. Still this is part of its meaning; if we regard an event as determined by a variety of circumstances, a man's choice being among them, we say that he is responsible for just that choice which is left him by the other circumstances.

When we ask the practical question, "Who is responsible for so-and-so?" we want to find out who is to be got at in order that so-and-so may be altered. If I want to change the shape of the hole I make in my paper, I must change my punch; but this will be of no use if I want to change the position of the hole. If I want the colour of the dress changed from blue to green, it is B, and not A, that I must persuade.

We mean something more than this when we say that a man is *morally* responsible for an action. It seems to me that moral responsibility and conscience go together, both in regard to the man and in regard to the action. In order that a man may be morally responsible for an action, the man must have a conscience, and the action must be one in regard to which conscience is capable of acting as a motive, that is, the action must be capable of being right or wrong. If a child were left on a desert island and grew up wholly without a conscience, and then were brought among men, he would not be morally responsible for his actions until he had acquired a conscience by education. He would of course be *responsible*, in the sense just explained, for that part of them which was left undetermined by external circumstances, and if we wanted to alter his actions in these respects we should have to do it by altering him. But it would be useless and unreasonable to attempt to do this by means of praise or blame, the expression of moral approbation or disapprobation, until he had acquired a conscience which could be worked upon by such means.

It seems, then, that in order that a man may be morally responsible for an action, three things are necessary:—

1. He might have done something else; that is to say, the action was not wholly determined by external circumstances, and he is responsible only for the choice which was left him.

2. He had a conscience.

3. The action was one in regard to the doing or not doing of which conscience might be a sufficient motive.

These three things are necessary, but it does not follow that they are sufficient. It is very commonly said that the action must be a *voluntary* one. It will be found, I think, that this is contained in my third condition, and also that the form of statement I have adopted exhibits more clearly the

reason why the condition is necessary. We may say that an action is involuntary either when it is instinctive, or when one motive is so strong that there is no voluntary choice between motives. An involuntary cough produced by irritation of the glottis is no proper subject for blame or praise. A man is not responsible for it, because it is done by a part of his body without consulting *him*. What is meant by *him* in this case will require further investigation. Again, when a dipsomaniac has so great and overmastering an inclination to drink that we cannot conceive of conscience being strong enough to conquer it, he is not responsible for that act, though he may be responsible for having got himself into the state. But if it is conceivable that a very strong conscience fully brought to bear might succeed in conquering the inclination, we may take a lenient view of the fall and say there was a very strong temptation, but we shall still regard it as a fall, and say that the man is responsible and a wrong has been done.[1]

But since it is just in this distinction between voluntary and involuntary action that the whole *crux* of the matter lies, let us examine more closely into it. I say that when I cough or sneeze involuntarily, it is really not I that cough or sneeze, but a part of my body which acts without consulting me. This action is determined for me by the circumstances, and is not part of the choice that is left to me, so that I am not responsible for it. The question comes then to determining how much is to be called *circumstances*, and how much is to be called *me*.

Now I want to describe what happens when I voluntarily do anything, and there are two courses open to me. I may describe the things in themselves, my feelings and the general course of my consciousness, trusting to the analogy between my consciousness and yours to make me understood; or I may describe these things as nature describes them to your senses, namely, in terms of the phenomena of my nervous system, appealing to your memory of phenomena and your knowledge of physical action. I shall do both, because in

[1] [It seems worth noting that this very closely coincides with the doctrine of modern English law on the question when and how far insanity excludes criminal responsibility.]

some respects our knowledge is more complete from the one source, and in some respects from the other. When I look back and reflect upon a voluntary action, I seem to find that it differs from an involuntary action in the fact that a certain portion of my character has been consulted. There is always a suggestion of some sort, either the end of a train of thought or a new sensation; and there is an action ensuing, either the movement of a muscle or set of muscles, or the fixing of attention upon something. But between these two there is a consultation, as it were, of my past history. The suggestion is viewed in the light of everything bearing on it that I think of at the time, and in virtue of this light it moves me to act in one or more ways. Let us first suppose that no hesitation is involved, that only one way of acting is suggested, and I yield to this impulse and act in the particular way. This is the simplest kind of voluntary action. It differs from involuntary or instinctive action in the fact that with the latter there is no such conscious consultation of past history. If we describe these facts in terms of the phenomena which picture them to other minds, we shall say that in involuntary action a message passes straight through from the sensory to the motor centre, and so on to the muscles, without consulting the cerebrum; while in voluntary action the message is passed on from the sensory centre to the cerebrum, there translated into appropriate motor stimuli, carried down to the motor centre, and so on to the muscles. There may be other differences, but at least there is this difference. Now on the physical side that which determines what groups of cerebral fibres shall be set at work by the given message, and what groups of motor stimuli shall be set at work by these, is the mechanism of my brain at the time; and on the mental side that which determines what memories shall be called up by the given sensation, and what motives these memories shall bring into action, is my mental character. We may say, then, in this simplest case of voluntary action, that when the suggestion is given it is the character of *me* which determines the character of the ensuing action; and consequently that I am responsible for choosing that particular course out of those which were left open to me by the external circumstances.

This is when I yield to the impulse. But suppose I do

not; suppose that the original suggestion, viewed in the light of memory, sets various motives in action, each motive belonging to a certain class of things which I remember. Then I choose which of these motives shall prevail. Those who carefully watch themselves find out that a particular motive is made to prevail by the fixing of the attention upon that class of remembered things which calls up the motive. The physical side of this is the sending of blood to a certain set of nerves—namely, those whose action corresponds to the memories which are to be attended to. The sending of blood is accomplished by the pinching of arteries; and there are special nerves, called vaso-motor nerves, whose business it is to carry messages to the walls of the arteries and get them pinched. Now this act of directing the attention may be voluntary or involuntary, just like any other act. When the transformed and reinforced nerve-message gets to the vaso-motor centre, some part of it may be so predominant that a message goes straight off to the arteries, and sends a quantity of blood to the nerves supplying that part; or the call for blood may be sent back for revision by the cerebrum, which is thus again consulted. To say the same thing in terms of my feelings, a particular class of memories roused by the original suggestion may seize upon my attention before I have time to choose what I will attend to; or the appeal may be carried to a deeper part of my character dealing with wider and more abstract conceptions, which views the conflicting motives in the light of a past experience of motives, and by that light is drawn to one or the other of them.

We thus get to a sort of motive of the second order or motive of motives. Is there any reason why we should not go on to a motive of the third order, and the fourth, and so on? None whatever that I know of, except that no one has ever observed such a thing. There seems plenty of room for the requisite mechanism on the physical side; and no one can say, on the mental side, how complex is the working of his consciousness. But we must carefully distinguish between the intellectual deliberation about motives, which applies to the future and the past, and the practical choice of motives in the moment of will. The former may be a train of any length

and complexity: we have no reason to believe that the latter is more than engine and tender.

We are now in a position to classify actions in respect of the kind of responsibility which belongs to them; namely we have—

1. Involuntary or instinctive actions.
2. Voluntary actions in which the choice of motives is involuntary.
3. Voluntary actions in which the choice of motives is voluntary.

In each of these cases what is responsible is that part of my character which determines what the action shall be. For instinctive actions we do not say that *I* am responsible, because the choice is made before I know anything about it. For voluntary actions I am responsible, because I make the choice; that is, the character of me is what determines the character of the action. In *me*, then, for this purpose, is included the aggregate of links of association which determines what memories shall be called up by a given suggestion, and what motives shall be set at work by these memories. But we distinguish this mass of passions and pleasures, desire and knowledge and pain, which makes up most of my character at the moment, from that inner and deeper motive-choosing self which is called Reason, and the Will, and the Ego; which is only responsible when motives are voluntarily chosen by directing attention to them. It is responsible only for the choice of one motive out of those presented to it, not for the nature of the motives which are presented.

But again, I may reasonably be blamed for what I did yesterday, or a week ago, or last year. This is because I am permanent; in so far as from my actions of that date an inference may be drawn about my character now, it is reasonable that I should be treated as praiseworthy or blameable. And within certain limits I am for the same reason responsible for what I am now, because within certain limits I have made myself. Even instinctive actions are dependent in many cases upon habits which may be altered by proper attention and care; and still more the nature of the connections between sensation and action, the associations of memory and motive, may be voluntarily modified if I choose to try. The habit of

choosing among motives is one which may be acquired and strengthened by practice, and the strength of particular motives, by continually directing attention to them, may be almost indefinitely increased or diminished. Thus, if by *me* is meant not the instantaneous me of this moment, but the aggregate me of my past life, or even of the last year, the range of my responsibility is very largely increased. I am responsible for a very large portion of the circumstances which are now external to me; that is to say, I am responsible for certain of the restrictions on my own freedom. As the eagle was shot with an arrow that flew on its own feather, so I find myself bound with fetters of my proper forging.

Let us now endeavour to conceive an action which is not determined in any way by the character of the agent. If we ask, "What makes it to be that action and no other?" we are told, "The man's Ego." The words are here used, it seems to me, in some non-natural sense, if in any sense at all. One thing makes another to be what it is when the characters of the two things are connected together by some general statement or rule. But we have to suppose that the character of the action is not connected with the character of the Ego by any general statement or rule. With the same Ego and the same circumstances of all kinds, anything within the limits imposed by the circumstances may happen at any moment. I find myself unable to conceive any distinct sense in which responsibility could apply in this case; nor do I see at all how it would be reasonable to use praise or blame. If the action does not depend on the character, what is the use of trying to alter the character? Suppose, however, that this indeterminateness is only partial; that the character does add some restrictions to those already imposed by circumstances, but leaves the choice between certain actions undetermined, and to be settled by chance or the transcendental Ego. Is it not clear that the man would be responsible for precisely that part of the character of the action which was determined by his character, and not for what was left undetermined by it? For it is just that part which was determined by his character which it is reasonable to try to alter by altering him.

We who believe in uniformity are not the only people unable to conceive responsibility without it. These are

the words of Sir W. Hamilton, as quoted by Mr. J. S. Mill :—[1]

"Nay, were we even to admit as true what we cannot think as possible, still the doctrine of a motiveless volition would be only casualism; and the free acts of an indifferent are, morally and rationally, as worthless as the pre-ordered passions of a determined will."

"That, though inconceivable, a motiveless volition would, if conceived, be conceived as morally worthless, only shows our impotence more clearly."

"Is the person an *original undetermined* cause of the determination of his will? If he be not, then he is not a *free agent*, and the scheme of Necessity is admitted. If he be, in the first place, it is impossible to *conceive* the possibility of this; and in the second, if the fact, though inconceivable, be allowed, it is impossible to see how a cause, undetermined by any motive, can be a rational, moral, and accountable cause."

It is true that Hamilton also says that the scheme of necessity is inconceivable, because it leads to an infinite non-commencement; and that "the possibility of morality depends on the possibility of liberty; for if a man be not a free agent, he is not the author of his actions, and has therefore no responsibility—no moral personality at all."

I know nothing about necessity; I only believe that nature is practically uniform even in human action. I know nothing about an infinitely distant past; I only know that I ought to base on uniformity those inferences which are to guide my actions. But that man is a free agent appears to me obvious, and that in the natural sense of the words. We need ask for no better definition than Kant's :—

"Will is a kind of causality belonging to living agents, in so far as they are rational; and freedom is such a property of that causality as enables them to be efficient agents independently of outside causes determining them; as, on the other hand, necessity (*Naturnothwendigkeit*) is that property of all irrational beings which consists in their being determined to activity by the influence of outside causes." [2]

I believe that I am a free agent when my actions are

[1] *Examination*, p. 495, 2d ed.
[2] *Metaphysics of Ethics*, chap. iii.

independent of the control of circumstances outside me; and it seems a misuse of language to call me a free agent if my actions are determined by a transcendental Ego who is independent of the circumstances inside me—that is to say, of my character. The expression "free will" has unfortunately been imported into mental science from a theological controversy rather different from the one we are now considering. It is surely too much to expect that good and serviceable English words should be sacrificed to a phantom.

In an admirable book, *The Methods of Ethics*, Mr. Henry Sidgwick has stated, with supreme fairness and impartiality, both sides of this question. After setting forth the "almost overwhelming cumulative proof" of uniformity in human action, he says that it seems "more than balanced by a single argument on the other side: the immediate affirmation of consciousness in the moment of deliberate volition." "No amount of experience of the sway of motives ever tends to make me distrust my intuitive consciousness that in resolving, after deliberation, I exercise free choice as to which of the motives acting upon me shall prevail."

The only answer to this argument is that it is not "on the other side." There is no doubt about the deliverance of consciousness; and even if our powers of self-observation had not been acute enough to discover it, the existence of some choice between motives would be proved by the existence of vaso-motor nerves. But perhaps the most instructive way of meeting arguments of this kind is to inquire what consciousness ought to say in order that its deliverances may be of any use in the controversy. It is affirmed, on the side of uniformity, that the feelings in my consciousness in the moment of voluntary choice have been preceded by facts out of my consciousness which are related to them in a uniform manner, so that if the previous facts had been accurately known the voluntary choice might have been predicted. On the other side this is denied. To be of any use in the controversy, then, the immediate deliverance of my consciousness must be competent to assure me of the non-existence of something which by hypothesis is not in my consciousness. Given an absolutely dark room, can my sense of sight assure me that there is no one but myself in it? Can my sense of hearing

assure me that nothing inaudible is going on? As little can the immediate deliverance of my consciousness assure me that the uniformity of nature does not apply to human actions.

It is perhaps necessary, in connection with this question, to refer to that singular Materialism of high authority and recent date which makes consciousness a physical agent, "correlates" it with Light and Nerve-force, and so reduces it to an objective phenomenon. This doctrine is founded on a common and very useful mode of speech, in which we say, for example, that a good fire is a source of pleasure on a cold day, and that a man's feeling of chill may make him run to it. But so also we say that the sun rises and sets every morning and night, although the man in the moon sees clearly that this is due to the rotation of the earth. One cannot be pedantic all day. But if we choose for once to be pedantic, the matter is after all very simple. Suppose that I am made to run by feeling a chill. When I begin to move my leg, I may observe if I like a double series of facts. I have the feeling of effort, the sensation of motion in my leg; I feel the pressure of my foot on the ground. Along with this I may see with my eyes, or feel with my hands, the motion of my leg as a material object. The first series of facts belongs to me alone; the second may be equally observed by anybody else. The mental series began first; I willed to move my leg before I saw it move. But when I know more about the matter, I can trace the material series farther back, and find nerve-messages going to the muscles of my leg to make it move. But I had a feeling of chill before I chose to move my leg. Accordingly, I can find nerve-messages, excited by the contraction due to the low temperature, going to my brain from the chilled skin. Assuming the uniformity of nature, I carry forward and backward both the mental and the material series. A uniformity is observed in each, and a parallelism is observed between them, whenever observations can be made. But sometimes one series is known better, and sometimes the other; so that in telling a story we quite naturally speak sometimes of mental facts and sometimes of material facts. A feeling of chill made a man run; strictly speaking, the nervous disturbance which coexisted with that feeling of chill made him run, if we want to talk about material facts; or the feeling of chill

produced the form of sub-consciousness which coexists with the motion of legs, if we want to talk about mental facts. But we know nothing about the special nervous disturbance which coexists with a feeling of chill, because it has not yet been localised in the brain; and we know nothing about the form of sub-consciousness which coexists with the motion of legs; although there is very good reason for believing in the existence of both. So we talk about the feeling of chill and the running, because in one case we know the mental side, and in the other the material side. A man might show me a picture of the battle of Gravelotte, and say, "You can't see the battle, because it's all over, but there is a picture of it." And then he might put a chassepot into my hand, and say, "We could not represent the whole construction of a chassepot in the picture, but you can examine this one, and find it out." If I now insisted on mixing up the two modes of communication of knowledge, if I expected that the chassepots in the picture would go off, and said that the one in my hand was painted on heavy canvas, I should be acting exactly in the spirit of the new materialism. For the material facts are a representation or symbol of the mental facts, just as a picture is a representation or symbol of a battle. And my own mind is a reality from which I can judge by analogy of the realities represented by other men's brains, just as the chassepot in my hand is a reality from which I can judge by analogy of the chassepots represented in the picture. When, therefore, we ask, "What is the physical link between the ingoing message from chilled skin and the outgoing message which moves the leg?" and the answer is, "A man's Will," we have as much right to be amused as if we had asked our friend with the picture what pigment was used in painting the cannon in the foreground, and received the answer, "Wrought iron." It will be found excellent practice in the mental operations required by this doctrine to imagine a train, the forepart of which is an engine and three carriages linked with iron couplings, and the hind part three other carriages linked with iron couplings; the bond between the two parts being made out of the sentiments of amity subsisting between the stoker and the guard.

To sum up: the uniformity of nature in human actions

has been denied on the ground that it takes away responsibility, that it is contradicted by the testimony of consciousness, and that there is a physical correlation between mind and matter. We have replied that the uniformity of nature is necessary to responsibility, that it is affirmed by the testimony of consciousness whenever consciousness is competent to testify, and that matter is the phenomenon or symbol of which mind or quasi-mind is the symbolised and represented thing. We are now free to continue our inquiries on the supposition that nature is uniform.

We began by describing the moral sense of an Englishman. No doubt the description would serve very well for the more civilised nations of Europe; most closely for Germans and Dutch. But the fact that we can speak in this way discloses that there is more than one moral sense, and that what I feel to be right another man may feel to be wrong. Thus we cannot help asking whether there is any reason for preferring one moral sense to another; whether the question, "What is right to do?" has in any one set of circumstances a single answer which can be definitely known.

Clearly, in the first rough sense of the word, this is not true. What is right for me to do now, seeing that I am here with a certain character, and a certain moral sense as part of it, is just what I feel to be right. The individual conscience is, in the moment of volition, the only possible judge of what is right; there is no conflicting claim. But if we are deliberating about the future, we know that we can modify our conscience gradually by associating with people, reading certain books, and paying attention to certain ideas and feelings; and we may ask ourselves, "How shall we modify our conscience, if at all? what kind of conscience shall we try to get? what is the *best* conscience?" We may ask similar questions about our sense of taste. There is no doubt at present that the nicest things to me are the things I like; but I know that I can train myself to like some things and dislike others, and that things which are very nasty at one time may come to be great delicacies at another. I may ask, "How shall I train myself? What is the *best* taste?" And this leads very naturally to putting the question in another form, namely, "What is taste good for? What is the *purpose*

or *function* of taste?" We should probably find as the answer to that question that the purpose or function of taste is to discriminate wholesome food from unwholesome; that it is a matter of stomach and digestion. It will follow from this that the best taste is that which prefers wholesome food, and that by cultivating a preference for wholesome and nutritious things I shall be training my palate in the way it should go. In just the same way our question about the best conscience will resolve itself into a question about the purpose or function of the conscience—why we have got it, and what it is good for.

Now to my mind the simplest and clearest and most profound philosophy that was ever written upon this subject is to be found in the 2d and 3d chapters of Mr. Darwin's *Descent of Man.* In these chapters it appears that just as most physical characteristics of organisms have been evolved and preserved because they were useful to the individual in the struggle for existence against other individuals and other species, so this particular feeling has been evolved and preserved because it is useful to the tribe or community in the struggle for existence against other tribes, and against the environment as a whole. The function of conscience is the preservation of the tribe as a tribe. And we shall rightly train our consciences if we learn to approve those actions which tend to the advantage of the community in the struggle for existence.

There are here some words, however, which require careful definition. And first the word *purpose.* A thing serves a purpose when it is adapted to some end; thus a corkscrew is adapted to the end of extracting corks from bottles, and our lungs are adapted to the end of respiration. We may say that the extraction of corks is the purpose of the corkscrew, and that respiration is the purpose of the lungs. But here we shall have used the word in two different senses. A man made the corkscrew with a purpose in his mind, and he knew and intended that it should be used for pulling out corks. But nobody made our lungs with a purpose in his mind, and intended that they should be used for breathing. The respiratory apparatus was adapted to its purpose by natural selection —namely, by the gradual preservation of better and better

adaptations, and the killing off of the worse and imperfect adaptations. In using the word purpose for the result of this unconscious process of adaptation by survival of the fittest, I know that I am somewhat extending its ordinary sense, which implies consciousness. But it seems to me that on the score of convenience there is a great deal to be said for this extension of meaning. We want a word to express the adaptation of means to an end, whether involving consciousness or not; the word purpose will do very well, and the adjective *purposive* has already been used in this sense. But if the use is admitted, we must distinguish two kinds of purpose. There is the unconscious purpose which is attained by natural selection, in which no consciousness need be concerned; and there is the conscious purpose of an intelligence which designs a thing that it may serve to do something which he desires to be done. The distinguishing mark of this second kind, design or conscious purpose, is that in the consciousness of the agent there is an image or symbol of the end which he desires, and this precedes and determines the use of the means. Thus the man who first invented a corkscrew must have previously known that corks were in bottles, and have desired to get them out. We may describe this if we like in terms of matter, and say that a purpose of the second kind implies a complex nervous system, in which there can be formed an image or symbol of the end, and that this symbol determines the use of the means. The nervous image or symbol of anything is that mode of working of part of my brain which goes on simultaneously and is correlated with my thinking of the thing.

Aristotle defines an organism as that in which the part exists for the sake of the whole. It is not that the existence of the part depends on the existence of the whole, for every whole exists only as an aggregate of parts related in a certain way; but that the shape and nature of the part are determined by the wants of the whole. Thus the shape and nature of my foot are what they are, not for the sake of my foot itself, but for the sake of my whole body, and because it wants to move about. That which the part has to do for the whole is called its function. Thus the function of my foot is to support me, and assist in locomotion. Not all the nature of

the part is necessarily for the sake of the whole: the comparative callosity of the skin of my sole is for the protection of my foot itself.

Society is an organism, and man in society is part of an organism according to this definition, in so far as some portion of the nature of man is what it is for the sake of the whole—society. Now conscience is such a portion of the nature of man, and its function is the preservation of society in the struggle for existence. We may be able to define this function more closely when we know more about the way in which conscience tends to preserve society.

Next let us endeavour to make precise the meaning of the words *community* and *society*. It is clear that at different times men may be divided into groups of greater or less extent—tribes, clans, families, nations, towns. If a certain number of clans are struggling for existence, that portion of the conscience will be developed which tends to the preservation of the clan; so, if towns or families are struggling, we shall get a moral sense adapted to the advantage of the town or the family. In this way different portions of the moral sense may be developed at different stages of progress. Now it is clear that for the purpose of the conscience the word community at any time will mean a group of that size and nature which is being selected or not selected for survival as a whole. Selection may be going on at the same time among many different kinds of groups. And ultimately the moral sense will be composed of various portions relating to various groups, the function or purpose of each portion being the advantage of that group to which it relates in the struggle for existence. Thus we have a sense of family duty, of municipal duty, of national duty, and of duties towards all mankind.

It is to be noticed that part of the nature of a smaller group may be what it is for the sake of a larger group to which it belongs; and then we may speak of the *function* of the smaller group. Thus it appears probable that the family, in the form in which it now exists among us, is determined by the good of the nation; and we may say that the function of the family is to promote the advantage of the nation or larger society in some certain ways. But I do not think it would be right to follow Auguste Comte in speaking of the

function of humanity; because humanity is obviously not a part of any larger organism for whose sake it is what it is.

Now that we have cleared up the meanings of some of our words, we are still a great way from the definite solution of our question, "What is the best conscience? or what ought I to think right?" For we do not yet know what is for the advantage of the community in the struggle for existence. If we choose to learn by the analogy of an individual organism, we may see that no permanent or final answer can be given, because the organism grows in consequence of the struggle, and develops new wants while it is satisfying the old ones. But at any given time it has quite enough to do to keep alive and to avoid dangers and diseases. So we may expect that the wants and even the necessities of the social organism will grow with its growth, and that it is impossible to predict what may tend in the distant future to its advantage in the struggle for existence. But still, in this vague and general statement of the functions of conscience, we shall find that we have already established a great deal.

In the first place, right is an affair of the community, and must not be referred to anything else. To go back to our analogy of taste: if I tried to persuade you that the best palate was that which preferred things pretty to look at, you might condemn me *à priori* without any experience, by merely knowing that taste is an affair of stomach and digestion—that its function is to select wholesome food. And so, if any one tries to persuade us that the best conscience is that which thinks it right to obey the will of some individual, as a deity or a monarch, he is condemned *à priori* in the very nature of right and wrong. In order that the worship of a deity may be consistent with natural ethics, he must be regarded as the friend and helper of humanity, and his character must be judged from his actions by a moral standard which is independent of him. And this, it must be admitted, is the position which has been taken by most English divines, as long as they were Englishmen first and divines afterwards. The worship of a deity who is represented as unfair or unfriendly to any portion of the community is a wrong thing, however great may be the threats and promises by which it is commended. And still worse, the reference of right and wrong

to his arbitrary will as a standard, the diversion of the allegiance of the moral sense from the community to him, is the most insidious and fatal of social diseases. It was against this that the Teutonic conscience protested in the Reformation. Again, in monarchical countries, in order that allegiance to the sovereign may be consistent with natural ethics, he must be regarded as the servant and symbol of the national unity, capable of rebellion and punishable for it. And this has been the theory of the English constitution from time immemorial.[1]

The first principle of natural ethics, then, is the sole and supreme allegiance of conscience to the community. I venture to call this *piety* in accordance with the older meaning of the word. Even if it should turn out impossible to sever it from the unfortunate associations which have clung to its later meaning, still it seems worth while to try.

An immediate deduction from our principle is that there are no self-regarding virtues properly so called; those qualities which tend to the advantage and preservation of the individual being only morally *right* in so far as they make him a more useful citizen. And this conclusion is in some cases of great practical importance. The virtue of purity, for example, attains in this way a fairly exact definition; purity in a man is that course of conduct which makes him to be a good husband and father, in a woman that which makes her to be a good wife and mother, or which helps other people so to prepare and keep themselves. It is easy to see how many false ideas and pernicious precepts are swept away by even so simple a definition as that.

Next, we may fairly define our position in regard to that moral system which has deservedly found favour with the great mass of our countrymen. In the common statement of utilitarianism the end of right action is defined to be the greatest happiness of the greatest number. It seems to me that the reason and the ample justification of the success of this system is that it explicitly sets forth the community as the object of moral allegiance. But our determination of the purpose of the conscience will oblige us to make a change in

[1] [Rex autem habet superiorem, Deum scilicet. Item legem per quam factus est rex. Item curiam suam . . . et ideo si rex fuerit sine fraeno, id est sine lege, debent ei fraenum ponere.—Bracton, fo. 34 *a*.]

the statement of it. Happiness is not the end of right action. My happiness is of no use to the community except in so far as it makes me a more efficient citizen; that is to say, it is rightly desired as a means and not as an end. The end may be described as the greatest efficiency of all citizens as such. No doubt happiness will in the long run accrue to the community as a consequence of right conduct; but the right is determined independently of the happiness, and, as Plato says, it is better to suffer wrong than to do wrong.

In conclusion, I would add some words on the relation of Veracity to the first principle of Piety. It is clear that veracity is founded on faith in man; you tell a man the truth when you can trust him with it and are not afraid. This perhaps is made more evident by considering the case of exception allowed by all moralists—namely, that if a man asks you the way with a view to committing a murder it is right to tell a lie and misdirect him. The reason why he must not have the truth told him is that he would make a bad use of it; he cannot be trusted with it. About these cases of exception an important remark must be made in passing. When we hear that a man has told a lie under such circumstances, we are indeed ready to admit that for once it was right, *mensonge admirable;* but we always have a sort of feeling that it must not occur again. And the same thing applies to cases of conflicting obligations, when for example the family conscience and the national conscience disagree. In such cases no general rule can be laid down; we have to choose the less of two evils; but this is not right altogether in the same sense as it is right to speak the truth. There is something wrong in the circumstances that we should have to choose an evil at all. The actual course to be pursued will vary with the progress of society; that evil which at first was greater will become less, and in a perfect society the conflict will be resolved into harmony. But meanwhile these cases of exception must be carefully kept distinct from the straightforward cases of right and wrong, and they always imply an obligation to mend the circumstances if we can.

Veracity to an individual is not only enjoined by piety in virtue of the obvious advantage which attends a straightforward and mutually trusting community as compared with

others, but also because deception is in all cases a personal injury. Still more is this true of veracity to the community itself. The conception of the universe or aggregate of beliefs which forms the link between sensation and action for each individual is a public and not a private matter; it is formed by society and for society. Of what enormous importance it is to the community that this should be a true conception I need not attempt to describe. Now to the attainment of this true conception two things are necessary.

First, if we study the history of those methods by which true beliefs and false beliefs have been attained, we shall see that it is our duty to guide our beliefs by inference from experience on the assumption of uniformity of nature and consciousness in other men, *and by this only*. Only upon this moral basis can the foundations of the empirical method be justified.

Secondly, veracity to the community depends upon faith in man. Surely I ought to be talking platitudes when I say that it is not English to tell a man a lie, or to suggest a lie by your silence or your actions, because you are afraid that he is not prepared for the truth, because you don't quite know what he will do when he knows it, because perhaps after all this lie is a better thing for him than the truth would be, this same man being all the time an honest fellow-citizen whom you have every reason to trust. Surely I have heard that this craven crookedness is the object of our national detestation. And yet it is constantly whispered that it would be dangerous to divulge certain truths to the masses. "I know the whole thing is untrue: but then it is so useful for the people; you don't know what harm you might do by shaking their faith in it." Crooked ways are none the less crooked because they are meant to deceive great masses of people instead of individuals. If a thing is true let us all believe it, rich and poor, men, women, and children. If a thing is untrue let us all disbelieve it, rich and poor, men, women, and children. Truth is a thing to be shouted from the housetops, not to be whispered over rose-water after dinner when the ladies are gone away.

Even in those whom I would most reverence, who would shrink with horror from such actual deception as I have just

mentioned, I find traces of a want of faith in man. Even that noble thinker, to whom we of this generation owe more than I can tell, seemed to say in one of his posthumous essays that in regard to questions of great public importance we might encourage a hope in excess of the evidence (which would infallibly grow into a belief and defy evidence) if we found that life was made easier by it. As if we should not lose infinitely more by nourishing a tendency to falsehood than we could gain by the delusion of a pleasing fancy. Life must first of all be made straight and true; it may get easier through the help this brings to the commonwealth. And the great historian of materialism[1] says that the amount of false belief necessary to morality in a given society is a matter of taste. I cannot believe that any falsehood whatever is necessary to morality. It cannot be true of my race and yours that to keep ourselves from becoming scoundrels we must needs believe a lie. The sense of right grew up among healthy men and was fixed by the practice of comradeship. It has never had help from phantoms and falsehoods, and it never can want any. By faith in man and piety towards men we have taught each other the right hitherto; with faith in man and piety towards men we shall never more depart from it.

[1] Lange, *Geschichte des Materialismus.*

THE ETHICS OF BELIEF[1]

I.—THE DUTY OF INQUIRY

A SHIPOWNER was about to send to sea an emigrant-ship. He knew that she was old, and not over-well built at the first; that she had seen many seas and climes, and often had needed repairs. Doubts had been suggested to him that possibly she was not seaworthy. These doubts preyed upon his mind and made him unhappy; he thought that perhaps he ought to have her thoroughly overhauled and refitted, even though this should put him to great expense. Before the ship sailed, however, he succeeded in overcoming these melancholy reflections. He said to himself that she had gone safely through so many voyages and weathered so many storms that it was idle to suppose she would not come safely home from this trip also. He would put his trust in Providence, which could hardly fail to protect all these unhappy families that were leaving their fatherland to seek for better times elsewhere. He would dismiss from his mind all ungenerous suspicions about the honesty of builders and contractors. In such ways he acquired a sincere and comfortable conviction that his vessel was thoroughly safe and seaworthy; he watched her departure with a light heart, and benevolent wishes for the success of the exiles in their strange new home that was to be; and he got his insurance-money when she went down in mid-ocean and told no tales.

What shall we say of him? Surely this, that he was verily guilty of the death of those men. It is admitted that he did sincerely believe in the soundness of his ship; but the

[1] *Contemporary Review*, January 1877.

sincerity of his conviction can in no wise help him, because *he had no right to believe on such evidence as was before him.* He had acquired his belief not by honestly earning it in patient investigation, but by stifling his doubts. And although in the end he may have felt so sure about it that he could not think otherwise, yet inasmuch as he had knowingly and willingly worked himself into that frame of mind, he must be held responsible for it.

Let us alter the case a little, and suppose that the ship was not unsound after all; that she made her voyage safely, and many others after it. Will that diminish the guilt of her owner? Not one jot. When an action is once done, it is right or wrong for ever; no accidental failure of its good or evil fruits can possibly alter that. The man would not have been innocent, he would only have been not found out. The question of right or wrong has to do with the origin of his belief, not the matter of it; not what it was, but how he got it; not whether it turned out to be true or false, but whether he had a right to believe on such evidence as was before him.

There was once an island in which some of the inhabitants professed a religion teaching neither the doctrine of original sin nor that of eternal punishment. A suspicion got abroad that the professors of this religion had made use of unfair means to get their doctrines taught to children. They were accused of wresting the laws of their country in such a way as to remove children from the care of their natural and legal guardians; and even of stealing them away and keeping them concealed from their friends and relations. A certain number of men formed themselves into a society for the purpose of agitating the public about this matter. They published grave accusations against individual citizens of the highest position and character, and did all in their power to injure these citizens in the exercise of their professions. So great was the noise they made, that a Commission was appointed to investigate the facts; but after the Commission had carefully inquired into all the evidence that could be got, it appeared that the accused were innocent. Not only had they been accused on insufficient evidence, but the evidence of their innocence was such as the agitators might easily have obtained,

if they had attempted a fair inquiry. After these disclosures the inhabitants of that country looked upon the members of the agitating society, not only as persons whose judgment was to be distrusted, but also as no longer to be counted honourable men. For although they had sincerely and conscientiously believed in the charges they had made, *yet they had no right to believe on such evidence as was before them.* Their sincere convictions, instead of being honestly earned by patient inquiring, were stolen by listening to the voice of prejudice and passion.

Let us vary this case also, and suppose, other things remaining as before, that a still more accurate investigation proved the accused to have been really guilty. Would this make any difference in the guilt of the accusers? Clearly not; the question is not whether their belief was true or false, but whether they entertained it on wrong grounds. They would no doubt say, "Now you see that we were right after all; next time perhaps you will believe us." And they might be believed, but they would not thereby become honourable men. They would not be innocent, they would only be not found out. Every one of them, if he chose to examine himself *in foro conscientiæ*, would know that he had acquired and nourished a belief, when he had no right to believe on such evidence as was before him; and therein he would know that he had done a wrong thing.

It may be said, however, that in both of these supposed cases ~~it is not the belief which is judged to be wrong~~, but the action following upon it. The shipowner might say, "I am perfectly certain that my ship is sound, but still I feel it my duty to have her examined, before trusting the lives of so many people to her." And it might be said to the agitator, "However convinced you were of the justice of your cause and the truth of your convictions, you ought not to have made a public attack upon any man's character until you had examined the evidence on both sides with the utmost patience and care."

In the first place, let us admit that, so far as it goes, this view of the case is right and necessary; right, because even when a man's belief is so fixed that he cannot think otherwise, he still has a choice in regard to the action suggested by it,

and so cannot escape the duty of investigating on the groun(of the strength of his convictions; and necessary, becaus those who are not yet capable of controlling their feelings an(thoughts must have a plain rule dealing with overt acts.

But this being premised as necessary, it becomes clea that it is not sufficient, and that our previous judgment i required to supplement it. For it is not possible so to seve the belief from the action it suggests as to condemn the on without condemning the other. No man holding a stron belief on one side of a question, or even wishing to hold belief on one side, can investigate it with such fairness an completeness as if he were really in doubt and unbiassed; s that the existence of a belief not founded on fair inquir unfits a man for the performance of this necessary duty.

Nor is that truly a belief at all which has not som influence upon the actions of him who holds it. He wh truly believes that which prompts him to an action has looke upon the action to lust after it, he has committed it alread in his heart. If a belief is not realised immediately in ope deeds, it is stored up for the guidance of the future. It go to make a part of that aggregate of beliefs which is the lir between sensation and action at every moment of all ou lives, and which is so organised and compacted together th no part of it can be isolated from the rest, but every ne addition modifies the structure of the whole. No real beli(however trifling and fragmentary it may seem, is ever tru insignificant; it prepares us to receive more of its like, co firms those which resembled it before, and weakens other and so gradually it lays a stealthy train in our inmc thoughts, which may some day explode into overt action, a leave its stamp upon our character for ever.

And no one man's belief is in any case a private matt which concerns himself alone. Our lives are guided by th general conception of the course of things which has be created by society for social purposes. Our words, our phras our forms and processes and modes of thought, are common p perty, fashioned and perfected from age to age; an heirlo(which every succeeding generation inherits as a precious (posit and a sacred trust to be handed on to the next one, 1 unchanged but enlarged and purified, with some clear ma

of its proper handiwork. Into this, for good or ill, is woven every belief of every man who has speech of his fellows. An awful privilege, and an awful responsibility, that we should help to create the world in which posterity will live.

In the two supposed cases which have been considered, it has been judged wrong to believe on insufficient evidence, or to nourish belief by suppressing doubts and avoiding investigation. The reason of this judgment is not far to seek: it is that in both these cases the belief held by one man was of great importance to other men. But forasmuch as no belief held by one man, however seemingly trivial the belief, and however obscure the believer, is ever actually insignificant or without its effect on the fate of mankind, we have no choice but to extend our judgment to all cases of belief whatever. Belief, that sacred faculty which prompts the decisions of our will, and knits into harmonious working all the compacted energies of our being, is ours not for ourselves, but for humanity. It is rightly used on truths which have been established by long experience and waiting toil, and which have stood in the fierce light of free and fearless questioning. Then it helps to bind men together, and to strengthen and direct their common action. It is desecrated when given to unproved and unquestioned statements, for the solace and private pleasure of the believer; to add a tinsel splendour to the plain straight road of our life and display a bright mirage beyond it; or even to drown the common sorrows of our kind by a self-deception which allows them not only to cast down, but also to degrade us. Whoso would deserve well of his fellows in this matter will guard the purity of his belief with a very fanaticism of jealous care, lest at any time it should rest on an unworthy object, and catch a stain which can never be wiped away.

It is not only the leader of men, statesman, philosopher, or poet, that owes this bounden duty to mankind. Every rustic who delivers in the village alehouse his slow, infrequent sentences, may help to kill or keep alive the fatal superstitions which clog his race. Every hard-worked wife of an artisan may transmit to her children beliefs which shall knit society together, or rend it in pieces. No simplicity of mind, no

obscurity of station, can escape the universal duty of questioning all that we believe.

It is true that this duty is a hard one, and the doubt which comes out of it is often a very bitter thing. It leaves us bare and powerless where we thought that we were safe and strong. To know all about anything is to know how to deal with it under all circumstances. We feel much happier and more secure when we think we know precisely what to do, no matter what happens, than when we have lost our way and do not know where to turn. And if we have supposed ourselves to know all about anything, and to be capable of doing what is fit in regard to it, we naturally do not like to find that we are really ignorant and powerless, that we have to begin again at the beginning, and try to learn what the thing is and how it is to be dealt with—if indeed anything can be learnt about it. It is the sense of power attached to a sense of knowledge that makes men desirous of believing, and afraid of doubting.

This sense of power is the highest and best of pleasures when the belief on which it is founded is a true belief, and has been fairly earned by investigation. For then we may justly feel that it is common property, and holds good for others as well as for ourselves. Then we may be glad, not that *I* have learned secrets by which I am safer and stronger, but that *we men* have got mastery over more of the world; and we shall be strong, not for ourselves, but in the name of Man and in his strength. But if the belief has been accepted on insufficient evidence, the pleasure is a stolen one. Not only does it deceive ourselves by giving us a sense of power which we do not really possess, but it is sinful, because it is stolen in defiance of our duty to mankind. That duty is to guard ourselves from such beliefs as from a pestilence, which may shortly master our own body and then spread to the rest of the town. What would be thought of one who, for the sake of a sweet fruit, should deliberately run the risk of bringing a plague upon his family and his neighbours?

And, as in other such cases, it is not the risk only which has to be considered; for a bad action is always bad at the time when it is done, no matter what happens afterwards. Every time we let ourselves believe for unworthy reasons, we weaken

our powers of self-control, of doubting, of judicially and fairly weighing evidence. We all suffer severely enough from the maintenance and support of false beliefs and the fatally wrong actions which they lead to, and the evil born when one such belief is entertained is great and wide. But a greater and wider evil arises when the credulous character is maintained and supported, when a habit of believing for unworthy reasons is fostered and made permanent. If I steal money from any person, there may be no harm done by the mere transfer of possession; he may not feel the loss, or it may prevent him from using the money badly. But I cannot help doing this great wrong towards Man, that I make myself dishonest. What hurts society is not that it should lose its property, but that it should become a den of thieves; for then it must cease to be society. This is why we ought not to do evil that good may come; for at any rate this great evil has come, that we have done evil and are made wicked thereby. In like manner, if I let myself believe anything on insufficient evidence, there may be no great harm done by the mere belief; it may be true after all, or I may never have occasion to exhibit it in outward acts. But I cannot help doing this great wrong towards Man, that I make myself credulous. The danger to society is not merely that it should believe wrong things, though that is great enough; but that it should become credulous, and lose the habit of testing things and inquiring into them; for then it must sink back into savagery.

The harm which is done by credulity in a man is not confined to the fostering of a credulous character in others, and consequent support of false beliefs. Habitual want of care about what I believe leads to habitual want of care in others about the truth of what is told to me. Men speak the truth to one another when each reveres the truth in his own mind and in the other's mind; but how shall my friend revere the truth in my mind when I myself am careless about it, when I believe things because I want to believe them, and because they are comforting and pleasant? Will he not learn to cry, "Peace," to me, when there is no peace? By such a course I shall surround myself with a thick atmosphere of falsehood and fraud, and in that I must live. It may matter little to

me, in my cloud-castle of sweet illusions and darling lies; but it matters much to Man that I have made my neighbours ready to deceive. The credulous man is father to the liar and the cheat; he lives in the bosom of this his family, and it is no marvel if he should become even as they are. So closely are our duties knit together, that whoso shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

To sum up: it is wrong always, everywhere, and for any one, to believe anything upon insufficient evidence.

If a man, holding a belief which he was taught in childhood or persuaded of afterwards, keeps down and pushes away any doubts which arise about it in his mind, purposely avoids the reading of books and the company of men that call in question or discuss it, and regards as impious those questions which cannot easily be asked without disturbing it —the life of that man is one long sin against mankind.

If this judgment seems harsh when applied to those simple souls who have never known better, who have been brought up from the cradle with a horror of doubt, and taught that their eternal welfare depends on *what* they believe, then it leads to the very serious question, *Who hath made Israel to sin?*

It may be permitted me to fortify this judgment with the sentence of Milton[1]—

"A man may be a heretic in the truth; and if he believe things only because his pastor says so, or the assembly so determine, without knowing other reason, though his belief be true, yet the very truth he holds becomes his heresy."

And with this famous aphorism of Coleridge[2]—

"He who begins by loving Christianity better than Truth, will proceed by loving his own sect or Church better than Christianity, and end in loving himself better than all."

Inquiry into the evidence of a doctrine is not to be made once for all, and then taken as finally settled. It is never lawful to stifle a doubt; for either it can be honestly answered by means of the inquiry already made, or else it proves that the inquiry was not complete.

"But," says one, "I am a busy man; I have no time for the long course of study which would be necessary to make me in any degree a competent judge of certain questions, or

[1] *Areopagitica.* [2] *Aids to Reflection.*

even able to understand the nature of the arguments." Then he should have no time to believe.

II.—THE WEIGHT OF AUTHORITY

Are we then to become universal sceptics, doubting everything, afraid always to put one foot before the other until we have personally tested the firmness of the road? Are we to deprive ourselves of the help and guidance of that vast body of knowledge which is daily growing upon the world, because neither we nor any other one person can possibly test a hundredth part of it by immediate experiment or observation, and because it would not be completely proved if we did? Shall we steal and tell lies because we have had no personal experience wide enough to justify the belief that it is wrong to do so?

There is no practical danger that such consequences will ever follow from scrupulous care and self-control in the matter of belief. Those men who have most nearly done their duty in this respect have found that certain great principles, and these most fitted for the guidance of life, have stood out more and more clearly in proportion to the care and honesty with which they were tested, and have acquired in this way a practical certainty. The beliefs about right and wrong which guide our actions in dealing with men in society, and the beliefs about physical nature which guide our actions in dealing with animate and inanimate bodies, these never suffer from investigation; they can take care of themselves, without being propped up by "acts of faith," the clamour of paid advocates, or the suppression of contrary evidence. Moreover there are many cases in which it is our duty to act upon probabilities, although the evidence is not such as to justify present belief; because it is precisely by such action, and by observation of its fruits, that evidence is got which may justify future belief. So that we have no reason to fear lest a habit of conscientious inquiry should paralyse the actions of our daily life.

But because it is not enough to say, "It is wrong to believe on unworthy evidence," without saying also what evidence is

worthy, we shall now go on to inquire under what circumstances it is lawful to believe on the testimony of others; and then, further, we shall inquire more generally when and why we may believe that which goes beyond our own experience, or even beyond the experience of mankind.

In what cases, then, let us ask in the first place, is the testimony of a man unworthy of belief? He may say that which is untrue either knowingly or unknowingly. In the first case he is lying, and his moral character is to blame; in the second case he is ignorant or mistaken, and it is only his knowledge or his judgment which is in fault. In order that we may have the right to accept his testimony as ground for believing what he says, we must have reasonable grounds for trusting his *veracity*, that he is really trying to speak the truth so far as he knows it; his *knowledge*, that he has had opportunities of knowing the truth about this matter; and his *judgment*, that he has made proper use of those opportunities in coming to the conclusion which he affirms.

However plain and obvious these reasons may be, so that no man of ordinary intelligence, reflecting upon the matter, could fail to arrive at them, it is nevertheless true that a great many persons do habitually disregard them in weighing testimony. Of the two questions, equally important to the trustworthiness of a witness, "Is he dishonest?" and "May he be mistaken?" the majority of mankind are perfectly satisfied if *one* can, with some show of probability, be answered in the negative. The excellent moral character of a man is alleged as ground for accepting his statements about things which he cannot possibly have known. A Mohammedan, for example, will tell us that the character of his Prophet was so noble and majestic that it commands the reverence even of those who do not believe in his mission. So admirable was his moral teaching, so wisely put together the great social machine which he created, that his precepts have not only been accepted by a great portion of mankind, but have actually been obeyed. His institutions have on the one hand rescued the negro from savagery, and on the other hand have taught civilisation to the advancing West; and although the races which held the highest forms of his faith, and most fully embodied his mind and thought, have all been conquered and swept away by

barbaric tribes, yet the history of their marvellous attainments remains as an imperishable glory to Islam. Are we to doubt the word of a man so great and so good? Can we suppose that this magnificent genius, this splendid moral hero, has lied to us about the most solemn and sacred matters? The testimony of Mohammed is clear, that there is but one God, and that he, Mohammed, is his Prophet; that if we believe in him we shall enjoy everlasting felicity, but that if we do not we shall be damned. This testimony rests on the most awful of foundations, the revelation of heaven itself; for was he not visited by the angel Gabriel, as he fasted and prayed in his desert cave, and allowed to enter into the blessed fields of Paradise? Surely God is God and Mohammed is the Prophet of God.

What should we answer to this Mussulman? First, no doubt, we should be tempted to take exception against his view of the character of the Prophet and the uniformly beneficial influence of Islam: before we could go with him altogether in these matters it might seem that we should have to forget many terrible things of which we have heard or read. But if we chose to grant him all these assumptions, for the sake of argument, and because it is difficult both for the faithful and for infidels to discuss them fairly and without passion, still we should have something to say which takes away the ground of his belief, and therefore shows that it is wrong to entertain it. Namely this: the character of Mohammed is excellent evidence that he was honest and spoke the truth so far as he knew it; but it is no evidence at all that he knew what the truth was. What means could he have of knowing that the form which appeared to him to be the angel Gabriel was not a hallucination, and that his apparent visit to Paradise was not a dream? Grant that he himself was fully persuaded and honestly believed that he had the guidance of heaven, and was the vehicle of a supernatural revelation, how could he know that this strong conviction was not a mistake? Let us put ourselves in his place; we shall find that the more completely we endeavour to realise what passed through his mind, the more clearly we shall perceive that the Prophet could have had no adequate ground for the belief in his own inspiration. It is most probable that he

himself never doubted of the matter, or thought of asking the question; but we are in the position of those to whom the question has been asked, and who are bound to answer it. It is known to medical observers that solitude and want of food are powerful means of producing delusion and of fostering a tendency to mental disease. Let us suppose, then, that I, like Mohammed, go into desert places to fast and pray; what things can happen to me which will give me the right to believe that I am divinely inspired? Suppose that I get information, apparently from a celestial visitor, which upon being tested is found to be correct. I cannot be sure, in the first place, that the celestial visitor is not a figment of my own mind, and that the information did not come to me, unknown at the time to my consciousness, through some subtle channel of sense. But if my visitor were a real visitor, and for a long time gave me information which was found to be trustworthy, this would indeed be good ground for trusting him in the future as to such matters as fall within human powers of verification; but it would not be ground for trusting his testimony as to any other matters. For although his tested character would justify me in believing that he spoke the truth so far as he knew, yet the same question would present itself—what ground is there for supposing that he knows?

Even if my supposed visitor had given me such information, subsequently verified by me, as proved him to have means of knowledge about verifiable matters far exceeding my own; this would not justify me in believing what he said about matters that are not at present capable of verification by man. It would be ground for interesting conjecture, and for the hope that, as the fruit of our patient inquiry, we might by and by attain to such a means of verification as should rightly turn conjecture into belief. For belief belongs to man, and to the guidance of human affairs: no belief is real unless it guide our actions, and those very actions supply a test of its truth.

But, it may be replied, the acceptance of Islam as a system is just that action which is prompted by belief in the mission of the Prophet, and which will serve for a test of its truth. Is it possible to believe that a system which has succeeded so well

is really founded upon a delusion? Not only have individual saints found joy and peace in believing, and verified those spiritual experiences which are promised to the faithful, but nations also have been raised from savagery or barbarism to a higher social state. Surely we are at liberty to say that the belief has been acted upon, and that it has been verified.

It requires, however, but little consideration to show that what has really been verified is not at all the supernal character of the Prophet's mission, or the trustworthiness of his authority in matters which we ourselves cannot test, but only his practical wisdom in certain very mundane things. The fact that believers have found joy and peace in believing gives us the right to say that the doctrine is a comfortable doctrine, and pleasant to the soul; but it does not give us the right to say that it is true. And the question which our conscience is always asking about that which we are tempted to believe is not, "Is it comfortable and pleasant?" but, "Is it true?" That the Prophet preached certain doctrines, and predicted that spiritual comfort would be found in them, proves only his sympathy with human nature and his knowledge of it; but it does not prove his superhuman knowledge of theology.

And if we admit for the sake of argument (for it seems that we cannot do more) that the progress made by Moslem nations in certain cases was really due to the system formed and sent forth into the world by Mohammed, we are not at liberty to conclude from this that he was inspired to declare the truth about things which we cannot verify. We are only at liberty to infer the excellence of his moral precepts, or of the means which he devised for so working upon men as so get them obeyed, or of the social and political machinery which he set up. And it would require a great amount of careful examination into the history of those nations to determine which of these things had the greater share in the result. So that here again it is the Prophet's knowledge of human nature, and his sympathy with it, that are verified; not his divine inspiration or ~~his~~ knowledge of theology.

If there were only one Prophet, indeed, it might well seem a difficult and even an ungracious task to decide upon what

points we would trust him, and on what we would doubt his authority; seeing what help and furtherance all men have gained in all ages from those who saw more clearly, who felt more strongly, and who sought the truth with more single heart than their weaker brethren. But there is not only one Prophet; and while the consent of many upon that which, as men, they had real means of knowing and did know, has endured to the end, and been honourably built into the great fabric of human knowledge, the diverse witness of some about that which they did not and could not know remains as a warning to us that to exaggerate the prophetic authority is to misuse it, and to dishonour those who have sought only to help and further us after their power. It is hardly in human nature that a man should quite accurately gauge the limits of his own insight; but it is the duty of those who profit by his work to consider carefully where he may have been carried beyond it. If we must needs embalm his possible errors along with his solid achievements, and use his authority as an excuse for believing what he cannot have known, we make of his goodness an occasion to sin.

To consider only one other such witness: the followers of the Buddha have at least as much right to appeal to individual and social experience in support of the authority of the Eastern saviour. The special mark of his religion, it is said, that in which it has never been surpassed, is the comfort and consolation which it gives to the sick and sorrowful, the tender sympathy with which it soothes and assuages all the natural griefs of men. And surely no triumph of social morality can be greater or nobler than that which has kept nearly half the human race from persecuting in the name of religion. If we are to trust the accounts of his early followers, he believed himself to have come upon earth with a divine and cosmic mission to set rolling the wheel of the law. Being a prince, he divested himself of his kingdom, and of his free will became acquainted with misery, that he might learn how to meet and subdue it. Could such a man speak falsely about solemn things? And as for his knowledge, was he not a man miraculous with powers more than man's? He was born of woman without the help of man; he rose into the air and was transfigured before his kinsmen; at last he went up bodily into

heaven from the top of Adam's Peak. Is not his word to be believed in when he testifies of heavenly things?

If there were only he, and no other, with such claims! But there is Mohammed with his testimony; we cannot choose but listen to them both. The Prophet tells us that there is one God, and that we shall live for ever in joy or misery, according as we believe in the Prophet or not. The Buddha says that there is no God, and that we shall be annihilated by and by if we are good enough. Both cannot be infallibly inspired; one or other must have been the victim of a delusion, and thought he knew that which he really did not know. Who shall dare to say which? and how can we justify ourselves in believing that the other was not also ~~deluded?~~

We are led, then, to these judgments following. The goodness and greatness of a man do not justify us in accepting a belief upon the warrant of his authority, unless there are reasonable grounds for supposing that he knew the truth of what he was saying. And there can be no grounds for supposing that a man knows that which we, without ceasing to be men, could not be supposed to verify.

If a chemist tells me, who am no chemist, that a certain substance can be made by putting together other substances in certain proportions and subjecting them to a known process, I am quite justified in believing this upon his authority, unless I know anything against his character or his judgment. For his professional training is one which tends to encourage veracity and the honest pursuit of truth, and to produce a dislike of hasty conclusions and slovenly investigation. And I have reasonable ground for supposing that he knows the truth of what he is saying, for although I am no chemist, I can be made to understand so much of the methods and processes of the science as makes it conceivable to me that, without ceasing to be man, I might verify the statement. I may never actually verify it, or even see any experiment which goes towards verifying it; but still I have quite reason enough to justify me in believing that the verification is within the reach of human appliances and powers, and in particular that it has been actually performed by my informant. His result, the belief to which he has been led by his inquiries, is valid

not only for himself but for others; it is watched and tested by those who are working in the same ground, and who know that no greater service can be rendered to science than the purification of accepted results from the errors which may have crept into them. It is in this way that the result becomes common property, a right object of belief, which is a social affair and matter of public business. Thus it is to be observed that his authority is valid because there are those who question it and verify it; that it is precisely this process of examining and purifying that keeps alive among investigators the love of that which shall stand all possible tests, the sense of public responsibility as of those whose work, if well done, shall remain as the enduring heritage of mankind.

But if my chemist tells me that an atom of oxygen has existed unaltered in weight and rate of vibration throughout all time I have no right to believe this on his authority, for it is a thing which he cannot know without ceasing to be man. He may quite honestly believe that this statement is a fair inference from his experiments, but in that case his judgment is at fault. A very simple consideration of the character of experiments would show him that they never can lead to results of such a kind; that being themselves only approximate and limited, they cannot give us knowledge which is exact and universal. No eminence of character and genius can give a man authority enough to justify us in believing him when he makes statements implying exact or universal knowledge.

Again, an Arctic explorer may tell us that in a given latitude and longitude he has experienced such and such a degree of cold, that the sea was of such a depth, and the ice of such a character. We should be quite right to believe him, in the absence of any stain upon his veracity. It is conceivable that we might, without ceasing to be men, go there and verify his statement; it can be tested by the witness of his companions, and there is adequate ground for supposing that he knows the truth of what he is saying. But if an old whaler tells us that the ice is 300 feet thick all the way up to the Pole, we shall not be justified in believing him. For although the statement may be capable of verification by man, it is certainly not capable of verification by *him*,

with any means and appliances which he has possessed; and he must have persuaded himself of the truth of it by some means which does not attach any credit to his testimony. Even if, therefore, the matter affirmed is within the reach of human knowledge, we have no right to accept it upon authority unless it is within the reach of our informant's knowledge.

What shall we say of that authority, more venerable and august than any individual witness, the time-honoured tradition of the human race? An atmosphere of beliefs and conceptions has been formed by the labours and struggles of our forefathers, which enables us to breathe amid the various and complex circumstances of our life. It is around and about us and within us; we cannot think except in the forms and processes of thought which it supplies. Is it possible to doubt and to test it? and if possible, is it right?

We shall find reason to answer that it is not only possible and right, but our bounden duty; that the main purpose of the tradition itself is to supply us with the means of asking questions, of testing and inquiring into things; that if we misuse it, and take it as a collection of cut-and-dried statements to be accepted without further inquiry, we are not only injuring ourselves here, but, by refusing to do our part towards the building up of the fabric which shall be inherited by our children, we are tending to cut off ourselves and our race from the human line.

Let us first take care to distinguish a kind of tradition which especially requires to be examined and called in question, because it especially shrinks from inquiry. Suppose that a medicine-man in Central Africa tells his tribe that a certain powerful medicine in his tent will be propitiated if they kill their cattle, and that the tribe believe him. Whether the medicine was propitiated or not there are no means of verifying, but the cattle are gone. Still the belief may be kept up in the tribe that propitiation has been effected in this way; and in a later generation it will be all the easier for another medicine-man to persuade them to a similar act. Here the only reason for belief is that everybody has believed the thing for so long that it must be true. And yet the belief was founded on fraud, and has been propagated by credulity. That man will undoubtedly do right, and be a

not only for himself but for others; it is watched and tested by those who are working in the same ground, and who know that no greater service can be rendered to science than the purification of accepted results from the errors which may have crept into them. It is in this way that the result becomes common property, a right object of belief, which is a social affair and matter of public business. Thus it is to be observed that his authority is valid because there are those who question it and verify it; that it is precisely this process of examining and purifying that keeps alive among investigators the love of that which shall stand all possible tests, the sense of public responsibility as of those whose work, if well done, shall remain as the enduring heritage of mankind.

But if my chemist tells me that an atom of oxygen has existed unaltered in weight and rate of vibration throughout all time I have no right to believe this on his authority, for it is a thing which he cannot know without ceasing to be man. He may quite honestly believe that this statement is a fair inference from his experiments, but in that case his judgment is at fault. A very simple consideration of the character of experiments would show him that they never can lead to results of such a kind; that being themselves only approximate and limited, they cannot give us knowledge which is exact and universal. No eminence of character and genius can give a man authority enough to justify us in believing him when he makes statements implying exact or universal knowledge.

Again, an Arctic explorer may tell us that in a given latitude and longitude he has experienced such and such a degree of cold, that the sea was of such a depth, and the ice of such a character. We should be quite right to believe him, in the absence of any stain upon his veracity. It is conceivable that we might, without ceasing to be men, go there and verify his statement; it can be tested by the witness of his companions, and there is adequate ground for supposing that he knows the truth of what he is saying. But if an old whaler tells us that the ice is 300 feet thick all the way up to the Pole, we shall not be justified in believing him. For although the statement may be capable of verification by man, it is certainly not capable of verification by *him*,

with any means and appliances which he has possessed; and he must have persuaded himself of the truth of it by some means which does not attach any credit to his testimony. Even if, therefore, the matter affirmed is within the reach of human knowledge, we have no right to accept it upon authority unless it is within the reach of our informant's knowledge.

What shall we say of that authority, more venerable and august than any individual witness, the time-honoured tradition of the human race? An atmosphere of beliefs and conceptions has been formed by the labours and struggles of our forefathers, which enables us to breathe amid the various and complex circumstances of our life. It is around and about us and within us; we cannot think except in the forms and processes of thought which it supplies. Is it possible to doubt and to test it? and if possible, is it right?

We shall find reason to answer that it is not only possible and right, but our bounden duty; that the main purpose of the tradition itself is to supply us with the means of asking questions, of testing and inquiring into things; that if we misuse it, and take it as a collection of cut-and-dried statements to be accepted without further inquiry, we are not only injuring ourselves here, but, by refusing to do our part towards the building up of the fabric which shall be inherited by our children, we are tending to cut off ourselves and our race from the human line.

Let us first take care to distinguish a kind of tradition which especially requires to be examined and called in question, because it especially shrinks from inquiry. Suppose that a medicine-man in Central Africa tells his tribe that a certain powerful medicine in his tent will be propitiated if they kill their cattle, and that the tribe believe him. Whether the medicine was propitiated or not there are no means of verifying, but the cattle are gone. Still the belief may be kept up in the tribe that propitiation has been effected in this way; and in a later generation it will be all the easier for another medicine-man to persuade them to a similar act. Here the only reason for belief is that everybody has believed the thing for so long that it must be true. And yet the belief was founded on fraud, and has been propagated by credulity. That man will undoubtedly do right, and be a

friend of men, who shall call it in question and see that there is no evidence for it, help his neighbours to see as he does, and even, if need be, go into the holy tent and break the medicine.

The rule which should guide us in such cases is simple and obvious enough: that the aggregate testimony of our neighbours is subject to the same conditions as the testimony of any one of them. Namely, we have no right to believe a thing true because everybody says so unless there are good grounds for believing that some one person at least has the means of knowing what is true, and is speaking the truth so far as he knows it. However many nations and generations of men are brought into the witness-box they cannot testify to anything which they do not know. Every man who has accepted the statement from somebody else, without himself testing and verifying it, is out of court; his word is worth nothing at all. And when we get back at last to the true birth and beginning of the statement, two serious questions must be disposed of in regard to him who first made it: was he mistaken in thinking that he *knew* about this matter, or was he lying?

This last question is unfortunately a very actual and practical one even to us at this day and in this country. We have no occasion to go to La Salette, or to Central Africa, or to Lourdes, for examples of immoral and debasing superstition. It is only too possible for a child to grow up in London surrounded by an atmosphere of beliefs fit only for the savage, which have in our own time been founded in fraud and propagated by credulity.

Laying aside, then, such tradition as is handed on without testing by successive generations, let us consider that which is truly built up out of the common experience of mankind. This great fabric is for the guidance of our thoughts, and through them of our actions, both in the moral and in the material world. In the moral world, for example, it gives us the conceptions of right in general, of justice, of truth, of beneficence, and the like. These are given as conceptions, not as statements or propositions; they answer to certain definite instincts which are certainly within us, however they came there. That it is right to be beneficent is matter of

immediate personal experience; for when a man retires within himself and there finds something, wider and more lasting than his solitary personality, which says, "I want to do right," as well as, "I want to do good to man," he can verify by direct observation that one instinct is founded upon and agrees fully with the other. And it is his duty so to verify this and all similar statements.

The tradition says also, at a definite place and time, that such and such actions are just, or true, or beneficent. For all such rules a further inquiry is necessary, since they are sometimes established by an authority other than that of the moral sense founded on experience. Until recently, the moral tradition of our own country—and indeed of all Europe—taught that it was beneficent to give money indiscriminately to beggars. But the questioning of this rule, and investigation into it, led men to see that true beneficence is that which helps a man to do the work which he is most fitted for, not that which keeps and encourages him in idleness; and that to neglect this distinction in the present is to prepare pauperism and misery for the future. By this testing and discussion not only has practice been purified and made more beneficent, but the very conception of beneficence has been made wider and wiser. Now here the great social heirloom consists of two parts: the instinct of beneficence, which makes a certain side of our nature, when predominant, wish to do good to men; and the intellectual conception of beneficence, which we can compare with any proposed course of conduct and ask, "Is this beneficent or not?" By the continual asking and answering of such questions the conception grows in breadth and distinctness, and the instinct becomes strengthened and purified. It appears, then, that the great use of the conception, the intellectual part of the heirloom, is to enable us to ask questions; that it grows and is kept straight by means of these questions; and if we do not use it for that purpose we shall gradually lose it altogether, and be left with a mere code of regulations which cannot rightly be called morality at all.

Such considerations apply even more obviously and clearly, if possible, to the store of beliefs and conceptions which our fathers have amassed for us in respect of the material world.

We are ready to laugh at the rule of thumb of the Australian who continues to tie his hatchet to the side of the handle, although the Birmingham fitter has made a hole on purpose for him to put the handle in. His people have tied up hatchets so for ages: who is he that he should set himself up against their wisdom? He has sunk so low that he cannot do what some of them must have done in the far distant past —call in question an established usage, and invent or learn something better. Yet here, in the dim beginning of knowledge, where science and art are one, we find only the same simple rule which applies to the highest and deepest growths of that cosmic Tree; to its loftiest flower-tipped branches as well as to the profoundest of its hidden roots; the rule, namely, that what is stored up and handed down to us is rightly used by those who act as the makers acted, when they stored it up; those who use it to ask further questions, to examine, to investigate; who try honestly and solemnly to find out what is the right way of looking at things and of dealing with them.

A question rightly asked is already half answered, said Jacobi; we may add that the method of solution is the other half of the answer, and that the actual result counts for nothing by the side of these two. For an example let us go to the telegraph, where theory and practice, grown each to years of discretion, are marvellously wedded for the fruitful service of men. Ohm found that the strength of an electric current is directly proportional to the strength of the battery which produces it, and inversely as the length of the wire along which it has to travel. This is called Ohm's law; but the result, regarded as a statement to be believed, is not the valuable part of it. The first half is the question: what relation holds good between these quantities? So put, the question involves already the conception of strength of current, and of strength of battery, as quantities to be measured and compared; it hints clearly that these are the things to be attended to in the study of electric currents. The second half is the method of investigation; how to measure these quantities, what instruments are required for the experiment, and how are they to be used? The student who begins to learn about electricity is not asked to believe in Ohm's law:

he is made to understand the question, he is placed before the apparatus, and he is taught to verify it. He learns to do things, not to think he knows things; to use instruments and to ask questions, not to accept a traditional statement. The question which required a genius to ask it rightly is answered by a tiro. If Ohm's law were suddenly lost and forgotten by all men, while the question and the method of solution remained, the result could be re-discovered in an hour. But the result by itself, if known to a people who could not comprehend the value of the question or the means of solving it, would be like a watch in the hands of a savage who could not wind it up, or an iron steamship worked by Spanish engineers.

In regard, then, to the ~~sacred~~ tradition of humanity, we learn that it consists, not in propositions or statements which are to be accepted and believed on the authority of the tradition, but in questions rightly asked, in conceptions which enable us to ask further questions, and in methods of answering questions. The value of all these things depends on their being tested day by day. The very sacredness of the precious deposit imposes upon us the duty and the responsibility of testing it, of purifying and enlarging it to the utmost of our power. He who makes use of its results to stifle his own doubts, or to hamper the inquiry of others, is guilty of a sacrilege which centuries shall never be able to blot out. When the labours and questionings of honest and brave men shall have built up the fabric of known truth to a glory which we in this generation can neither hope for nor imagine, in that pure and holy temple he shall have no part nor lot, but his name and his works shall be cast out into the darkness of oblivion for ever.

III.—THE LIMITS OF INFERENCE

The question in what cases we may believe that which goes beyond our experience, is a very large and delicate one, extending to the whole range of scientific method, and requiring a considerable increase in the application of it before it can be answered with anything approaching to completeness.

But one rule, lying on the threshold of the subject, of extreme simplicity and vast practical importance, may here be touched upon and shortly laid down.

A little reflection will show us that every belief, even the simplest and most fundamental, goes beyond experience when regarded as a guide to our actions. A burnt child dreads the fire, because it believes that the fire will burn it to-day just as it did yesterday; but this belief goes beyond experience, and assumes that the unknown fire of to-day is like the known fire of yesterday. Even the belief that the child was burnt yesterday goes beyond *present* experience, which contains only the memory of a burning, and not the burning itself; it assumes, therefore, that this memory is trustworthy, although we know that a memory may often be mistaken. But if it is to be used as a guide to action, as a hint of what the future is to be, it must assume something about that future, namely, that it will be consistent with the supposition that the burning really took place yesterday; which is going beyond experience. Even the fundamental "I am," which cannot be doubted, is no guide to action until it takes to itself "I shall be," which goes beyond experience. The question is not, therefore, "May we believe what goes beyond experience?" for this is involved in the very nature of belief; but "How far and in what manner may we add to our experience in forming our beliefs?"

And an answer, of utter simplicity and universality, is suggested by the example we have taken: a burnt child dreads the fire. We may go beyond experience by assuming that what we do not know is like what we do know; or, in other words, we may add to our experience on the assumption of a uniformity in nature. What this uniformity precisely is, how we grow in the knowledge of it from generation to generation, these are questions which for the present we lay aside, being content to examine two instances which may serve to make plainer the nature of the rule.

From certain observations made with the spectroscope, we infer the existence of hydrogen in the sun. By looking into the spectroscope when the sun is shining on its slit, we see certain definite bright lines: and experiments made upon bodies on the earth have taught us that when these bright

lines are seen hydrogen is the source of them. We assume, then, that the unknown bright lines in the sun are like the known bright lines of the laboratory, and that hydrogen in the sun behaves as hydrogen under similar circumstances would behave on the earth.

But are we not trusting our spectroscope too much? Surely, having found it to be trustworthy for terrestrial substances, where its statements can be verified by man, we are justified in accepting its testimony in other like cases; but not when it gives us information about things in the sun, where its testimony cannot be directly verified by man?

Certainly, we want to know a little more before this inference can be justified; and fortunately we do know this. The spectroscope testifies to exactly the same thing in the two cases; namely, that light-vibrations of a certain rate are being sent through it. Its construction is such that if it were wrong about this in one case, it would be wrong in the other. When we come to look into the matter, we find that we have really assumed the matter of the sun to be like the matter of the earth, made up of a certain number of distinct substances; and that each of these, when very hot, has a distinct rate of vibration, by which it may be recognised and singled out from the rest. But this is the kind of assumption which we are justified in using when we add to our experience. It is an assumption of uniformity in nature, and can only be checked by comparison with many similar assumptions which we have to make in other such cases.

But is this a true belief, of the existence of hydrogen in the sun? Can it help in the right guidance of human action?

Certainly not, if it is accepted on unworthy grounds, and without some understanding of the process by which it is got at. But when this process is taken in as the ground of the belief, it becomes a very serious and practical matter. For if there is no hydrogen in the sun, the spectroscope—that is to say, the measurement of rates of vibration—must be an uncertain guide in recognising different substances; and consequently it ought not to be used in chemical analysis—in assaying, for example—to the great saving of time, trouble, and money. Whereas the acceptance of the spectroscopic method as trustworthy has enriched us not only with new

metals, which is a great thing, but with new processes of investigation, which is vastly greater.

For another example, let us consider the way in which we infer the truth of an historical event—say the siege of Syracuse in the Peloponnesian war. Our experience is that manuscripts exist which are said to be and which call themselves manuscripts of the history of Thucydides; that in other manuscripts, stated to be by later historians, he is described as living during the time of the war; and that books, supposed to date from the revival of learning, tell us how these manuscripts had been preserved and were then acquired. We find also that men do not, as a rule, forge books and histories without a special motive; we assume that in this respect men in the past were like men in the present; and we observe that in this case no special motive was present. That is, we add to our experience on the assumption of a uniformity in the characters of men. Because our knowledge of this uniformity is far less complete and exact than our knowledge of that which obtains in physics, inferences of the historical kind are more precarious and less exact than inferences in many other sciences.

But if there is any special reason to suspect the character of the persons who wrote or transmitted certain books, the case becomes altered. If a group of documents give internal evidence that they were produced among people who forged books in the names of others, and who, in describing events, suppressed those things which did not suit them, while they amplified such as did suit them; who not only committed these crimes, but gloried in them as proofs of humility and zeal; then we must say that upon such documents no true historical inference can be founded, but only unsatisfactory conjecture.

We may, then, add to our experience on the assumption of a uniformity in nature; we may fill in our picture of what is and has been, as experience gives it us, in such a way as to make the whole consistent with this uniformity. And practically demonstrative inference—that which gives us a right to believe in the result of it—is a clear showing that in no other way than by the truth of this result can the uniformity of nature be saved.

No evidence, therefore, can justify us in believing the truth of a statement which is contrary to, or outside of, the uniformity of nature. If our experience is such that it cannot be filled up consistently with uniformity, all we have a right to conclude is that there is something wrong somewhere; but the possibility of inference is taken away; we must rest in our experience, and not go beyond it at all. If an event really happened which was not a part of the uniformity of nature, it would have two properties: no evidence could give the right to believe it to any except those whose actual experience it was; and no inference worthy of belief could be founded upon it at all.

Are we then bound to believe that nature is absolutely and universally uniform? Certainly not; we have no right to believe anything of this kind. The rule only tells us that in forming beliefs which go beyond our experience, we may make the assumption that nature is practically uniform so far as we are concerned. Within the range of human action and verification, we may form, by help of this assumption, actual beliefs; beyond it, only those hypotheses which serve for the more accurate asking of questions.

To sum up:—

1 We may believe what goes beyond our experience, only when it is inferred from that experience by the assumption that what we do not know is like what we know.

2 We may believe the statement of another person, when there is reasonable ground for supposing that he knows the matter of which he speaks, and that he is speaking the truth so far as he knows it.

3 It is wrong in all cases to believe on insufficient evidence; and where it is presumption to doubt and to investigate, there it is worse than presumption to believe.

THE ETHICS OF RELIGION[1]

THE word *religion* is used in many different meanings, and there have been not a few controversies in which the main difference between the contending parties was only this, that they understood by *religion* two different things. I will therefore begin by setting forth as clearly as I can one or two of the meanings which the word appears to have in popular speech.

First, then, it may mean a body of doctrines, as in the common phrase, "The truth of the Christian religion"; or in this sentence, "The religion of the Buddha teaches that the soul is not a distinct substance." Opinions differ upon the question what doctrines may properly be called religious; some people holding that there can be no religion without belief in a God and in a future life, so that in their judgment the body of doctrines must necessarily include these two; while others would insist upon other special dogmas being included, before they could consent to call the system by this name. But the number of such people is daily diminishing, by reason of the spread and the increase of our knowledge about distant countries and races. To me, indeed, it would seem rash to assert of any doctrine or its contrary that it might not form part of a religion. But, fortunately, it is not necessary to any part of the discussion on which I propose to enter that this question should be settled.

Secondly, religion may mean a *ceremonial* or *cult*, involving an organised priesthood and a machinery of sacred things and places. In this sense we speak of the clergy as ministers of

[1] *Fortnightly Review*, July 1877.

religion, or of a state as tolerating the practice of certain religions. There is a somewhat wider meaning which it will be convenient to consider together with this one, and as a mere extension of it, namely, that in which religion stands for the influence of a certain priesthood. A religion is sometimes said to have been successful when it has got its priests into power; thus some writers speak of the wonderfully rapid success of Christianity. A nation is said to have embraced a religion when the authorities of that nation have granted privileges to the clergy, have made them as far as possible the leaders of society, and have given them a considerable share in the management of public affairs. So the northern nations of Europe are said to have embraced the Catholic religion at an early date. The reason why it seems to me convenient to take these two meanings together is, that they are both related to the priesthood. Although the priesthood itself is not called religion, so far as I know, yet the word is used for the general influence and professional acts of the priesthood.

Thirdly, religion may mean a body of precepts or code of rules, intended to guide human conduct, as in this sentence of the authorised version of the New Testament: "Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world" (James i. 27). It is sometimes difficult to draw the line between this meaning and the last, for it is a mark of the great majority of religions that they confound ceremonial observances with duties having real moral obligation. Thus in the Jewish decalogue the command to do no work on Saturdays is found side by side with the prohibition of murder and theft. It might seem to be the more correct as well as the more philosophical course to follow in this matter the distinction made by Butler between *moral* and *positive* commands, and to class all those precepts which are not of universal moral obligation under the head of ceremonial. And, in fact, when we come to examine the matter from the point of view of morality, the distinction is of the utmost importance. But from the point of view of religion there are difficulties in making it. In the first place, the distinction is not made, or is not understood, by religious

folk in general. Innumerable tracts and pretty stories impress upon us that Sabbath-breaking is rather worse than stealing, and leads naturally on to materialism and murder. Less than a hundred years ago sacrilege was punishable by burning in France, and murder by simple decapitation. In the next place, if we pick out a religion at haphazard, we shall find that it is not at all easy to divide its precepts into those which are really of moral obligation and those which are indifferent and of a ceremonial character. We may find precepts unconnected with any ceremonial, and yet positively immoral; and ceremonials may be immoral in themselves, or constructively immoral on account of their known symbolism. On the whole, it seems to me most convenient to draw the plain and obvious distinction between those actions which a religion prescribes to *all* its followers, whether the actions are ceremonial or not, and those which are prescribed only as professional actions of a sacerdotal class. The latter will come under what I have called the second meaning of religion, the professional acts and the influence of a priesthood. In the third meaning will be included all that practically guides the life of a layman, in so far as this guidance is supplied to him by his religion.

Fourthly, and lastly, there is a meaning of the word *religion* which has been coming more and more prominently forward of late years, till it has even threatened to supersede all the others. Religion has been defined as *morality touched with emotion.* I will not here adopt this definition, because I wish to deal with the concrete in the first place, and only to pass on to the abstract in so far as that previous study appears to lead to it. I wish to consider the facts of religion as we find them, and not ideal possibilities. "Yes, but," every one will say, "if you mean my own religion, it is already, as a matter of fact, morality touched with emotion. It is the highest morality touched with the purest emotion, an emotion directed towards the most worthy of objects." Unfortunately we do not mean your religion alone, but all manner of heresies and heathenisms along with it: the religions of the Thug, of the Jesuit, of the South Sea cannibal, of Confucius, of the poor Indian with his untutored mind, of the Peculiar People, of the Mormons, and of the old cat-worship-

ping Egyptian. It must be clear that we shall restrict ourselves to a very narrow circle of what are commonly called religious facts, unless we include in our considerations not only morality touched with emotion, but also immorality touched with emotion. In fact, what is really touched with emotion in any case is that body of precepts for the guidance of a layman's life which we have taken to be the third meaning of religion. In that collection of precepts there may be some agreeable to morality, and some repugnant to it, and some indifferent, but being all enjoined by the religion they will all be touched by the same religious emotion. Shall we then say that religion means a feeling, an emotion, an habitual attitude of mind towards some object or objects, or towards life in general, which has a bearing upon the way in which men regard the rules of conduct? I think the last phrase should be left out. An habitual attitude of mind, of a religious character, does always have some bearing upon the way in which men regard the rules of conduct; but it seems sometimes as if this were an accident, and not the essence of the religious feeling. Some devout people prefer to have their devotion pure and simple, without admixture of any such application—they do not want to listen to "cauld morality." And it seems as if the religious feeling of the Greeks, and partly also of our own ancestors, was so far divorced from morality that it affected it only, as it were, by a side-wind, through the influence of the character and example of the Gods. So that it seems only likely to create confusion if we mix up morality with this fourth meaning of religion. Sometimes religion means a code of precepts, and sometimes it means a devotional habit of mind; the two things are sometimes connected, but also they are sometimes quite distinct. But that the connection of these two things is more and more insisted on, that it is the key-note of the apparent revival of religion which has taken place in this century, is a very significant fact, about which there is more to be said.

As to the nature of this devotional habit of mind, there are no doubt many who would like a closer definition. But I am not at all prepared to say what attitude of mind may properly be called religious, and what may not. Some will

hold that religion must have a person for its object; but the Buddha was filled with religious feeling, and yet he had no personal object. Spinoza, the God-intoxicated man, had no personal object for his devotion. It might be possible to frame a definition which would fairly include all cases, but it would require the expenditure of vast ingenuity and research, and would not, I am inclined to think, be of much use when it was obtained.

Nor is the difficulty to be got over by taking any definite and well-organised sect, whose principles are settled in black and white; for example, the Roman Catholic Church, whose seamless unity has just been exhibited and protected by an Œcumenical Council. Shall we listen to Mr. Mivart, who "execrates without reserve Marian persecutions, the Massacre of St. Bartholomew, and all similar acts"? or to the editor of the *Dublin Review*, who thinks that a teacher of false doctrines "should be visited by the law with just that amount of severity which the public sentiment will bear"? For assuredly common-sense morality will pass very different judgments on these two distinct religions, although it appears that experts have found room for both of them within the limits of the Vatican definitions.

Moreover, there is very great good to be got by widening our view of what may be contained in religion. If we go to a man and propose to test his own religion by the canons of common-sense morality, he will be, most likely, offended, for he will say that his religion is far too sublime and exalted to be affected by considerations of that sort. But he will have no such objection in the case of other people's religion. And when he has found that in the name of religion other people, in other circumstances, have believed in doctrines that were false, have supported priesthoods that were social evils, have taken wrong for right, and have even poisoned the very sources of morality, he may be tempted to ask himself, "Is there no trace of any of these evils in my own religion, or at least in my own conception and practice of it?" And that is just what we want him to do. Bring your doctrines, your priesthoods, your precepts, yea, even the inner devotion of your soul, before the tribunal of conscience; she is no man's and no God's vicar, but the supreme judge of men and Gods.

Let us inquire, then, what morality has to say in regard to religious doctrines. It deals with the *manner* of religious belief directly, and with the *matter* indirectly. Religious beliefs must be founded on evidence; if they are not so founded, it is wrong to hold them. The rule of right conduct in this matter is exactly the opposite of that implied in the two famous texts: "He that believeth not shall be damned," and "Blessed are they that have not seen and yet have believed." For a man who clearly felt and recognised the duty of intellectual honesty, of carefully testing every belief before he received it, and especially before he recommended it to others, it would be impossible to ascribe the profoundly immoral teaching of these texts to a true prophet or worthy leader of humanity. It will comfort those who wish to preserve their reverence for the character of a great teacher to remember that one of these sayings is in the well-known forged passage at the end of the second gospel, and that the other occurs only in the late and legendary fourth gospel; both being described as spoken under utterly impossible circumstances. These precepts belong to the Church and not to the Gospel. But whoever wrote either of them down as a deliverance of one whom he supposed to be a divine teacher, has thereby written down himself as a man void of intellectual honesty, as a man whose word cannot be trusted, as a man who would accept and spread about any kind of baseless fiction for fear of believing too little.

So far as to the manner of religious belief. Let us now inquire what bearing morality has upon its matter. We may see at once that this can only be indirect; for the rightness or wrongness of belief in a doctrine depends only upon the nature of the evidence for it, and not upon what the doctrine is. But there is a very important way in which religious doctrine may lead to morality or immorality, and in which, therefore, morality has a bearing upon doctrine. It is when that doctrine declares the character and actions of the Gods who are regarded as objects of reverence and worship. If a God is represented as doing that which is clearly wrong, and is still held up to the reverence of men, they will be tempted to think that in doing this wrong thing they are not so very

wrong after all, but are only following an example which all men respect. So says Plato:—[1]

"We must not tell a youthful listener that he will be doing nothing extraordinary if he commit the foulest crimes, nor yet if he chastise the crimes of a father in the most unscrupulous manner, but will simply be doing what the first and greatest of the Gods have done before him. . . .

"Nor yet is it proper to say in any case—what is indeed untrue—that Gods wage war against Gods, and intrigue and fight among themselves; that is, if the future guardians of our state are to deem it a most disgraceful thing to quarrel lightly with one another: far less ought we to select as subjects for fiction and embroidery the battles of the giants, and numerous other feuds of all sorts, in which Gods and heroes fight against their own kith and kin. But if there is any possibility of persuading them that to quarrel with one's fellow is a sin of which no member of a state was ever guilty, such ought rather to be the language held to our children from the first, by old men and old women, and all elderly persons; and such is the strain in which our poets must be compelled to write. But stories like the chaining of Hera by her son, and the flinging of Hephaistos out of heaven for trying to take his mother's part when his father was beating her, and all those battles of the Gods which are to be found in Homer, must be refused admittance into our state, whether they be allegorical or not. For a child cannot discriminate between what is allegory and what is not; and whatever at that age is adopted as a matter of belief has a tendency to become fixed and indelible, and therefore, perhaps, we ought to esteem it of the greatest importance that the fictions which children first hear should be adapted in the most perfect manner to the promotion of virtue."

And Seneca says the same thing, with still more reason in his day and country: "What else is this appeal to the precedent of the Gods for, but to inflame our lusts, and to furnish licence and excuse for the corrupt act under the divine protection?" And again, of the character of Jupiter as described in the popular legends: "This has led to no other result than to deprive sin of its shame in man's eyes, by

[1] *Rep.* ii. 378. Tr. Davies and Vaughan.

showing him the God no better than himself." In Imperial Rome, the sink of all nations, it was not uncommon to find "the intending sinner addressing to the deified vice which he contemplated a prayer for the success of his design; the adulteress imploring of Venus the favours of her paramour; . . . the thief praying to Hermes Dolios for aid in his enterprise, or offering up to him the first fruits of his plunder; . . . youths entreating Hercules to expedite the death of a rich uncle." [1]

When we reflect that criminal deities were worshipped all over the empire, we cannot but wonder that any good people were left; that man could still be holy, although every God was vile. Yet this was undoubtedly the case; the social forces worked steadily on wherever there was peace and a settled government and municipal freedom; and the wicked stories of theologians were somehow explained away and disregarded. If men were no better than their religions, the world would be a hell indeed.

It is very important, however, to consider what really ought to be done in the case of stories like these. When the poet sings that Zeus kicked Hephaistos out of heaven for trying to help his mother, Plato says that this fiction must be suppressed by law. We cannot follow him there, for since his time we have had too much of trying to suppress false doctrines by law. Plato thinks it quite obviously clear that God cannot produce evil, and he would stop everybody's mouth who ventured to say that he can. But in regard to the doctrine itself, we can only ask, "Is it true?" And that is a question to be settled by evidence. Did Zeus commit this crime, or did he not? We must ask the apologists, the reconcilers of religion and science, what evidence they can produce to prove that Zeus kicked Hephaistos out of heaven. That a doctrine may lead to immoral consequences is no reason for disbelieving it. But whether the doctrine were true or false, one thing does clearly follow from its moral character: namely this, that if Zeus behaved as he is said to have behaved, he ought not to be worshipped. To those who complain of his violence and injustice, it is no answer to say that the divine attributes are far above human comprehension;

[1] *North British Review*, 1867, p. 284.

that the ways of Zeus are not our ways, neither are his thoughts our thoughts. If he is to be worshipped, he must do something vaster and nobler and greater than good men do, but it must be like what they do in its goodness. His actions must not be merely a magnified copy of what bad men do. So soon as they are thus represented, morality has something to say. Not indeed about the fact; for it is not conscience, but reason, that has to judge matters of fact; but about the worship of a character so represented. If there really is good evidence that Zeus kicked Hephaistos out of heaven, and seduced Alkmene by a mean trick, say so by all means; but say also that it is wrong to salute his priests or to make offerings in his temple.

When men do their duty in this respect, morality has a very curious indirect effect on the religious doctrine itself. As soon as the offerings become less frequent, the evidence for the doctrine begins to fade away; the process of theological interpretation gradually brings out the true inner meaning of it, that Zeus did not kick Hephaistos out of heaven, and did not seduce Alkmene.

Is this a merely theoretical discussion about far-away things? Let us come back for a moment to our own time and country, and think whether there can be any lesson for us in this refusal of common-sense morality to worship a deity whose actions are a magnified copy of what bad men do. There are three doctrines which find very wide acceptance among our countrymen at the present day: the doctrines of original sin, of a vicarious sacrifice, and of eternal punishments. We are not concerned with any refined evaporations of these doctrines which are exhaled by courtly theologians, but with the naked statements which are put into the minds of children and of ignorant people, which are taught broadcast and without shame in denominational schools. Father Faber, good soul, persuaded himself that after all only a very few people would be really damned, and Father Oxenham gives one the impression that it will not hurt even them very much. But one learns the practical teaching of the Church from such books as *A Glimpse of Hell* where a child is described as thrown between the bars upon the burning coals, there to writhe for ever. The masses do not get the elegant emasculations of

Father Faber and Father Oxenham; they get "a Glimpse of Hell."

Now to condemn all mankind for the sin of Adam and Eve; to let the innocent suffer for the guilty; to keep any one alive in torture for ever and ever; these actions are simply magnified copies of what bad men do. No juggling with "divine justice and mercy" can make them anything else. This must be said to all kinds and conditions of men: that if God holds all mankind guilty for the sin of Adam, if he has visited upon the innocent the punishment of the guilty, if he is to torture any single soul for ever, then it is wrong to worship him.

But there is something to be said also to those who think that religious beliefs are not indeed true, but are useful for the masses; who deprecate any open and public argument against them, and think that all sceptical books should be published at a high price; who go to church, not because they approve of it themselves, but to set an example to the servants. Let us ask them to ponder the words of Plato, who, like them, thought that all these tales of the Gods were fables, but still fables which might be useful to amuse children with: "*We ought to esteem it of the greatest importance that the fictions which children first hear should be adapted in the most perfect manner to the promotion of virtue.*" If we grant to you that it is good for poor people and children to believe some of these fictions, is it not better, at least, that they should believe those which are adapted to the promotion of virtue? Now the stories which you send your servants and children to hear are adapted to the promotion of vice. So far as the remedy is in your own hands, you are bound to apply it; stop your voluntary subscriptions and the moral support of your presence from any place where the criminal doctrines are taught. You will find more men and better men to preach that which is agreeable to their conscience, than to thunder out doctrines under which their minds are always uneasy, and which only a continual self-deception can keep them from feeling to be wicked.

Let us now go on to inquire what morality has to say in the matter of religious *ministrations*, the official acts and the general influence of a priesthood. This question seems to me

a more difficult one than the former; at any rate it is not so easy to find general principles which are at once simple in their nature and clear to the conscience of any man who honestly considers them. One such principle, indeed, there is, which can hardly be stated in a Protestant country without meeting with a cordial response; being indeed that characteristic of our race which made the Reformation a necessity, and became the soul of the Protestant movement. I mean the principle which forbids the priest to come between a man and his conscience. If it be true, as our daily experience teaches us, that the moral sense gains in clearness and power by exercise, by the constant endeavour to find out and to see for ourselves what is right and what is wrong, it must be nothing short of a moral suicide to delegate our conscience to another man. It is true that when we are in difficulties and do not altogether see our way, we quite rightly seek counsel and advice of some friend who has more experience, more wisdom begot by it, more devotion to the right than ourselves, and who, not being involved in the difficulties which encompass us, may more easily see the way out of them. But such counsel does not and ought not to take the place of our private judgment; on the contrary, among wise men it is asked and given for the purpose of helping and supporting private judgment. I should go to my friend, not that he may tell me what to do, but that he may help me to see what is right.

Now, as we all know, there is a priesthood whose influence is not to be made light of, even in our own land, which claims to do two things: to declare with infallible authority what is right and what is wrong, and to take away the guilt of the sinner after confession has been made to it. The second of these claims we shall come back upon in connection with another part of the subject. But that claim is one which, as it seems to me, ought to condemn the priesthood making it in the eyes of every conscientious man. We must take care to keep this question to itself, and not to let it be confused with quite different ones. The priesthood in question, as we all know, has taught that as right which is not right, and has condemned as wrong some of the holiest duties of mankind. But this is not what we are here concerned with. Let us

put an ideal case of a priesthood which, as a matter of fact, taught a morality agreeing with the healthy conscience of all men at a given time; but which, nevertheless, taught this as an infallible revelation. The tendency of such teaching, if really accepted, would be to destroy morality altogether, for it is of the very essence of the moral sense that it is a common perception by men of what is good for man. It arises, not in one man's mind by a flash of genius or a transport of ecstasy, but in all men's minds, as the fruit of their necessary intercourse and united labour for a common object. When an infallible authority is set up, the voice of this natural human conscience must be hushed and schooled, and made to speak the words of a formula. Obedience becomes the whole duty of man; and the notion of right is attached to a lifeless code of rules, instead of being the informing character of a nation. The natural consequence is that it fades gradually out and ends by disappearing altogether. I am not describing a purely conjectural state of things, but an effect which has actually been produced at various times and in considerable populations by the influence of the Catholic Church. It is true that we cannot find an actually crucial instance of a pure morality taught as an infallible revelation, and so in time ceasing to be morality for that reason alone. There are two circumstances which prevent this. One is that the Catholic priesthood has always practically taught an imperfect morality, and that it is difficult to distinguish between the effects of precepts which are wrong in themselves, and precepts which are only wrong because of the manner in which they are enforced. The other circumstance is that the priesthood has very rarely found a population willing to place itself completely and absolutely under priestly control. Men must live together and work for common objects even in priest-ridden countries; and those conditions which in the course of ages have been able to create the moral sense cannot fail in some degree to recall it to men's minds and gradually to reinforce it. Thus it comes about that a great and increasing portion of life breaks free from priestly influences, and is governed upon right and rational grounds. The goodness of men shows itself in time more powerful than the wickedness of some of their religions.

The practical inference is, then, that we ought to do all in

our power to restrain and diminish the influence of any priesthood which claims to rule consciences. But when we attempt to go beyond this plain Protestant principle, we find that the question is one of history and politics. The question which we want to ask ourselves—"Is it right to support this or that priesthood?"—can only be answered by this other question, "What has it done or got done?"

In asking this question, we must bear in mind that the word *priesthood*, as we have used it hitherto, has a very wide meaning—namely, it means any body of men who perform special ceremonies in the name of religion; a *ceremony* being an act which is prescribed by religion to that body of men, but not on account of its intrinsic rightness or wrongness. It includes, therefore, not only the priests of Catholicism, or of the Obi rites, who lay claim to a magical character and powers, but the more familiar clergymen or ministers of Protestant denominations, and the members of monastic orders. But there is a considerable difference, pointed out by Hume, between a priest who lays claim to a magical character and powers, and a clergyman, in the English sense, as it was understood in Hume's day, whose office was to remind people of their duties every Sunday, and to represent a certain standard of culture in remote country districts. It will, perhaps, conduce to clearness if we use the word *priest* exclusively in the first sense.

There is another confusion which we must endeavour to avoid, if we would really get at the truth of this matter. When one ventures to doubt whether the Catholic clergy has really been an unmixed blessing to Europe, one is generally met by the reply, "You cannot find any fault with the Sermon on the Mount." Now it would be too much to say that this has nothing to do with the question we were proposing to ask, for there is a sense in which the Sermon on the Mount and the Catholic clergy have something to do with each other. The Sermon on the Mount is admitted on all hands to be the best and most precious thing that Christianity has offered to the world; and it cannot be doubted that the Catholic clergy of East and West were the only spokesmen of Christianity until the Reformation, and are the spokesmen of the vast majority of Christians at this moment. But it must

surely be unnecessary to say in a Protestant country that the Catholic Church and the Gospel are two very different things. The moral teaching of Christ, as partly preserved in the three first gospels, or—which is the same thing—the moral teaching of the great Rabbi Hillel, as partly preserved in the Pirkè Aboth, is the expression of the conscience of a people who had fought long and heroically for their national existence. In that terrible conflict they had learned the supreme and overwhelming importance of conduct, the necessity for those who would survive of fighting manfully for their lives and making a stand against the hostile powers around; the weakness and uselessness of solitary and selfish efforts, the necessity for a man who would be a man to lose his poor single personality in the being of a greater and nobler combatant—the nation. And they said all this, after their fashion of short and potent sayings, perhaps better than any other men have said it before or since. "If I am not for myself," said the great Hillel, "who is for me? And if I am only for myself, where is the use of me? *And if not now, when?*" It would be hard to find a more striking contrast than exists between the sturdy unselfish independence of this saying, and the abject and selfish servility of the priest-ridden claimant of the skies. It was this heroic people that produced the morality of the Sermon on the Mount. But it was not they who produced the priests and the dogmas of Catholicism. Shaven crowns, linen vestments, and the claim to priestly rule over consciences, these were dwellers on the banks of the Nile. The gospel indeed came out of Judæa, but the Church and her dogmas came out of Egypt. Not, as it is written, "Out of Egypt have I called my son," but, "Out of Egypt have I called my daughter." St. Gregory of Nazianzum remarked with wonder that Egypt, having so lately worshipped bulls, goats, and crocodiles, was now teaching the world the worship of the Trinity in its truest form.[1] Poor, simple St. Gregory! it was not that Egypt had risen higher, but that the world had sunk lower. The empire, which in the time of Augustus had dreaded, and with reason, the corrupting influence of Egyptian superstitions, was now eaten up by them, and rapidly rotting away.

[1] See Sharpe, *Egyptian Mythology and Egyptian Christianity*, p. 114.

Then, when we ask what has been the influence of the Catholic clergy upon European nations, we are not inquiring about the results of accepting the morality of the Sermon on the Mount; we are inquiring into the effect of attaching an Egyptian priesthood, which teaches Egyptian dogmas, to the life and sayings of a Jewish prophet.

In this inquiry, which requires the knowledge of facts beyond our own immediate experience, we must make use of the great principle of authority, which enables us to profit by the experience of other men. The great civilised countries on the continent of Europe at the present day—France, Germany, Austria, and Italy—have had an extensive experience of the Catholic clergy for a great number of centuries, and they are forced by strong practical reasons to form a judgment upon the character and tendencies of an institution which is sufficiently powerful to command the attention of all who are interested in public affairs. We might add the experience of our forefathers three centuries ago, and of Ireland at this moment; but home politics are apt to be looked upon with other eyes than those of reason. Let us hear, then, the judgment of the civilised people of Europe on this question.

It is a matter of notoriety that an aider and abettor of clerical pretensions is regarded in France as an enemy of France and of Frenchmen; in Germany as an enemy of Germany and of Germans; in Austria as an enemy of Austria and Hungary, of both Austrians and Magyars; and in Italy as an enemy of Italy and the Italians. He is so regarded, not by a few wild and revolutionary enthusiasts who have cast away all the beliefs of their childhood and all bonds connecting them with the past, but by a great and increasing majority of sober and conscientious men of all creeds and persuasions, who are filled with a love for their country, and whose hopes and aims for the future are animated and guided by the examples of those who have gone before them, and by a sense of the continuity of national life. The profound conviction and determination of the people in all these countries, that the clergy must be restricted to a purely ceremonial province, and must not be allowed to interfere, as clergy, in public affairs—this conviction and determination, I say, are not the effect of a rejection of the Catholic dogmas. Such rejection

has not in fact been made in Catholic countries by the great majority. It involves many difficult speculative questions, the profound disturbance of old habits of thought, and the toilsome consideration of abstract ideas. But such is the happy inconsistency of human nature, that men who would be shocked and pained by a doubt about the central doctrines of their religions are far more really and practically shocked and pained by the moral consequences of clerical ascendency. About the dogmas they do not know; they were taught them in childhood, and have not inquired into them since, and therefore they are not competent witnesses to the truth of them. But about the priesthood they do know, by daily and hourly experience; and to its character they are competent witnesses. No man can express his convictions more forcibly than by acting upon them in a great and solemn matter of national importance. In all these countries the conviction of the serious and sober majority of the people is embodied, and is being daily embodied, in special legislation, openly and avowedly intended to guard against clerical aggression. The more closely the legislature of these countries reflects the popular will, the more clear and pronounced does this tendency become. It may be thwarted or evaded for the moment by constitutional devices and parliamentary tricks, but sooner or later the nation will be thoroughly represented in all of them: and as to what is then to be expected, let the panic of the clerical parties make answer.

This is a state of opinion and of feeling which we in our own country find it hard to understand, although it is one of the most persistent characters of our nation in past times. We have spoken so plainly and struck so hard in the past, that we seem to have won the right to let this matter alone. We think our enemies are dead, and we forget that our neighbour's enemies are plainly alive: and then we wonder that he does not sit down and be quiet as we are. We are not much accustomed to be afraid, and we never know when we are beaten. But those who are nearer to the danger feel a very real and, it seems to me, well-grounded fear. The whole structure of modern society, the fruit of long and painful efforts, the hopes of further improvement, the triumphs of justice, of freedom, and of light, the bonds of patriotism which make

each nation one, the bonds of humanity which bring different nations together—all these they see to be menaced with a great and real and even pressing danger. For myself I confess that I cannot help feeling as they feel. It seems to me quite possible that the moral and intellectual culture of Europe, the light and the right, what makes life worth having and men worthy to have it, may be clean swept away by a revival of superstition. We are, perhaps, ourselves not free from such a domestic danger; but no one can doubt that the danger would speedily arise if all Europe at our side should become again barbaric, not with the weakness and docility of a barbarism which has never known better, but with the strength of a past civilisation perverted to the service of evil.

Those who know best, then, about the Catholic priesthood at present, regard it as a standing menace to the state and to the moral fabric of society.

Some would have us believe that this condition of things is quite new, and has in fact been created by the Vatican Council. In the Middle Ages, they say, the Church did incalculable service; or even if you do not allow that, yet the ancient Egyptian priesthood invented many useful arts; or if you have read anything which is not to their credit, there were the Babylonians and Assyrians who had priests, thousands of years ago; and in fact, the more you go back into prehistoric ages, and the farther you go away into distant countries, the less you can find to say against the priesthoods of those times and places. This statement, for which there is certainly much foundation, may be put into another form: the more you come forward into modern times and neighbouring countries, where the facts can actually be got at, the more complete is the evidence against the priesthoods of these times and places. But the whole argument is founded upon what is at least a doubtful view of human nature and of society. Just as an early school of geologists were accustomed to explain the present state of the earth's surface by supposing that in primitive ages the processes of geologic change were far more violent and rapid than they are now—so catastrophic, indeed, as to constitute a thoroughly different state of things—so there is a school of historians who think that the intimate structure of human nature, its capabilities of learning and of adapting

itself to society, have so far altered within the historic period as to make the present processes of social change totally different in character from those even of the moderately distant past. They think that institutions and conditions which are plainly harmful to us now have at other times and places done good and serviceable work. War, pestilence, priestcraft, and slavery have been represented as positive boons to an early state of society. They are not blessings to us, it is true; but then times have altered very much.

On the other hand, a later school of geologists have seen reason to think that the processes of change have never, since the earth finally solidified, been very different from what they are now. More rapid, indeed, they must have been in early times, for many reasons; but not so very much more rapid as to constitute an entirely different state of things. And it does seem to me in like manner that a wider and more rational view of history will recognise more and more of the permanent, and less and less of the changeable, element in human nature. No doubt our ancestors of a thousand generations back were very different beings from ourselves; perhaps fifty thousand generations back they were not men at all. But the historic period is hardly to be stretched beyond two hundred generations; and it seems unreasonable to expect that in such a tiny page of our biography we can trace with clearness the growth and progress of a long life. Compare Egypt in the time of King Menes, say six thousand years ago, with Spain in this present century, before Englishmen made any railways there: I suppose the main difference is that the Egyptians washed themselves. It seems more analogous to what we find in other fields of inquiry to suppose that there are certain great broad principles of human life which have been true all along; that certain conditions have always been favourable to the health of society, and certain other conditions always hurtful.

Now, although I have many times asked for it from those who said that somewhere and at some time mankind had derived benefits from a priesthood laying claim to a magical character and powers, I have never been able to get any evidence for their statement. Nobody will give me a date, and a latitude and longitude, that I may examine into the matter.

"In the Middle Ages the priests and monks were the sole depositaries of learning." Quite so; a man burns your house to the ground, builds a wretched hovel on the ruins, and then takes credit for whatever shelter there is about the place. In the Middle Ages nearly all learned men were obliged to become priests and monks. "Then again, the bishops have sometimes acted as tribunes of the people, to protect them against the tyranny of kings." No doubt, when Pope and Cæsar fall out, honest men may come by their own. If two men rob you in a dark lane, and then quarrel over the plunder, so that you get a chance to escape with your life, you will of course be very grateful to each of them for having prevented the other from killing you; but you would be much more grateful to a policeman who locked them both up. Two powers have sought to enslave the people, and have quarrelled with each other; certainly we are very much obliged to them for quarrelling, but a condition of still greater happiness and security would be the non-existence of both.

I can find no evidence that seriously militates against the rule that the priest is at all times and in all places the enemy of all men—*Sacerdos semper, ubique, et omnibus inimicus.* I do not deny that the priest is very often a most earnest and conscientious man, doing the very best that he knows of as well as he can do it. Lord Amberley is quite right in saying that the blame rests more with the laity than with the priesthood; that it has insisted on magic and mysteries, and has forced the priesthood to produce them. But then, how dreadful is the system that puts good men to such uses!

And although it is true that in its origin a priesthood is the effect of an evil already existing, a symptom of social disease rather than a cause of it, yet, once being created and made powerful, it tends in many ways to prolong and increase the disease which gave it birth. One of these ways is so marked and of such practical importance that we are bound to consider it here: I mean the education of children. If there is one lesson which history forces upon us in every page, it is this: *Keep your children away from the priest, or he will make them the enemies of mankind.* It is not the Catholic clergy and those like them who are alone to be dreaded in this matter; even the representatives of apparently harmless religions may

do incalculable mischief if they get education into their hands. To the early Mohammedans the mosque was the one public building in every place where public business could be transacted; and so it was naturally the place of primary education, which they held to be a matter of supreme importance. By and by, as the clergy grew up, the mosque was gradually usurped by them, and primary education fell into their hands. Then ensued a "revival of religion"; religion became a fanaticism: books were burnt and universities were closed; the empire rotted away in East and West, until it was conquered by Turkish savages in Asia and by Christian savages in Spain.

The labours of students of the early history of institutions—notably Sir Henry Maine and M. de Laveleye—have disclosed to us an element of society which appears to have existed in all times and places, and which is the basis of our own social structure. The village community, or commune, or township, found in tribes of the most varied race and time, has so modified itself as to get adapted in one place or another to all the different conditions of human existence. This union of men to work for a common object has transformed them from wild animals into tame ones. Century by century the educating process of the social life has been working at human nature; it has built itself into our inmost soul. Such as we are—moral and rational beings—thinking and talking in general conceptions about the facts that make up our life, feeling a necessity to act, not for ourselves, but for Ourself, for the larger life of Man in which we are elements; such moral and rational beings, I say, Man has made us. By Man I mean men organised into a society, which fights for its life, not only as a mere collection of men who must separately be kept alive, but as a society. It must fight, not only against external enemies, but against treason and disruption within it. Hence comes the unity of interest of all its members; each of them has to feel that he is not himself only but a part of all the rest. Conscience—the sense of right and wrong—springs out of the habit of judging things from the point of view of all and not of one. It is Ourself, not ourselves, that makes for righteousness.

The codes of morality, then, which are adopted into various religions, and afterwards taught as parts of religious systems,

are derived from secular sources. The most ancient version of the Ten Commandments, whatever the investigations of scholars may make it out to be, originates, not in the thunders of Sinai, but in the peaceful life of men on the plains of Chaldæa. Conscience is the voice of Man ingrained into our hearts, commanding us to work for Man.

Religions differ in the treatment which they give to this most sacred heirloom of our past history. Sometimes they invert its precepts—telling men to be submissive under oppression because the powers that be are ordained of God; telling them to believe where they have not seen, and to play with falsehood in order that a particular doctrine may prevail, instead of seeking for truth whatever it may be; telling them to betray their country for the sake of their church. But there is one great distinction to which I wish, in conclusion, to call special attention—a distinction between two kinds of religious emotion which bear upon the conduct of men.

We said that conscience is the voice of Man within us, commanding us to work for Man. We do not know this immediately by our own experience; we only know that something within us commands us to work for Man. This fact men have tried to explain; and they have thought, for the most part, that this voice was the voice of a God. But the explanation takes two different forms: the God may speak in us for Man's sake, or for his own sake. If he speaks for his own sake—and this is what generally happens when he has priests who lay claim to a magical character and powers—our allegiance is apt to be taken away from Man, and transferred to the God. When we love our brother for the sake of our brother, we help all men to grow in the right; but when we love our brother for the sake of somebody else, who is very likely to damn our brother, it very soon comes to burning him alive for his soul's health. When men respect human life for the sake of Man, tranquillity, order, and progress go hand in hand; but those who only respected human life because God had forbidden murder have set their mark upon Europe in fifteen centuries of blood and fire.

These are only two examples of a general rule. Wherever the allegiance of men has been diverted from Man to some divinity who speaks to men for his own sake and seeks his

own glory, one thing has happened. The right precepts might be enforced, but they were enforced upon wrong grounds, and they were not obeyed. But right precepts are not always enforced; the fact that the fountains of morality have been poisoned makes it easy to substitute wrong precepts for right ones.

To this same treason against humanity belongs the claim of the priesthood to take away the guilt of a sinner after confession has been made to it. The Catholic priest professes to act as an ambassador for his God, and to absolve the guilty man by conveying to him the forgiveness of heaven. If his credentials were ever so sure, if he were indeed the ambassador of a superhuman power, the claim would be treasonable. Can the favour of the Czar make guiltless the murderer of old men and women and children in Circassian valleys? Can the pardon of the Sultan make clean the bloody hands of a Pasha? As little can any God forgive sins committed against man. When men think he can, they compound for old sins which the God did not like by committing new ones which he does like. Many a remorseful despot has atoned for the levities of his youth by the persecution of heretics in his old age. That frightful crime, the adulteration of food, could not possibly be so common amongst us if men were not taught to regard it as merely objectionable because it is remotely connected with stealing, of which God has expressed his disapproval in the Decalogue; and therefore as quite naturally set right by a punctual attendance at church on Sundays. When a Ritualist breaks his fast before celebrating the Holy Communion, his deity can forgive him if he likes, for the matter concerns nobody else; but no deity can forgive him for preventing his parishioners from setting up a public library and reading-room for fear they should read Mr. Darwin's works in it. That sin is committed against the people, and a God cannot take it away.

I call those religions which undermine the supreme allegiance of the conscience to Man *ultramontane* religions, because they seek their springs of action *ultra montes*, outside of the common experience and daily life of man. And I remark about them that they are especially apt to teach wrong precepts, and that even when they command men to do the right things

they put the command upon wrong motives, and do not get the things done.

But there are forms of religious emotion which do not thus undermine the conscience. Far be it from me to undervalue the help and strength which many of the bravest of our brethren have drawn from the thought of an unseen helper of men. He who, wearied or stricken in the fight with the powers of darkness, asks himself in a solitary place, "Is it all for nothing? shall we indeed be overthrown?"—he does find something which may justify that thought. In such a moment of utter sincerity, when a man has bared his own soul before the immensities and the eternities, a presence in which his own poor personality is shrivelled into nothingness arises within him, and says, as plainly as words can say, "I am with thee, and I am greater than thou." Many names of Gods, of many shapes, have men given to this presence; seeking by names and pictures to know more clearly and to remember more continually the guide and the helper of men. No such comradeship with the Great Companion shall have anything but reverence from me, who have known the divine gentleness of Denison Maurice, the strong and healthy practical instinct of Charles Kingsley, and who now revere with all my heart the teaching of James Martineau. They seem to me, one and all, to be reaching forward with loving anticipation to a clearer vision which is yet to come—*tendentesque manus ripæ ulterioris amore.* For, after all, such a helper of men, outside of humanity, the truth will not allow us to see. The dim and shadowy outlines of the superhuman deity fade slowly away from before us; and as the mist of his presence floats aside, we perceive with greater and greater clearness the shape of a yet grander and nobler figure—of Him who made all Gods and shall unmake them. From the dim dawn of history, and from the inmost depth of every soul, the face of our father Man looks out upon us with the fire of eternal youth in his eyes, and says, "Before Jehovah was, I am!"

THE INFLUENCE UPON MORALITY OF A DECLINE IN RELIGIOUS BELIEF

FROM "A MODERN SYMPOSIUM"

(*In No.* 2 *of* "*The Nineteenth Century.*")

IN the third of the preceding discourses[1] there is so much which I can fully and fervently accept, that I should find it far more grateful to rest in that feeling of admiration and sympathy than to attend to points of difference which seem to me to be of altogether secondary import. But for the truth's sake this must first be done, because it will then be more easy to point out some of the bearings of the position held in that discourse upon the question which is under discussion.

That the sense of duty in a man is the prompting of a self other than his own, is the very essence of it. Not only would morals not be self-sufficing, if there were no such prompting of a wider self, but they could not exist: one might as well suppose a fire without heat. Not only is a sense of duty inherent in the constitution of our nature, but the prompting of a wider self than that of the individual is inherent in a sense of duty. It is no more possible to have the right without unselfishness than to have man without a feeling for the right.

We may explain or account for these facts in various ways, but we shall not thereby alter the facts. No theories about heat and light will ever make a cold fire. And no doubt or disproof of any existing theory can any more extinguish that

[1] By Dr. Martineau.

self other than myself, which speaks to me in the voice of conscience, than doubt or disproof of the wave-theory of light can put out the noonday sun.

One such theory is defended in the discourse here dealt with, and, if I may venture to say so, is not quite sufficiently distinguished from the facts which it is meant to explain. The theory is this: that the voice of conscience in my mind is the voice of a conscious being external to me and to all men, who has made us and all the world. When this theory is admitted, the observed discrepancy between our moral sense and the government of the world as a whole makes it necessary to suppose another world and another life in it for men, whereby this discord shall be resolved in a final harmony.

I fully admit that the theistic hypothesis, so grounded, and considered apart from objections otherwise arising, is a reasonable hypothesis and an explanation of the facts. The idea of an external conscious being is unavoidably suggested, as it seems to me, by the categorical imperative of the moral sense; and moreover, in a way quite independent, by the aspect of nature, which seems to answer to our questionings with an intelligence akin to our own. It is more reasonable to assume one consciousness than two, if by that one assumption we can explain two distinct facts; just as if we had been led to assume an ether to explain light, and an ether to explain electricity, we might have run before experiment and guessed that these two ethers were but one. But since there is a discordance between nature and conscience, the theory of their common origin in a mind external to humanity has not met with such acceptance as that of the divine origin of each. A large number of theists have rejected it, and taken refuge in Manichæism and the doctrine of the Demiurgus in various forms; while others have endeavoured, as aforesaid, to redress the balance of the old world by calling into existence a new one.

It is, however, a very striking and significant fact that the great majority of mankind who have thought about these questions at all, while acknowledging the existence of divine beings and their influence in the government of the world, have sought for the spring and sanction of duty in something

above and beyond the Gods. The religions of Brahmanism and of Buddhism, and the moral system of Confucius, have together ruled over more than two-thirds of the human race during the historic period; and in all of these the moral sense is regarded as arising indeed out of a universal principle, but not as personified in any conscious being. This vast body of dissent might well, it should seem, make us ask if there is not something unsatisfying in the theory which represents the voice of conscience as the voice of a God.

Although, as I have said, the idea of an external conscious being is unavoidably suggested by the moral sense, yet, if this idea should be found untrue, it does not follow that nature has been fooling us. The idea is not in the facts, but in our inference from the facts. A mirror unavoidably suggests the idea of a room behind it; but it is not our eyes that deceive us, it is only the inference we draw from their testimony. Further consideration may lead to a different inference of far greater practical value.

Now, whether or no it be reasonable and satisfying to the conscience, it cannot be doubted that theistic belief is a comfort and a solace to those who hold it, and that the loss of it is a very painful loss. It cannot be doubted, at least, by many of us in this generation, who either profess it now, or received it in our childhood and have parted from it since with such searching trouble as only cradle-faiths can cause. We have seen the spring sun shine out of an empty heaven, to light up a soulless earth; we have felt with utter loneliness that the Great Companion is dead. Our children, it may be hoped, will know that sorrow only by the reflex light of a wondering compassion. But to say that theistic belief is a comfort and a solace, and to say that it is the crown or coping of morality, these are different things.

For in what way shall belief in God strengthen my sense of duty? *He is a great one working for the right.* But I already know so many, and I know these so well. *His righteousness is unfathomable; it transcends all ideals.* But I have not yet fathomed the goodness of living men whom I know; still less of those who have lived, and whom I know. And the goodness of all these is a striving for something better; now it is not the goal, but the striving for it, that matters to me. The

essence of their goodness is the losing of the individual self in another and a wider self; but God cannot do this; his goodness must be something different. *He is infinitely great and powerful, and he lives for ever.* I do not understand this mensuration of goodness by foot-pounds and seconds and cubic miles. A little field-mouse, which busies itself in the hedge, and does not mind my company, is more to me than the longest ichthyosaurus that ever lived, even if he lived a thousand years. When we look at a starry sky, the spectacle whose awfulness Kant compared with that of the moral sense, does it help out our poetic emotion to reflect that these specks are really very very big, and very very hot, and very very far away? Their heat and their bigness oppress us; we should like them to be taken still farther away, the great blazing lumps. But when we think of the unseen planets that surround them, of the wonders of life, of reason, of love that may dwell therein, then indeed there is something sublime in the sight. Fitness and kinship; these are the truly great things for us, not force and massiveness and length of days.

Length of days, said the old Rabbi, is measured not by their number, but by the work that is done in them. We are all to be swept away in the final ruin of the earth. The thought of that ending is a sad thought; there is no use in trying to deny this. But it has nothing to do with right and wrong; it belongs to another subject. Like All-father Odin, we must ride out gaily to do battle with the wolf of doom, even if there be no Balder to come back and continue our work. At any rate the right will have been done; and the past is safer than all storehouses.

The conclusion of the matter is that belief in God and in a future life is a source of refined and elevated pleasure to those who can hold it. But the foregoing of a refined and elevated pleasure, because it appears that we have no right to indulge in it, is not in itself, and cannot produce as its consequence, a decline of morality.

There is another theory of the facts of the moral sense set forth in the succeeding discourse,[1] and this seems to me to be the true one. The voice of conscience is the voice of our

[1] By Mr. Frederic Harrison.

Father Man who is within us; the accumulated instinct of the race is poured into each one of us, and overflows us, as if the ocean were poured into a cup.[1] Our evidence for this explanation is that the cause assigned is a *vera causa*, it undoubtedly exists; there is no *perhaps* about that. And those who have tried tell us that it is sufficient: the explanation, like the fact, "covers the whole voluntary field." The lightest and the gravest action may be consciously done in and for Man. And the sympathetic aspect of nature is explained to us in the same way. In so far as our conception of nature is akin to our minds that conceive it, Man made it; and Man made us, with the necessity to conceive it in this way.[2]

I do not, however, suppose that morality would practically gain much from the wide acceptance of true views about its nature, except in a way which I shall presently suggest. I neither admit the moral influence of theism in the past, nor look forward to the moral influence of humanism in the future. Virtue is a habit, not a sentiment or an -ism. The doctrine of total depravity seems to have been succeeded by a doctrine of partial depravity, according to which there is hope for human affairs, but still men cannot go straight unless some tremendous all-embracing theory has a finger in the pie. Theories are most important and excellent things when they help us to see the matter as it really is, and so to judge what is the right thing to do in regard to it. They are the guides of action, but not the springs of it. Now the spring of virtuous action is the social instinct, which is set to work by the practice of comradeship. The union of men in a common effort for a common object—*band-work*, if I may venture to translate co-operation into English—this is and always has been the true school of character. Except in times of severe struggle for national existence, the practice of virtue by masses of men has always been coincident with municipal freedom, and with the vigour of such unions as are not large

[1] Schopenhauer. There is a most remarkable article on the "Natural History of Morals" in the *North British Review*, December 1867.

[2] For an admirable exposition of the doctrine of the social origin of our conceptions, see Professor Croom Robertson's paper, "How we come by our Knowledge," in the first number of the *Nineteenth Century*.

enough to take from each man his conscious share in the work and in the direction of it.

What really affects morality is not religious belief, but a practice which, in some times and places, is thought to be religious—namely, the practice of submitting human life to clerical control. The apparently destructive tendency of modern times, which arouses fear and the foreboding of evil in the minds of many of the best of men, seems to me to be not mainly an intellectual movement. It has its intellectual side, but that side is the least important, and touches comparatively few souls. The true core of it is a firm resolve of men to know the right at first hand, which has grown out of the strong impulse given to the moral sense by political freedom. Such a resolve is a necessary condition to the existence of a pure and noble theism like that of the third discourse,[1] which learns what God is like by thinking of man's love for man. Although that doctrine has been prefigured and led up to for many ages by the best teaching of Englishmen, and—what is far more important—by the best practice of Englishmen, yet it cannot be accepted on a large scale without what will seem to many a decline of religious belief. For assuredly if men learn the nature of God from the moral sense of man, they cannot go on believing the doctrines of popular theology. Such change of belief is of small account in itself, for any consequences it can bring about; but it is of vast importance as a symptom of the increasing power and clearness of the sense of duty.

On the other hand there is one "decline of religious belief," inseparable from a revolution in human conduct, which would indeed be a frightful disaster to mankind. A revival of any form of sacerdotal Christianity would be a matter of practice and not a matter of theory. The system which sapped the foundations of patriotism in the old world; which well-nigh eradicated the sense of intellectual honesty, and seriously weakened the habit of truth-speaking; which lowered men's reverence for the marriage-bond by placing its sanctions in a realm outside of nature instead of in the common life of men, and by the institutions of monasticism and a celibate clergy; which stunted the moral sense of the nations by putting a

[1] Dr. Martineau's.

priest between every man and his conscience; this system, if it should ever return to power, must be expected to produce worse evils than those which it has worked in the past. The house which it once made desolate has been partially swept and garnished by the free play gained for the natural goodness of men. It would come back accompanied by social diseases perhaps worse than itself, and the wreck of civilised Europe would be darker than the darkest of past ages.

COSMIC EMOTION[1]

By a *cosmic emotion*—the phrase is Mr. Henry Sidgwick's—I mean an emotion which is felt in regard to the universe or sum of things, viewed as a cosmos or order. There are two kinds of cosmic emotion—one having reference to the Macrocosm or universe surrounding and containing us, the other relating to the Microcosm or universe of our own souls. When we try to put together the most general conceptions that we can form about the great aggregate of events that are always going on, to strike a sort of balance among the feelings which these events produce in us, and to add to these the feeling of vastness associated with an attempt to represent the whole of existence, then we experience a cosmic emotion of the first kind. It may have the character of awe, veneration, resignation, submission; or it may be an overpowering stimulus to action, like the effect of the surrounding orchestra upon a musician who is thereby caught up and driven to play his proper part with force and exactness of time and tune. If, on the other hand, we consider the totality of our own actions and of the feelings that go with them or spring out of them, if we frame the highest possible generalisation to express the character of those which we call good, and if we contemplate this with the feeling of vastness which belongs to that which concerns all things that all men do, we shall experience a cosmic emotion of the second kind. Such an emotion finds voice in Wordsworth's *Ode to Duty*:

> "Stern daughter of the voice of God!
> O Duty, if that name thou love,
> Who art a light to guide, a rod
> To check the erring, and reprove;

[1] *Nineteenth Century*, October 1877.

Thou who art victory and law
When empty terrors overawe;
From vain temptations dost set free
And calm'st the weary strife of frail humanity!"

A special form of each of these kinds of cosmic emotion has been expressed in a sentence by Immanuel Kant, which has been perfectly translated by Lord Houghton:

"Two things I contemplate with ceaseless awe;
The stars of Heaven, and Man's sense of Law."

For the star-full sky on a clear night is the most direct presentation of the sum of things that we can find, and from the nature of the circumstances is fitted to produce a cosmic emotion of the first kind. And the moral faculty of man was thought of by Kant as possessing universality in a peculiar sense; for the form of all right maxims, according to him, is that they are fit for universal law, applicable to all intelligent beings whatever. This mode of viewing the faculty is clearly well adapted for producing cosmic emotion of the second kind.

The character of the emotion with which men contemplate the world, the temper in which they stand in the presence of the immensities and the eternities, must depend first of all on what they think the world is. The theory of the universe, the view of things, prevalent at any time and place, will rouse appropriate feelings in those who contemplate it; not the same in all, for temperament varies with the individual, and the same facts stir differently different souls, yet so that, on the whole, the character of cosmic emotion depends on the nature of cosmic ideas.

When, therefore, the inevitable progress of knowledge has changed the prevalent cosmic ideas, so that the world as we know it is not the world which our fathers knew, the oldest cosmic emotions are no longer found to fit. Knowledge must have been in men's possession for a long time before it has acquired the certainty, the precision, the familiarity, the wide diffusion and comprehension which make it fit to rouse feelings strong enough and general enough for true poetic expression. For the true poetry is that which expresses *our* feelings, and not *my* feelings only—that which appeals to the universal in the heart of each one of us. So it has come about that the

world of the poet, the world in its emotional aspect, always lags a little behind the world of science, not merely as it appears to the few who are able to assist at the birth of its conceptions, but even as it is roughly and in broad strokes revealed to the many. We always know a little more than our imaginations have thoroughly pictured. To some minds there is hope and renewing of youth in the sense that the last word is not yet spoken, that greater mysteries yet lie behind the veil. The prophet himself may say with gladness, "He that cometh after me shall be preferred before me." But others see in the clearer and wider vision that approaches them the end of all beauty and joy in the earth; because their old feelings are not suited to the new learning, they think that learning can stir no feelings at all. Even the great poet already quoted, whom no science will put out of date, complained of the prosaic effects of explanation, and said, "We murder to dissect."

I propose to consider and compare an ancient and a modern system of cosmic ideas, and to show how the emotions suited to the latter have already in part received poetic expression.

In the early part of the fifth century of our era the Neoplatonic philosopher Hierokles was teaching at Alexandria. He was an Alexandrian by birth, and had studied with Proklos, or a little before him, under Plutarch at Athens. He was a man of great eloquence, and of better Greek than most of his contemporaries. He astonished his hearers everywhere, says Suidas, by the calm, the magnificence, the width of his superlative intellect, and by the sweetness of his speech, full of the most beautiful words and things. A man of manly spirit and courage; for being once at Byzantium he came into collision with the ecclesiastical authorities (τοῖς κρατοῦσι) and was scourged in court; then, streaming with blood, he caught some of it in his hand and threw it at the magistrate, with this verse of the *Odyssey*: "*Here, Cyclops, drink wine, since you eat human flesh!*"[1] For which contempt of court he was banished, but subsequently made his way back to Alexandria. Here he lectured on various topics, foreknowledge, will, and fate, ex-

[1] [The translation is not quite correct. It should rather be "after your meal of human flesh" ("after thy feast of man's meat,"—Butcher and Lang).]

pounding also some of the dialogues of Plato and other philosophical writings.

But the matter of one course of lectures is preserved to us. It is a commentary on a document in hexameter verse belonging to the Pythagorean scriptures, dating apparently from the third century B.C. These lines were called by Jamblichus the Golden Verses; but Gregory of Nazianzum did them the honour to say they were rather made of *lead.* They are not elegant as poetry; the form of verse seems to have been adopted as an aid to the memory. More than half of them consist of a sort of versified "duty to God and my neighbour," except that it is not designed by the rich to be obeyed by the poor, that it lays stress on the laws of health, and that it is just such sensible counsel for the good and right conduct of life as an English gentleman might nowadays give to his son. We need not be astonished that the step from the Mediterranean to Great Britain, over two thousand years of time, should make no great difference in the validity of maxims like these. We might go back four thousand years farther, and find the same precepts handed down at Memphis as the wisdom of a hoar antiquity. "There's some things as I've never felt i' the dark about," says Mrs. Winthrop, "and they're mostly what comes i' the day's work."

There are curious indications that the point of view of the commentator is not that of the verses themselves. "Before all things honour the immortal Gods, as they are ordained by law," begin the verses, with the frank Erastianism of the Greeks, who held that every man should worship the Gods in the manner belonging to his city and country; that matter being settled for themselves by the oracle of the Delphian Apollo. But this did not suit the Neoplatonist of the fifth century, whom the law of his country required to worship images of Mary and her son (to be sure, they might be adapted figures of Isis and Horus) and the miraculous toe-nails of some filthy and ignorant monk. The law named in the verses could not be that which had scourged and banished a philosopher; so it is explained to mean the demiurgic law, which assigns to the Gods their several orders, the law of the divine nature. We are to honour the immortal Gods, says the commentator, in the order which is assigned to them by the law of their

being. For Hierokles there is one supreme deity and three orders of angels—the immortal Gods, the illustrious heroes, and the terrestrial dæmons or partially deified souls of men. The bishops, as we all know, multiplied these numbers by three.

As to the kind of worship, our commentator quotes some old Pythagorean maxims. *You shall honour the God best by becoming godlike in your thoughts. Whoso giveth God honour as to one that needeth it, that man in his folly hath made himself greater than God. The wise man only is a priest, is a lover of God, is skilled to pray.* "For," he says, "that man only knows how to worship who does not confound the relative dignity of worshipful things, who begins by offering himself as the victim, fashions his own soul into a divine image, and furnishes his mind as a temple for the reception of the divine light." "The whole force of worship," he says in another place, "lies in knowledge of the nature of that which is worshipped."

(It is interesting to compare this last maxim with the proposition of Spinoza:[1] "He who clearly and distinctly understands himself and his own emotions, loves God, and that the more, the more he understands himself and his own emotions." For to understand clearly and distinctly is to contemplate in relation to God, to the cosmic idea. When the mind contemplates itself in relation to God, it necessarily rises from a lower to a higher grade of perfection. Now *joy* is the passage from a lower to a higher grade of perfection, and *love* is joy associated with the idea of an external cause. He, then, that rises to higher perfection in the presence of the idea of God, loves God.)

But it is in the latter portion of the *Golden Verses* that we find a general view of life and of nature assigned as the ground of the precepts which have gone before. There are in all seventy-one lines; of the last thirty-two I venture to subjoin a translation as nearly literal as is consistent with intelligibility.[2]

[1] "Qui se suosque affectus clare et distincte intelligit, Deum amat, et eo magis, quo se suosque affectus magis intelligit."—*Eth.* v. prop. xv. Cf. Affectuum definitiones ad fin. part. iii.

[2] The text followed is that of Mullach, in the *Fragmenta Philosophorum Græcorum*, Paris, 1860, from the prolegomena to which my information is derived.

"Let not soft sleep come upon thy eyelids, till thou hast pondered thy deeds of the day:

"Wherein have I sinned? What work have I done? What left undone that I was bound to do?

"Beginning at the first, go through even unto the last; and then let thy heart smite thee for the evil deed, but rejoice in the good work.

"Work at these commandments, and think upon them; these commandments shalt thou love.

"They shall surely set thee in the way of divine righteousness; yea, by Him who gave into our soul the Tetrad, well-spring of Nature everlasting.

"Set to thy work with a will, beseeching the Gods for the end thereof.

"And when thou hast mastered these commandments, thou shalt know the being of the Gods that die not, and of men that die; thou shalt know of things, wherein they are diverse, and the kinship that binds them in one.

"Know, so far as is permitted thee, that Nature in all things is like unto herself:

"That thou mayest not hope that of which there is no hope, nor be ignorant of that which may be.

"Know thou also that the woes of men are the work of their own hands:

"Miserable are they, because they see not and hear not the good that is very nigh them; and the way of escape from evil, few there be that understand it.

"Like rollers they roll to and fro, having endless trouble; so hath fate broken the wits[1] of mortal men.

"A baneful strife lurketh inborn in us, and goeth on the way with us to hurt us; this let not a man stir up, but avoid and flee.

"Verily, Father Zeus, thou wouldst free all men from much evil, if thou wouldst teach all men what manner of spirit they are of.

"But do thou be of good cheer; for they are Gods' kindred whom holy Nature leadeth onward, and in due order showeth them all things.

"And if thou hast any part with them, and keepest these

[1] "My brains are broken."—Sir Walter Raleigh.

commandments, thou shalt utterly heal thy soul, and save it from travail.

"Keep from the meats aforesaid, using judgment both in cleansing and in setting free thy soul.

"Give heed to every matter, and set Reason on high, who best holdeth the reins of guidance.

"Then, when thou leavest the body, and comest into the free æther, thou shalt be a God undying, everlasting, neither shall death have any more dominion over thee."

It is worth while to notice the comment of Hierokles on the self-judgment enjoined in the first of these lines.

"The judge herein appointed," he says, "is the most just of all, and the one which is most at home with us; namely, conscience itself, and right reason. And each man is to be judged by himself, before whom our bringing-up has taught us to be more shamefast than before any other. (As a previous verse commands; of all men be most shamefast before thyself: *πάντων δὲ μάλιστ' αἰσχύνεο σαυτόν*.) For what is there of which one man can so admonish another, as he can himself? For the free will, misusing the liberty of its nature, turns away from the counsels of others, when it does not wish to be led by them; but a man's own reason must needs obey itself."

Whether the clear statement of this doctrine of the conscience, *dominans ille deus in nobis*, as Cicero calls it, is originally Stoic or Pythagorean, must be left for the learned to decide. Hierokles, however, says expressly that the image of Reason guiding the lower faculties as the charioteer guides his chariot was derived by Plato from the Pythagoreans.

Very remarkable indeed is the view of Nature set forth in the subsequent verses. "Know, so far as is permitted thee, that Nature is in all things uniform" (*φύσιν περὶ παντὸς ὁμοίην*). This conception of the world as a great cosmos or order is the primary condition of human progress. In the earliest steps of primitive men in the simplest arts of life there is involved a dim recognition and practical use of it to the extent of its application in that stage. Every step forward is an increase in the range of its application. In the industrial arts, in the rules of health, the methods of healing, the preparation of food, in morals and politics, every advance is an application

of past experience to new circumstances, in accordance with an observed order of nature. Philosophy consists in the conscious recognition of this method, and in the systematic use of it for the complete guidance of life. Aberration from it is the death of the rational soul; not, says Hierokles, that it ceases thereby to exist, but that it falls away from harmony with divine Nature and with reason. This fatal falling away brings about endless waste and perversion of strenuous effort; a hoping for things of which there is no hope, an ignorance of what may be; a perpetual striving to clamber up the back stairs of a universe that has no back stairs. The Neoplatonists were not wholly spotless in this regard. They had learned evil things of the Egyptians: magic, astrology, converse with spirits, theurgy, and the endeavour by trances and ecstasies to arrive at feelings and ideas which are alien to the healthy and wakeful mind. And so the uniformity of nature gives our commentator some little trouble, and requires to be interpreted.

"Know *so far as is permitted thee* (ᾗ θέμις ἐστί)," say the verses. "For we ought not to yield to unreasoning prejudice, and accommodate the order and dignity of things to our fancies; but to keep within the bounds of truth and *know all things as it is permitted*, namely, as the Demiurgic law has assigned to every one its place."

So the commentator, reading into the verses more than the writer put there, not without edification. We, then, on our part, may read into them this—that it is not "permitted" to regard the uniformity of nature as a dogma known with certainty, or exactness, or universality: but only within the range of human conduct, as a practical rule for the guidance of the same, and as the only source of beliefs that will not lead astray. For to affirm any general proposition of this kind to be certainly, or exactly, or universally true, is to make a mistake about the nature and limits of human knowledge. But at present it is a venial mistake, because the doctrine of the nature of human knowledge, *Erkenntniss-theorie*, Ken-lore, is only now being thoroughly worked out, so that our children will know a great deal more about it than we do, and have what they know much better and more simply expressed. It is almost infinitely more important to keep in view that the

uniformity of nature is practically certain, practically exact, practically universal, and to make this conception the guide of our lives, than to remember that this certainty, exactness, and universality are only known practically, not in a theoretical or absolute way.

How far away is the doctrine of uniformity from fatalism! It begins directly to remind us that men suffer from *preventible* evils, that the people perisheth for lack of knowledge. "Miserable are they, because they see not and hear not the good that is very nigh them; and the way of escape from evil, few there be that understand it." The practical lesson is not that of the pessimist, that we should give up the contest, recognise that life is an evil, and get out of it as best we may; but on the contrary, that having found anything wrong, we should set to work to mend it; for *the woes of men are the work of their own hands.*

"But be thou of good cheer, for they are of Gods' kindred whom holy Nature leadeth onward, and in due order showeth them all things."

The expression (ἱερὰ προφέρουσα . . . δείκνυσιν ἕκαστα) belongs to the rite of initiation into the mysteries. Nature is represented as the hierophant, the guiding priest by whom the faithful were initiated into the divine secrets one by one. The history of mankind is conceived as such a mystic progress under the guidance of divine Nature. It has been sometimes said that the ancient world was entirely devoid of the conception of progress. But like most sweeping antitheses between *ancient* and *modern*, *East* and *West*, and the like, when we come to look a little closely into this assertion it becomes difficult to believe that any definite meaning can ever have been assigned to it. Certainly in the matter of physical science there is no case of firmer faith in progress than that of Hipparchus, who having made the great step of determining the solar and lunar motions, and having failed to extend the same methods to the planets, stored up observations in the sure and certain hope that a more fortunate successor would accomplish that work; which indeed was done by Ptolemy. And it is very important to notice that the exact sciences were regarded as the standard to which the others should endeavour to attain, as appears by the commentary on a subsequent

passage in these very verses. On the phrase "using judgment both in *cleansing* and in *setting free* thy soul," Hierokles explains that the *cleansing* or *lustration* of the rational soul means the mathematic sciences, and that the upward-leading liberation (ἀναγωγὸς λύσις), the freedom that is progressive, is *scientific inquiry*, or a *scientific view of things* (διαλεκτικὴ τῶν ὄντων ἐποπτεία), the clear and exact vision of one who has attained the highest grade of initiation. Accordingly, the medical sciences never lost the tradition of progress by continuous observation impressed on them by Hippocrates; and in the Alexandrian museum were trained that galaxy of famous physicians and naturalists which kept the school illustrious until the claims of culture were restored by the Arab conquest. Nor is it possible to deny the conception and practice of political progress to the great jurists of Rome, any more than that of ethical progress to the Stoic moralists. To the best minds, with whatever subject occupied, there was present this conception of divine Nature patiently educating the human race, ready to bring out of her storehouse good things without number in the proper time.

Nor was this hope of continued progress altogether a vain one, if we will only look in the right place for the fulfilment of it. Greek polity and culture had been planted in the East by Alexander's conquests from the Nile to the Indus, there to suck up and gather together the wisdom of centuries and of continents. When the light and the right were driven out of Europe by the Church, they found in the far East a home with the Omaiyad and Abbasside Caliphs, whose reign gave peace and breathing time to the old and young civilisation that was ready to grow. Across the North of Africa came again the progressive culture of Greece and Rome, enriched with precious jewels of old-world lore; it took firm ground in Spain, and the light and the right were flashed back into Europe from the blades of Saracen swords. From Bagdad to Cordova, in the great days of the Caliphate, the best minds had faith in human progress to be made by observation of the order of nature. Here again the true culture was over-ridden and destroyed by the development of the Mohammedan religion; but not until the sacred torch had been safely handed on to the new nations of convalescent Europe.

If the singer of the *Golden Verses* could have contemplated on these lines the history of the two thousand years that were to succeed him, he would have seen an uninterrupted succession of naturalists and physicians, philosophers and statesmen, all steadily reaching forward to the good things that were before, never losing hold of what had already been attained. And we, looking back, may see that through overwhelming difficulties and dangers and diseases holy Nature has indeed been leading onward the kindred of the Gods, slowly but surely unfolding to them the roll of the heavenly mysteries.

Of course, if we restrict our view to Europe itself, we meet with a far more complex and difficult problem; a problem of pathology as opposed to one of healthy growth. We have to explain the apparent anomaly of two epochs of comparative sanity and civilisation separated by the disease and delirium of the Catholic episode.

Just as the traveller, who has been worn to the bone by years of weary striving among men of another skin, suddenly gazes with doubting eyes upon the white face of a brother, so, if we travel backwards in thought over the darker ages of the history of Europe, we at length reach back with such bounding of heart to men who had like hopes with ourselves; and shake hands across that vast with the singers of the *Golden Verses*, our own true spiritual ancestors.

Well may Greece sing to the earth her mother, in the Litany of Nations :—

> "I am she that made thee lovely with my beauty
> From north to south :
> Mine, the fairest lips, took first the fire of duty
> From thine own mouth.
> Mine, the fairest eyes, sought first thy laws and knew them
> Truths undefiled ;
> Mine, the fairest hands, took freedom first into them,
> A weanling child." [1]

Let us now put together the view of Nature and of Life which is presented to us by the *Golden Verses*, with a view to considering its fitness for cosmic emotion. We are taught therein to look upon Nature as a divine Order or Cosmos,

[1] Swinburne, *Songs before Sunrise.*

acting uniformly in all of its diverse parts; which order, by means of its uniformity, is continually educating us and teaching us to act rightly. The ideal character, that which is best fitted to receive the teaching of Nature, is one which has Conscience for its motive power and Reason for its guide. The main point to be observed is that the two kinds of cosmic emotion run together and become one. The macrocosm is viewed only in relation to human action; nature is presented to the emotions as the guide and teacher of humanity. And the microcosm is viewed only as tending to complete correspondence with the external; human conduct is a subject for reverence only in so far as it is consonant to the demiurgic law, in harmony with the teaching of divine Nature. This union of the two sides of cosmic emotion belongs to the essence of the philosophic life, as the corresponding intellectual conception is of the essence of the scientific view of things.

There were other parts of the Pythagorean conception of Nature and Man which we cannot at present so easily accept. And even so much as is here suggested we cannot hold as the Pythagoreans held it, because there are the thoughts and the deeds of two thousand years between. These ideas fall in very well with the furniture of our minds; but a great deal of the furniture is new since their time, and changes their place and importance. Of the detailed machinery of the Pythagorean creed these verses say nothing. Of the sacred fire, the hearth of the universe, with sun and planets and the earth's double antichthon revolving round it, the whole enclosed in a crystal globe with nothing outside—of the "Great Age" of the world, after which everything occurs over again in exactly the same order—of the mystic numbers, and so forth, we find no mention in these verses, and they do not lose much by it, though on that account Zeller calls them "colourless." But a remembrance of these doctrines will help us to appreciate the change that has come over our view of the world.

First, then, the cosmos that we have to do with is no longer a definite whole including absolutely all existence. The old cosmos had a boundary in space, a finite extent in time; for the Great Age might be regarded as a circle, on which you return to the same point after going once round.

Beyond the crystal sphere of the fixed stars was nothing; outside that circle of time no history. But now the real universe extends at least far beyond the cosmos, the order that we actually know of. The sum total of our experience and of the inferences that can fairly be drawn from it is only, after all, a part of something larger. So sings one whom great poets revere as a poet, but to whom writers of excellent prose, and even of leading articles, refuse the name :—

> "I open my scuttle at night and see the far-sprinkled systems,
> And all I see, multiplied as high as I can cipher, edge but the rim of the farther systems.
> Wider and wider they spread, expanding always expanding,
> Outward and outward, and for ever outward.
>
> . . . .
>
> There is no stoppage, and never can be stoppage;
> If I, you, and the worlds, and all beneath or upon their surfaces, were this moment reduced back to a pallid float, it would not avail in the long run;
> We should surely bring up again where we now stand,
> And as surely go as much farther—and then farther and farther.
> A few quadrillions of eras, a few octillions of cubic leagues, do not hazard the span, or make it impatient;
> They are but parts—anything is but a part.
> See ever so far, there is limitless space outside of that;
> Count ever so much, there is limitless time around that." [1]

Whatever conception, then, we can form of the external cosmos must be regarded as only provisional and not final, as waiting revision when we shall have pushed the bounds of our knowledge farther away into time and space. It must always, therefore, have a character of incompleteness about it, a want, a stretching out for something better to come, the expectation of a further lesson from the universal teacher, Experience. And this not only by way of extension of space and time, but by increase of our knowledge even about this part that we know of. Our conception of the universe is for us, and not for our children, any more than it was for our fathers.

But again, this incompleteness does not belong to our conception of the external cosmos alone, but to that of the internal cosmos also. Human nature is fluent, it is constantly though slowly changing, and the universe of human action

[1] Whitman, *Leaves of Grass*.

is changing also. Whatever general conception we may form of good actions and bad ones, we must regard it as quite valid only for ourselves; the next generation will have a slightly modified form of it, but not the same thing. The Kantian universality is no longer possible. No maxim can be valid at all times and places for all rational beings; a maxim valid for us can only be valid for such portions of the human race as are practically identical with ourselves.

Here then we have two limitations to keep in mind when we form our cosmic conceptions. On both sides they are provisional; instead of picturing to ourselves a universe, we represent only a changing part; instead of contemplating an eternal order, and absolute right, we find only a changing property of a shifting organism.

Are we then to be disappointed? I think not; for if we consider these limitations a little more closely, we shall perceive an advantage in each of them.

First, of the external cosmos. Our conception is limited to a part of things. But to what part? Why, precisely to the part that concerns us. The universe we have to consider is the whole of that knowledge which can rightly influence human action. For, wherever there is a question of guiding human action, there is a possibility of profiting by experience on the assumption that nature is uniform; that is, there is room for the application of science. All practical questions, therefore, are within the domain of science. And we may show conversely that all questions in the domain of science, all questions, that is, which have a real intelligible meaning, and which may be answered either now or at some future time by inferences founded on the uniformity of nature, are *practical* questions in a very real and important sense. For the interrogation of nature, without and within him, is a most momentous part of the work of man on this earth, seeing how all his progress has depended upon conscious or unconscious labour at this task. And although the end of all knowledge is action, and it is only for the sake of action that knowledge is sought by the human race, yet, in order that it may be gained in sufficient breadth and depth, it is necessary that the individual should seek knowledge *for its own sake.* The seeking of knowledge for its own sake is a

practical pursuit of incalculable value to humanity. The pretensions of those who would presume to clothe genius in a strait-waistcoat, who would forbid it to attempt this task because Descartes failed in it, and that one because Comte knew nothing about it, would be fatally mischievous if they could be seriously considered by those whom they might affect. No good work in science has ever been done under such conditions; and no good worker can fail to see the utter futility and short-sightedness of those who advocate them. For there is no field of inquiry, however apparently insignificant, that does not teach the worker in it to distrust his own powers of prevision as to what he is likely to find; to expect the unexpected; to be suspicious of his own accuracy if everything comes out quite as it "ought to"; but not to hazard the shadow of a guess about the degree of "utility" that may result from his investigations. Man's creative energy may be checked and hindered, or perverted from the truth; but it is not to be regulated by a pedantic schoolmaster who thought he could whip the centuries with his birch broom.

The cosmos, then, which science now presents to our minds, is only a part of something larger which includes it. But at the same time it is the whole of what concerns us, and no more than what concerns us. Wherever human knowledge establishes itself, that point becomes thenceforward a centre of practical human interest. It, and whatever valid inference can be connected with it, is the business of all mankind.

So also, if we consider the limitation imposed on our idea of the internal cosmos by the changing character of human nature, we shall find that we have gained more than we have lost by it. It is true that we can no longer think of conscience and reason as testifying to us of things eternal and immutable. Human nature is no longer there, a definite thing from age to age, persisting unaltered through the vicissitudes of cities and peoples. Very nearly constant it is, practically constant for so many centuries; but not constant through that range of time which it practically concerns us to know about and to ponder. But, on the other side, what a flood of light is let in by this very fact, not only on human nature, but on the whole world! It is impossible to exaggerate the

effect of the doctrine of evolution on our conception of man and of nature. Suppose all moving things to be suddenly stopped at some instant, and that we could be brought fresh, without any previous knowledge, to look at this petrified scene. The spectacle would be intensely absurd. Crowds of people would be senselessly standing on one leg in the street, looking at one another's backs; others would be wasting their time by sitting in a train in a place difficult to get at, nearly all with their mouths open and their bodies in some contorted, unrestful posture. Clocks would stand with their pendulums on one side. Everything would be disorderly, conflicting, in its wrong place. But once remember that the world is in motion, is going somewhere, and everything will be accounted for and found just as it should be. Just so great a change of view, just so complete an explanation, is given to us when we recognise that the nature of man and beast and of all the world is changing, is going somewhere. The silly maladaptations in organic nature are seen to be steps towards the improvement or discarding of imperfect organs. The *baneful strife which lurketh inborn in us, and goeth on the way with us to hurt us*, is found to be the relic of a time of savage or even lower condition.

It is probable that the doctrine of evolution fills a somewhat larger space in our attention than belongs to its ultimate influence. In the next century, perhaps, men will not think so much about it; they will be paying a new attention to some new thing. But it will have seized upon their minds, and will dominate all their thoughts to an extent that we cannot as yet conceive. When the sun is rising we pay special attention to him and admire his glories; but when he is well risen we forget him, because we are busy walking about in his light.

Meanwhile, the doctrine of evolution may be made to compensate us for the loss of the immutable and eternal verities by supplying us with a general conception of a *good* action, in a wider sense than the ethical one.

If I have evolved myself out of something like an amphioxus, it is clear to me that I have become *better* by the change; I have risen in the organic scale; I have become more organic. Of all the changes that I have undergone, the greater part

must have been changes in the organic direction; some in the opposite direction, some perhaps neutral. But if I could only find out which, I should say that those changes which have tended in the direction of greater organisation were good, and those which tended in the opposite direction bad. Here there is no room for proof; the words "good" and "bad" belong to the practical reason, and if they are defined, it is by pure choice. I choose that definition of them which must on the whole cause those people who act upon it to be selected for survival. The good action, then, is a mode of action which distinguishes organic from inorganic things, and which makes an organic thing more organic, or raises it in the scale. I shall try presently to determine more precisely what is the nature of this action; we must now merely remember that my actions are to be regarded as good or bad according as they tend to improve me as an organism, to make me move farther away from those intermediate forms through which my race has passed, or to make me retrace these upward steps and go down again. Here we have our general principle for the internal cosmos, the world of our own actions.

What now is our principle for the external cosmos? We consider here again not a statical thing, but a vast series of events. We want to contemplate not the nature of the external universe as it now is, but the history of its changes; not a perpetual cycle of similar events, with nothing new under the sun, but a drama, whose beginning is different from its middle, and the middle from the end. For practical purposes, which are what concern us, the solar system is a quite sufficient cosmos. We have certainly a history of it, furnished to us by the nebular hypothesis; and the truth of this hypothesis is a matter of practical interest, because the failure of the inferences on which it is founded would modify our actions very considerably. Still the great use is to show that the life upon the earth must have been evolved from inorganic matter; for the evolution of life is that part of the history of the cosmos which directly concerns us. Now here we have the enormous series of events which bridges over the gulf between the smallest piece of colloid matter and the human organism; this is our external cosmos. Must we leave it as a series of events? or can we find a general

principle by which the series shall be represented as a single event constantly going on? Clearly we can, for the single event is a mode of action which distinguishes organic from inorganic things, and which makes organic things more organic. We may regard this mode of action as the generating principle which has produced all the life upon the earth.

We arrive thus at a common principle, which at once distinguishes good actions from bad in the internal world, and which has created the external world, so far as it is living. This principle is, then, a fit object for cosmic emotion if we can only get rid of the vagueness of its definition. And it has this great advantage, that it does not need to be personified for poetical purposes. For, we may regard the result of this mode of action, extended over a great length of time, as in some way an embodiment of the action itself. In this way the human race embodies in itself all the ages of organic action that have gone to its evolution. The nature of organic action, then, is to personify itself, and it has personified itself most in the human race.

But before we go farther two things must be remarked. First, the very great influence of life in modifying the surface of the earth, so great as in many cases to be comparable to the effects of far ruder changes. Thus we have rocks composed entirely of organic remains, and climate changed by the presence or absence of forests. Secondly, although we have restricted our cosmos to the earth in space, and to the history of life upon it in time, there is no necessity to maintain the restriction. For we must suppose that organic action will always take place when the elements which are capable of it are present under the requisite physical conditions of temperature, light, and environment. It is therefore in the last degree improbable that it is confined to our own planet.

In this principle, therefore, we must recognise the mother of life, and especially of human life; powerful enough to subdue the elements, and yet always working gently against them; biding her time in the whole expanse of heaven, to make the highest cosmos out of inorganic chaos; the actor, not of all the actions of living things, but only of the good actions; for a bad action is one by which the organism tends to become less organic, and acts for the time as if inorganic.

To this mother of life, personifying herself in the good works of humanity, it seems to me that we may fitly address a splendid hymn of Mr. Swinburne's, whose meaning if I mar or mistake by such application, let the innocency of my intent plead for pardon with one into whose work it is impossible to read more or more fruitful meaning than he meant in the writing of it:—

"Mother of man's time-travelling generations,
Breath of his nostrils, heart-blood of his heart,
God above all Gods worshipped of all nations,
Light above light, law beyond law, thou art.

"Thy face is as a sword smiting in sunder
Shadows and chains and dreams and iron things;
The sea is dumb before thy face, the thunder
Silent, the skies are narrower than thy wings.

. . . . . .

"All old gray histories hiding thy clear features,
O secret spirit and sovereign, all men's tales,
Creeds woven of men thy children and thy creatures,
They have woven for vestures of thee and for veils.

"Thine hands, without election or exemption,
Feed all men fainting from false peace or strife,
O thou, the resurrection and redemption,
The godhead and the manhood and the life."[1]

Still our conception is very vague. We have only said "*good action* has created the life of the world, and in so doing has personified itself as humanity; so we call it the mother of life and of man." And we have defined good action to be that which makes an organism more organic. We want, therefore, to know something more definite about the kind of action which makes an organism more organic.

This we can find, and of a nature suitable for cosmic emotion, by paying attention to the difference between molar and molecular movement. We know that the particles even of bodies which appear to be at rest are really in a state of very rapid agitation, called molecular motion, and that heat and nerve-discharge are cases of such motion. But molar motion is the movement in one piece of masses large enough to be seen.

Now the peculiarity of living matter is that it is capable of combining together molecular motions, which are invisible,

[1] *Songs before Sunrise.*

into molar motions, which can be seen. It therefore appears to have the property of moving spontaneously, without help from anything else. So it can for a little while; but it is then obliged to take molecular motion from the surrounding things if it is to go on moving. So that there is no real spontaneity in the case. But still its changes of shape, due to aggregation of molecular motion, may fairly be called *action from within,* because the energy of the motion is supplied by the substance itself, and not by any external thing. If we suppose the same thing to be true for a complex organism that is true for a small speck of living matter—that those changes in it which are directly initiated by the living part of the organism are the ones which distinguish it from inorganic things, and tend to make it more organic—then we shall have here the nearer definition of organic action. It is probable that the definition as I have stated it is rather *too* precise—that the nature of the action, in fact, varies with circumstances in the complex organism, but is always nearly as stated.

Let us consider what this means from the internal point of view. When I act from within, or in an organic manner, what seems to me to happen? I must appear to be perfectly free, for, if I did not, I must be made to act by something outside of me. "We think ourselves free," says Spinoza, "being conscious of our actions, and not of the causes which determine them." But we have seen reason to believe that although there is no physical spontaneity, yet the energy for such an action is taken out of myself—*i.e.* out of the living matter in my body. As, therefore, the immediate origin of my action is in myself, I really am free in the only useful sense of the word. "Freedom is such a property of the will," says Kant, "as enables living agents to originate events independently of foreign determining causes."

The character of an organic action, then, is freedom—that is to say, *action from within.* The action which has its immediate antecedents within the organism has a tendency, in so far as it alters the organism, to make it more organic, or to raise it in the scale. The action which is determined by foreign causes is one in regard to which the organism acts as if inorganic, and in so far as the action tends to alter it, it tends also to lower it in the scale.

It is important to remember that only a part of the body of a complex organism is actually living matter. This living matter carries about a quantity of formed or dead stuff; as Epictetus says, ψυχάριον εἶ βάσταζον νεκρόν—"a little soul for a little bears up this corpse which is man."[1] Only actions originating in the living part of the organism are to be regarded as actions from within; the dead part is for our purposes a portion of the external world. And so, from the internal point of view, there are rudiments and survivals in the mind which are to be excluded from that *me*, whose free action tends to progress; that *baneful strife which lurketh inborn in us* is the foe of freedom—*this let not a man stir up, but avoid and flee.*

The way in which freedom, or action from within, has effected the evolution of organisms, is clearly brought out by the theory of Natural Selection. For the improvement of a breed depends upon the selection of *sports*—that is to say, of modifications due to the overflowing energy of the organism, which happen to be useful to it in its special circumstances. Modifications may take place by direct pressure of external circumstances; the whole organism or any organ may lose in size and strength from failure of the proper food, but such modifications are in the downward, not in the upward direction. *Indirectly* external circumstances may of course produce upward changes; thus the drying up of axolotl ponds caused the survival of individuals which had "sported" in the direction of lungs. But the *immediate* cause of change in the direction of higher organisation is always the internal and quasi-spontaneous action of the organism.

> "Freedom we call it, for holier
>   Name of the soul there is none;
> Surelier it labours, if slowlier,
>   Than the metres of star or of sun;
> Slowlier than life into breath,
> Surelier than time into death,
>   It moves till its labour be done."[2]

[1] Swinburne, *Poems and Ballads.* I am aware of the difficulties which beset Dr. Beale's theory of germinal matter, as they are stated by Mr. G. H. Lewes; but however hard it may be to decide what *is* living matter, and what is formed stuff, the distinction appears to me to be a real one, to the extent, at least, of the use here made of it.

[2] Swinburne, *Songs before Sunrise.*

The highest of organisms is the social organism. To Mr. Herbert Spencer, who has done so much for the whole doctrine of evolution and for all that is connected with it, we owe the first clear and rational statement of the analogy between the individual and the social organism, which, indeed, is more than an analogy, being in many respects a true identity of process and structure and function. Our main business is with one property which the social organism has in common with the individual—namely, this, that it aggregates molecular motions into molar ones. The molecules of a social organism are the individual men, women, and children of which it is composed. By means of it, actions which, as individual, are insignificant, are massed together into the important movements of a society. Co-operation, or *band-work*, is the life of it. Thus it is able to "originate events independently of foreign determining causes," or to act with freedom.

Freedom in a society, then, is a very different thing from anarchy. It is the organic action of the society as such; the union of its elements in a common work. As Mr. Spencer points out, society does not resemble those organisms which are so highly centralised that the unity of the whole is the important thing, and every part must die if separated from the rest, but rather those which will bear separation and reunion, because although there is a certain union and organisation of the parts in regard to one another, yet the far more important fact is the life of the parts separately. The true health of society depends upon the communes, the villages and townships, infinitely more than on the form and pageantry of an imperial government. If in them there is band-work, union for a common effort, converse in the working out of a common thought, then the Republic *is*, and needs not to be made with hands, though Cæsar have his guns in every citadel. None the less it will be part of the business of the Republic, as she grows in strength, to remove him. So long as two or three are gathered together, freedom is there in the midst of them, and it is not until society is utterly divided into its elements that she departs:—

"Courage yet! my brother or my sister!
Keep on! Liberty is to be subserv'd, whatever occurs;
That is nothing, that is quell'd by one or two failures, or any number of
failures,

Or by the indifference or ingratitude of the people, or by any unfaithfulness,
Or the show of the tushes of power, soldiers, cannon, penal statutes.
Revolt! and still revolt! revolt!
What we believe in waits latent forever through all the continents, and all the islands and archipelagos of the sea;
What we believe in invites no one, promises nothing, sits in calmness and light, is positive and composed, knows no discouragement,
Waiting patiently, waiting its time.

. . . .

When liberty goes out of a place, it is not the first to go, nor the second or third to go,
It waits for all the rest to go—it is the last.
When there are no more memories of heroes and martyrs,
And when all life, and all the souls of men and women are discharged from any part of the earth,
Then only shall liberty, or the idea of liberty, be discharged from that part of the earth,
And the infidel come into full possession."[1]

So far our cosmic conception is external. Starting with organic action, as that which has affected the evolution of life and all the works of life, we have found it to have the character of freedom, or action from within, and in the case of the social organism we have seen that freedom is the organic action of society as such, which is what we call the Republic. The Republic is the visible embodiment and personification of freedom in its highest external type.

But the Republic is itself still further personified, in a way that leads us back with new light to the conception of the internal cosmos. The practice of band-work, or comradeship, the organic action of society, has so moulded the nature of man as to create in it two specially human faculties—the conscience and the intellect. Conscience is an instinctive desire for those things which conduce to the welfare of society; intellect is an apparatus for connecting sensation and action, by means of a symbolic representation of the external world, framed in common and for common purposes by the social intercourse of men. Conscience and reason form an inner core in the human mind, having an origin and a nature distinct from the merely animal passions and perceptions; they constitute the soul or spirit of man, the universal part in every one of us. In these are bound up, embalmed and

[1] Whitman, *Leaves of Grass*, p. 363.

embodied, all the struggles and searchings of spirit of the countless generations which have made us what we are. Action which arises out of that inner core, which is prompted by conscience and guided by reason, is *free* in the highest sense of all; this at last is *good* in the ethical sense. And yet, when we act with this most perfect freedom, it may be said that it is not we that act, but Man that worketh in us. He whose life is habitually governed by reason and conscience is the free and wise man of the philosophers of all ages. The highest freedom, then, is identical with the Spirit of Man—

> "The earth-god Freedom, the lonely
> Face lightening, the footprint unshod,
> Not as one man crucified only
> Nor scourged with but one life's rod;
> The soul that is substance of nations,
> Reincarnate with fresh generations;
> The great god Man, which is God." [1]

The social organism itself is but a part of the universal cosmos, and like all else is subject to the uniformity of nature. The production and distribution of wealth, the growth and effect of administrative machinery, the education of the race, these are cases of general laws which constitute the science of sociology. The discovery of exact laws has only one purpose —the guidance of conduct by means of them. The laws of political economy are as rigid as those of gravitation; wealth distributes itself as surely as water finds its level. But the use we have to make of the laws of gravitation is not to sit down and cry "Kismet!" to the flowing stream, but to construct irrigation works. And the use which the Republic must make of the laws of sociology is to rationally organise society for the training of the best citizens. Much patient practice of comradeship is necessary before society will be qualified to organise itself in accordance with reason. But those who can read the signs of the times read in them that the kingdom of Man is at hand.

[1] Swinburne, *Songs before Sunrise.*

VIRCHOW ON THE TEACHING OF SCIENCE[1]

THE jubilee meeting of German naturalists and physicians at Munich last year (1877) was marked by an incident which has deservedly attracted attention in this country. Addresses were delivered to the Association, among others, by three very eminent men, and, as was natural on such an occasion, each of them took the form of a review of the situation of science at this moment. Häckel, of Jena, led the way by a discourse on the present position of the evolution theory; on the nature of the evidence for various parts of it; the bearing of it upon mental science or psychology, upon education, and upon morals. He was followed by Nägeli of Munich, "On the Limits of Natural Knowledge," who pointed out that we have a limited number of senses, and that we cannot deal with things which are too large, or too small, or too far away, or with events which happened too long ago; but that if we will be satisfied with such kind of knowledge as we can get, we do really know something, and may come to know a great deal more.

But the words most listened to and most repeated were undoubtedly those of Virchow of Berlin, "On the Liberty of Science in the Modern State." He recalled the early days of the Association, when it had to meet in secret for fear of the authorities; and he warned his colleagues that their present liberty was not a secure possession, that a reaction was possible, and that they should endeavour to make sure of the ground by a wise moderation, by a putting forward of those things which are established in the sight of all men, rather than of individual opinions. He divided scientific doctrines

[1] *Nineteenth Century*, April 1878.

into those which are actually proved and perfectly determined, which we may give out as real science in the strictest sense of the word; and those which are still to be proved, but which, in the meantime, may be taught with a certain amount of probability, in order to fill up gaps in our knowledge. Doctrines of the former class must be completely admitted into the scientific treasure of the nation, and must become part of the nation itself; they must modify the whole method of thinking. For an example of such a doctrine he took the great increase in our knowledge of the eye and its working which has come to us in recent times, and the doctrine of perception founded upon it. Things so well known as this, he said, must be taught to children in the schools. "If the theory of descent is as certain as Professor Häckel thinks it is, then we must demand its admission into the school, and this demand is a necessary one." And this, even although there is danger of an alliance between socialism and the doctrine of evolution.

But, he went on to say, there are parts of the evolution theory which are not yet established scientific doctrines in the sense that they ought to be taught dogmatically in schools. Of these he specially named two: the spontaneous generation of living matter out of inorganic bodies, without the presence of previously living matter; and the descent of man from some non-human vertebrate animal. These, he said, are problems; we may think it ever so probable that living matter has been formed out of non-living matter, and that man has descended from an ape-like ancestor; we may fully expect that evidence will shortly be forthcoming to establish these statements; but meanwhile we must not teach them as known and established scientific facts. We ought to say, "Do not take this for established truth, be prepared to find that it is otherwise; only for the moment we are of opinion that *it may be true.*"

There is something, I think, very natural and very charming in this scene. The young apostle is full of faith and hope, he has fought his way, undaunted by little stumbles and disappointments, through great morasses of difficulty, and always he has seen his gospel steadily marching on to its triumphant subjugation of the ideal world; and before

this gospel accordingly he summons the practical world to bow down. "Not so fast," says the veteran, who, in his time, indeed, has been bold enough, and taken sober men's breath away; but who now marches with careful steps, and is conscious of his balance. "Don't be quite so sure about it; you will turn everything upside down." One is glad that on a great occasion both sides had their say, and that the word of caution came last, being prompted by the word of courage; and one hopes that on all similar occasions there may be courage enough to justify a like word of caution.

It is also very natural that this speech should have been a source of great relief and comfort to many who did not want to believe in the doctrine of descent, and who feared that, somehow, they were going to be made to believe in it. It seemed to them, in Dr. Tyndall's words, that "the world—even the clerical world—had for the most part settled down in the belief that Mr. Darwin's book (*The Origin of Species*) simply reflects the truth of nature;" and that, on the penalty of appearing somewhat singular, they would have to settle down in the same belief themselves. But here is a very eminent scientific man who says he is not quite sure about it; so the world, having only settled down under the supposed weight of an authority which it is not yet very fond of, begins to unsettle itself again; and one need not be at all singular in saying that there is really nothing in the doctrine of evolution, because it is not yet supported by facts. Indeed, the world has become so much impressed with the importance of the rule that you should not teach as a known fact that which is not a known fact, that we may almost expect to hear a bishop declare from his cathedral pulpit that the authorship of the fourth gospel is a doubtful question, and that a man would be rash who fully made up his mind to ascribe it to the apostle John.

It may therefore not seem amiss in one who is no biologist, who is therefore a layman in regard to this question of organic evolution, if he should endeavour to lay to heart the warnings of Virchow, and inquire what practical bearing they have on the state of things in our own country. This is what I now propose to do; but I shall confine myself in the main to the question of school teaching. I speak as a householder to

householders, on this matter of grave and common concern: what shall we have taught to our children? Of all the questions discussed in Virchow's speech, this seems to me the most practical, and the most interesting to us as a people.

For I do not think that we in England have much cause to fear either a reaction which shall stop the mouth of the scientific teacher, or a socialist revolution founded on the doctrine of descent. It is true that there are some among us who seriously dislike "science," and who look with dread and suspicion on the teachers of it. I am not attaching importance to the personalities of orthodox polemic, which, having "no case," is compelled to "abuse the plaintiff's attorney." This symptom is of weight only as a symptom, and as such is understood by the intelligent public. But there are men high in literature, in statesmanship, and in art, whose good opinion, founded on knowledge, every man of sense must count desirable, who yet withhold that good opinion from the scientific teacher and the work that he is doing. Notwithstanding this fact, I have no fear that the attitude of mind of these men will be intensified, or will become more general; because it seems to me to be clearly traceable to two circumstances, both of which are disappearing. I mean that there are faults on both sides, and that both faults are being mended.

The first fault is on the side of the scientific student; and yet it is not altogether *his* fault, because it comes of the great change which is passing over our educational system. We have all been learning science—that is, organised common sense—at school for some centuries, and did not know what it was. But of recent times our science has received enormous additions, partly new sense, partly fresh organised; and these have now to be taught. The first generation of teachers of the new science could naturally not learn it in places where the old science, which we called a liberal education, was to be learned. Some of them learned both, with much labour, and searching, and picking up out of stray corners; but some went without a liberal education altogether. And perhaps a few of these, when they found what a demand there was for them and how important they were, may have fallen into a mistake, and taken their half- or quarter-culture for a whole

culture. Now when a man not only mistakes his half- or quarter-culture for a whole culture, but thinks that the culture which he does not possess is silly and worthless, then people who have received a liberal education are apt to think him a bore. And it would be a hard matter to prove them altogether in the wrong.

But this race, which bores a few and educates the many, is patiently and surely exterminating itself. As the new science makes itself at home in the school-house of the old, as it is more taught and in a more civilised manner, the mind of the student balances itself, and recovers its sense of proportion. Exact observation goes naturally enough with justice and simplicity of statement; the great inductions of human life and feeling lighten up by resemblance and contrast the great inductions of physics. Dynamics and Prose Composition have met together; Literature and Biology have kissed each other. Perhaps not yet, but the good time is coming. And in that time every scientific teacher will have received such a many-sided culture, and will be no longer a bore to anybody. Above all, he will have studied that History of Culture itself, which is the great unifier and justifier and purifier of all our teaching.

The other fault is on the side of those who dislike the new science; it is the fault of being profoundly ignorant of it. No public school boy thinks a man uncanny because he knows a great deal of Greek; no member of Parliament imagines that a careful study of ancient history, or even a revolutionary view about the *Iliad*, might become a dangerous ally of socialism. It is because he has learned a little Greek himself, and knows what it is like. But if a man has morphology at his fingers' ends, or is profound about organic radicles, that is a man to beware of. There is no knowing what theories he does not secretly foster. Or else he is a mere impostor, and gets a great reputation for pottering away at some silly trifles, being really no better than an official in the Herald's Office: so hinted some irreverent young scapegrace in the prologue to the Westminster Play. Now it is clear that a statesman who thinks a decimal coinage means the keeping of shilling and pence accounts in terms of decimal fractions, or a musician who really sees no difference between

Graham Bell's telephone and Wheatstone's telephonic concert, may well be expected to misjudge exact students, and their studies, and their aims. But in the good time coming, when "there shall be no Member of Parliament who does not know as much of science as a scholar in one of our elementary schools," when also benevolent old ladies may be expected to know one end of a guinea-pig from the other, all this will be changed. The man of science will be no more uncanny than the Greek scholar is now. And we may be quite sure that the average Englishman is not going to see a man bullied for merely knowing a little more of what he himself learned a little of at school. When he has learned a little science himself, and knows what it is like, he will have, it is true, a less superstitious reverence for the authority of the investigator; but then also he will regard him as a citizen, having as good a right to be trusted and respected, and to say his say upon matters of common interest, as anybody else.

Such distrust or dislike of science, then, as is to be found among us, is due to circumstances which are rapidly disappearing, to misunderstandings and imperfect training, and not to that which alarmed our Prussian colleague, a tendency in the expounders of scientific doctrine to make too sure of things, to put forward as known fact that which is not yet known fact, but only conjecture. Indeed, our own scientific teachers, notably Huxley and Tyndall, have for years been impressing upon us this very thing, by example and precept, in season and out of season—if indeed it is possible for such warning to be out of season. And to their testimony I shall hope to return presently.

As to that other fear of Virchow's, that some caricature of the true doctrine of evolution may become a dangerous weapon in the hands of the socialist, it is a thing somewhat difficult for us to understand. We have a way of suspecting that when socialism is dangerous, somebody or other is being badly treated. We can conceive that it should cause uneasiness to a repressive and meddling protectionist Government. But in this country, where it would probably mean a kind of alliance between co-operative stores and that very respectable institution, the Metropolitan Board of Works, we cannot undertake to be much alarmed about it. Before any socialist

measure could enter into practical politics at all, it would have so far to commend itself to the country as to be supported by a considerable number of votes in the House of Commons; and a measure which can do that is a thing not to be shuddered at, but to be calmly discussed.

What really remains for us to consider, then, as of English interest, is, as I said before, that question about the teaching of our children. The principle laid down by Virchow I shall assume as the basis of the discussion: *we ought not to teach to little children, as a known fact, that which is not a known fact.* And the questions to be discussed are, in what respects this canon is disobeyed or in danger of being disobeyed: and what means we should adopt that our system of teaching may be more perfectly conformed to it. It seems to me that the second question answers itself in the process of considering the first one. I shall therefore now proceed to those doctrines which, in Virchow's view, are in danger of being taught with an assurance which is in advance of the actual evidence for them.

And first, let us consider that very important doctrine of the descent of man from some non-human ancestor. "There are, at this time, few students of nature who are not of opinion that man stands in some connection with the rest of the animal world, and that such a connection may possibly be discovered, if not with the apes, yet perhaps, as Dr. Vogt now supposes, at some other point." Notwithstanding this, Virchow says: "We cannot teach, we cannot pronounce it to be a conquest of science, that man descends from the ape or any other animal." He bases this decision upon the absence of such evidence from palæontology in the case of man as is found in the case of the horse. The horse (asses and zebras being included under this name) is a one-toed beast, thereby differing from all other mammals; but, as he has many points showing relationship with them, it is probable that he is descended from a five-toed ancestor. The problem is to find this ancestor. There is no trace of him in the quaternary strata. If the naturalist were confined to the evidence of those strata, and were not particularly careful of his logic, he might "declare that every positive advance which we have made in the domain of prehistoric hippology has actually

removed us farther from the proof of such a connection." The doctrine of the descent of the horse from a five-toed ancestor would, in fact, rest upon other grounds than the actual discovery of the ancestral form. But the ancestor of the horse has been found in the tertiary strata. He has three toes in the more recent strata, and four toes in the earlier; and, curiously enough, the complete series is found in America, where there were no horses at the time of its discovery by Europeans. Now Man, on the other hand, is a complex-brained animal, differing in this way and in some others from all other mammals; but since in other respects his whole structure shows relationship with them, and especially with the apes, it is probable that he is descended from an ancestor with a simpler brain and a structure generally bearing more resemblance to the common Simian type. The problem is to find this ancestor. There is no trace of him in the quaternary strata, because the quaternary men are still men so far as their bony structure is concerned, and we have no evidence about the complexity of their brains, the pointedness of their ears, or the hairy covering of their bodies. Nor, as yet, has any decisive discovery been made of the remains of man, or of any sufficiently man-like animal to count as his ancestor, in the tertiary strata. Until we find the missing link, says Virchow, the descent of man from an ape-like ancestor is not a conquest of science. When we do find the missing link, it will be a conquest of science.

It will naturally, I think, strike any one who, though a layman, has gained a certain amount of secondhand knowledge of this subject from books, that in this view of the two cases the evidence of fossils is made rather too much of, while other kinds of evidence are wholly ignored. It is a bold thing to criticise the judgment of a pathologist upon general doctrines of biology, when one is oneself not a biologist in any respect. I will therefore shelter myself under authority.

"When we confine our attention to any one form (says Darwin) we are deprived of the weighty arguments derived from the nature of the affinities which connect together whole groups of organisms—their geographical distribution in past and present times, and their geological succession. The homological structure, embryological development, and rudimentary

organs of a species, whether it be man or any other animal, to which our attention may be directed, remain to be considered; but these great classes of facts afford, as it appears to me, ample and conclusive evidence in favour of the principle of gradual evolution."[1]

For example, it happens that the missing link between man and the anthropoids has not yet been found; but there is a Miocene link which bridges a greater gulf between two other families of apes.[2] So that kinds of evidence may exist in regard to an order of animals which are wanting in the case of an individual family of the order. But both the general analogy of Nature, and the three great classes of facts considered by Darwin in the special case of Man, are apparently reckoned by Virchow as of no practical weight, until the bones of the missing link are safe in the glass cases of a geological museum. I say *apparently*, because it would be insulting a great man to suppose that he really held such an opinion, which, moreover, is inconsistent with the preface to the English translation of his speech. In fact, this admirable speech, in so many ways like that of a cabinet minister reassuring his Opposition, contains more than one passage which, especially when isolated and printed in capitals, it is easy for the Opposition to interpret in a sense more favourable to its own views than that which the speaker had in his mind.

Not only, however, are important kinds of evidence left out of count, but as it seems to me—under guidance, as before—the cogency of the evidence from fossils is somewhat overrated. We must be very careful not to be too sure of these conclusions, lest we should teach as established results of science what are, after all, remote and precarious inferences.

"We must recollect (says Huxley) that any human belief, however broad its basis, however defensible it may seem, is, after all, only a probable belief, and that our widest and safest generalisations are simply statements of the highest degree of probability. Though we are quite clear about the constancy of the order of Nature, at the present time, and in the present state of things, it by no means necessarily follows that we are justified in expanding this generalisation into the infinite past, and in denying absolutely, that there may have been a time

[1] Preface to *Descent of Man*. [2] *Descent of Man*, i. 197.

when Nature did not follow a fixed order, when the relations of cause and effect were not definite, and when extra-natural agencies interfered with the general course of Nature." [1]

The fact is, we are not absolutely and theoretically certain that these old three-toed and four-toed horse-bones were not made, on purpose to deceive us, by the devil; himself, according to Cuvier, a horned and hoofed, and therefore graminivorous animal, with more than one toe on the hinder limb.[2]

This kind of tangible evidence, which gives us something definite to lay hold of, is peculiarly apt to produce conviction without being properly understood. "Is it really true that our horses are descended from an ancestor with three toes, who lived a long time ago?" "Why, of course it is; here's his hock." It is something like what occurs in the stage-plays, when somebody rushes in to the hero, and says: "Take these papers and guard them carefully; they prove that you are a prince." The sight of the bundle neatly done up in red tape produces conviction in a moment. But we subsequently reflect that it may be a somewhat delicate and difficult matter to prove by the aid of papers that a man is himself or anybody else; and that there are other methods of establishing personal identity, which are not less valid in the courts.

I am not disparaging this palæontological evidence for the descent of the horse, or saying a word inconsistent with Huxley's conclusion that it is demonstration, in the only sense in which demonstration can apply to an historical fact. What I wish to point out is that it contains many steps of reasoning which are rather difficult to the apprehension of any one who is not a specialist, and which involve considerations somewhat abstract and remote from the tangible facts on which they are founded. The succession of strata in time, and the mode of their deposition, especially the relations of European strata with American; these, and some other doctrines of geology, are involved in the argument. Now, however certain they may be, the evidence upon which they are established is

[1] *American Addresses*, p. 3.

[2] The devil is said to have appeared to Cuvier and threatened to eat him. "Horns? Hoofs?" said Cuvier. "Graminivorous. Can't eat me." "All flesh is grass," replied the devil, with that fatal habit of misapplying Scripture which has always clung to him.

circumstantial and remote. It is easy enough to the geologist, who is accustomed to it, but it does require special study to master it fully. And there is no trace whatever of these difficulties in the statement "Here's his hock." Convincing as that statement is, it does not carry along with the conviction a fair estimate of the evidence on which it is based.

With this consideration in mind, let us compare again the evidence for the descent of man with that for the descent of the horse. The generation of men of any given race now existing is descended from parents who on the average differed imperceptibly from themselves. This has not gone on for ever, because physical evidence proves a beginning to the present state of the earth. Were the first men also the offspring of parents who differed imperceptibly from themselves, yet so that the imperceptible difference came just where we draw the line between man and not-man? Such a line would of course be arbitrary, but we may suppose a certain hundred generations, the change in each being imperceptible, but still such that we should call the first not-men and the last men. This is the supposition of a non-human ancestor, as made by the evolutionist. If this supposition is rejected, the first men may have originated (1) from parents differing largely from them in structure; (2) from non-living matter, or (3) from non-existence, being men from the moment they began to be. We are not bound to make any supposition at all about the origin of the first men; but if we do make any supposition, it must be one of these.

Suppose, however, that we want not merely to make a supposition, but to infer from the facts before us what actually happened. Then we must make the assumption that there is some sort of uniformity in nature. Without this we cannot infer at all, for inference consists in transferring the experience which we have had under certain conditions to events happening under like conditions, of which we have not had experience. It is true that we cannot be absolutely sure of the uniformity of nature, or that our present conception of it is right: but still it is the only thing we have to go upon. Human knowledge is never absolutely and theoretically certain, but a great deal of it is practically certain, which is all we want.

Now the production of man from non-living matter, or the coming of any kind of matter into existence out of nothing, are things so entirely without parallel in our existing experience that we cannot infer them unless our experience entirely changes its character. If clay or mould would form itself into a human body a few times, we might learn something about the conditions under which such a transformation takes place, which would enable us to infer that it had taken place before. If matter would occasionally come into existence out of nothing, we might say what kind of matter was most likely to do such a thing; whether buttons or sovereigns were most gifted with this faculty, and so on. But even so, some time must elapse before we could infer, because our whole conception of the order of things would be turned topsy-turvy.

If, therefore, we are to infer anything at all about the origin of the first men, we must infer that they descended from non-human ancestors. What sort of ancestors these were is, in the present state of knowledge, matter of conjecture merely. To guide this conjecture, we have "the homological structure, embryological development, and rudimentary organs" of existing men. The evidence of this kind set forth by Darwin seems to point with very great probability to an ancestor more ape-like than man. Still these indications are not so clear and unmistakable that a *less* ape-like ancestor, as Vogt supposes, would be inconsistent with the uniformity of nature. We are dealing with a long series of similar events, the descent of each successive generation from one very like it; and though each event is an example of what occurs habitually in our experience, yet the effect of the whole series of such events is something of which we can only get knowledge by means of palæontological evidence. We can only, therefore, infer with a very moderate amount of probability that men are descended from this sort of animal or that sort of animal. *This* is the point which will be set at rest by the missing link. But I venture to think that the evidence for the descent of man from *some* non-human ancestor will be but very slightly strengthened by that discovery; and that it is now not perceptibly less cogent than that for the descent of the horse.

For observe that each alike depends on the assumption of

the uniformity of Nature. That being given, the descent of man follows from the originally fluid condition of the earth, proved by physical observation and reasoning. Failing that, the evidence for the descent of the horse vanishes into thin air. It is not the least bit more likely that man arose out of the dust of the earth than that the devil made the American horse-bones. Worse than this, quaternary man goes too. "Quaternary man," says Virchow, "is no longer a problem, but a real doctrine." But how do you know that the devil did not make the fossil men and all the flint implements? This also is quite as likely as that a human body was ever formed by the direct transformation of non-living matter.

"Well then," I hear my anxious friend say, with a sigh of relief, "we need not believe even in the antiquity of man, or the evolution of horses. They are all doubtful together." My good soul, no student of science wants you to believe anything unless you understand the nature of the evidence for it, and then only to the extent which is warranted by the evidence. There is no occasion for you to form an opinion about these questions. You need have no fear of being singular. There is always the defence of the ensign who was asked if he had seen *Punch*: "Well, you know, the fact is, I am not a reading man." But if you wish to form an opinion, there are many excellent manuals in which you may learn the nature of the evidence and the methods of reasoning on which such an opinion should be based. If your opinion should be adverse to the views held by other scientific students, you will do great service by stating your objections. Do not suppose for a moment that we want you to believe on any other terms.

But what we do hope, for your sake, is this: that you will not allow any dishonest person to persuade you to *dis*believe strongly in the doctrine of evolution, because Virchow has admitted that certain parts of it are not yet absolutely proved. It is one thing to believe that a doctrine is false, and quite another thing to admit a theoretical doubt about it.

I say a *theoretical* doubt, because it is a doubt founded on the necessary imperfection of all human knowledge, and not on any practical defect of the evidence. For a doubt precisely similar in kind, though rather greater in degree, attaches to the statement that the Russians took Plevna last year. The

evidence for the truth of this statement is, I admit, very strong, and I suppose no sane man would be disposed to question it for a moment. We have the testimony of all the newspaper correspondents, the course of subsequent events, the special information of the Government, and literally a whole army of witnesses besides. Still, the Russians may have been one and all under a continuous hallucination, and be even now in imminent danger from Osman Pasha. Or those rascally papers may have laid their heads together to deceive the whole British nation, down to this hour. Either of these suppositions is a great deal more likely than that the devil made the old horse-bones, or that clay was transformed into a human body. To be sure, they contradict our experience of the uniformities of human action to such an extent that we cannot seriously entertain them. But the uniformities of human action are known with far less accuracy and completeness than the uniformities which characterise the generation of living bodies. One man under an hallucination is common enough; one newspaper wrong in its facts is well within our experience. So that we have something to go upon in conceiving a widespread delusion. But a man without any mother at all, a real son of the soil, is a thing our experience gives us no help towards conceiving.

If you went to a man of the world with this doubt about Plevna, urging upon him that newspapers were often mistaken, and begging him to consider it in buying stocks, he would either take you for a lunatic and humour your fancy, or he would say: "Don't be so silly; I have no patience with you." But the student of science is obliged to have a great deal of patience, and desires to have more.

It seems, then, that the difference between the doctrines of the descent of horses and of the descent of men is not that one is a known fact and the other a conjecture, because each of them is practically as certain as such a doctrine can be, though subject to the theoretical doubt which attaches to all human knowledge. And yet there certainly is a great difference between the highly abstract and general considerations which go to establish the one, and the more concrete, but still rather difficult, arguments which prove the other. The evidence in the two cases appeals to two different classes of

minds. The inference from a modern horse-bone to the horse whose bone it was is a tolerably easy one, which can be brought home to many minds. From a fossil bone to the ancient animal is a more remote inference, which was at first made with considerable difficulty; yet still any person of ordinary intelligence may be expected to grasp it. Then the geological inferences, from stratified rocks to the sea or river which deposited them, from successive position to successive age, and so on, may have their way smoothed by concrete examples so as to carry their due weight without much mental strain. The biological inferences which connect the modern horse with his fossil representative, based on the structure of corresponding parts and the development of the colt, involve reasoning of a rather more abstract kind. But the whole of this evidence may be fairly presented to a mind which is still incompetent to form that general conception of the uniformity of nature which makes the directly inorganic origin of man a supposition not to be seriously entertained for a moment. To grasp the idea of any law of nature requires a considerable effort of abstraction, and that the idea may be of any real use it must be founded on acquaintance with the facts that come under the law. The general conception of law which is contravened by the supposition in question has to be abstracted from a knowledge of many different laws, dynamical, physical, chemical, biological. This conception, therefore, implies a very wide and many-sided training in facts, a very deep and thorough training in logic, as its foundation. Much education is required to enable the learner really to estimate the evidence for the many-toed horse; much more is wanted for the clear comprehension of the evidence for the simpler-brained man.

Here the education question, which has been underlying our whole discussion, is brought to the front. It is clear that the evidence for these doctrines cannot be taught until a late period in education. What are we to do in the earlier periods? Shall we say: "Horses had three-toed and four-toed ancestors; by and by you will learn how this was found out. We think, but are not quite sure, that men had simpler-brained ancestors; by and by you will learn why we think so?"

It seems to me that this is the very worst thing we can

do; that if we say this, we shall not only confuse the child's head at the time with abstractions which it is impossible that he should really grasp, but we shall effectually prevent him from learning them properly in the future. The true rule, I believe, is this: *Before teaching any doctrine, wait until the nature of the evidence for it can be understood.*

This appears at first sight a very hard thing to do. Yet it is really involved in Pestalozzi's great principle that children should be made to find out things for themselves. To make clearer the reasons for it, I will consider a case which has the advantage of not being at the present moment in controversy; the case of the teaching of chemistry. Suppose we were to begin teaching chemistry by saying that carbon is made up of atoms which have four hooks or hands by which they can hold on to other atoms; that oxygen atoms have two hooks, and hydrogen atoms one. Consequently we can hook two hydrogen atoms to an oxygen atom, and this makes water; or we can hook two oxygen atoms to a carbon atom, making carbonic acid; or we can hook four hydrogen atoms to a carbon atom, making marsh-gas. Then we should utterly confuse the learner's mind, and prevent him from learning chemistry afterwards. These statements belong to the doctrine of atomicities. Nobody doubts that these statements represent, in highly metaphorical language, real facts of chemical action; only Sir Benjamin Brodie says that since the hydrogen atoms occur always in even numbers in compounds made of carbon, oxygen, and hydrogen, we ought to fasten them together in pairs, and call each pair an atom with two hooks. What sort of thing we should find, if we knew all about these atoms, answering to the metaphor of the hooks, nobody knows. Without a knowledge of the facts which they symbolise, these statements are mere useless nonsense in anybody's mind. They are worse than useless; for they make him think he knows the facts, and so prevent him from really getting to know them.

On the other hand, we may follow Dr. Williamson's method, show the children how to make carbonic acid, and then pour it on a candle to put it out; burn hydrogen to produce water, and so forth. When a few of the commoner substances are real things to them, whose properties they are familiar with,

they may learn to weigh and measure. Then the law of definite proportions becomes legitimate teaching, and the law of gaseous volumes. It is only necessary to verify these in a few cases, that the *nature* of the evidence for them may be understood.

Here arises a typical question. How, at this point, shall we deal with the doctrine of molecules? The chemical evidence for it may now be clearly understood; but the chemical evidence leaves it still a hypothesis. It becomes quite clear that the hypothesis explains the facts, and links them together: but it does not become clear that no other hypothesis will explain the facts. I think there is every reason why it should be taught *as a hypothesis;* there are materials in the pupil's mind for estimating the value of the hypothesis in making the facts clear to him, and also for understanding why, at present, it is *only* hypothesis. And I further think that, at this stage, no great harm will be done by telling him that when he has learned enough about heat and motion, he will find the hypothesis turned into a demonstrated fact.

The doctrine of atomicities depends upon the various combinations of the same set of elements with one another. The facts on which it is based may be described without introducing any totally new conceptions; the *nature* of the evidence for it may therefore be understood by a pupil at this stage, without any further experiment. I am not, of course, speaking of the training of a specialist, but of that which should form a part of general culture.

Of these two methods of teaching, there can be no doubt that the latter will commend itself to the common sense of every reasonable man. It insures that the pupil shall learn to *do* things, that is, either to deal practically with certain objects, or to use in thinking certain conceptions; not to think he knows things of which he is really ignorant. And all the time it cultivates a habit of accepting beliefs on the strength of the evidence for them, of preferring true and honest knowledge to sham knowledge. And it secures us against the teaching, as known fact, of that which is not known fact. The only danger in this respect is in the doctrine of molecules; and here we must impress very carefully on our teachers that

they should not miss the important lesson in logic and in scientific procedure involved in the conception of a hypothesis, and in recognising the imperfection of the evidence which fails to exclude all other hypotheses.

Now let us go back from this chemical doctrine of atomicities to the doctrine of evolution. In what form shall we have the doctrine of evolution taught to our children? Certainly not as a dogma to be accepted on the authority of the teacher, evidence for which may be forthcoming afterwards. Certainly not at all until our children are competent to understand the nature of the evidence for it. Certainly not, therefore, first in its most general form, and afterwards in special applications; but first in those special cases where the evidence is of the simplest kind, most closely related to the facts; and then, as a consequence of the comparison of these cases, the general doctrine may suggest itself.

Nevertheless, the teacher, knowing what is to come in the end, may so select the portions of various subjects which he teaches at an earlier stage that they shall supply in a later stage a means of understanding and estimating the evidence on some question of evolution. He may, for instance, pay special attention to hands and feet when he is teaching biology, because these parts are of great importance in the questions of the evolution of the horse and of the relationship of man with the apes. Or in teaching sociology, which is all about papa and mamma, clothes, houses, shops, policemen, halfpence, and such like, he may specially single out those points in which civilised folk differ from barbaric and savage folk, in order to prepare the way for the historic and pre-historic evidence which proves that we are a risen race and not a fallen one. In other cases the doctrine of evolution may guide the teacher in his methods. So much as the psychologist may already infer with safety about the evolution of mind, will lead him to found all abstract notions on previously formed concrete ones; to build his houses out of carefully made bricks, instead of trying to pull bricks out of castles in the air. And he will endeavour to give clearness and solidity to the dawning moral sense by leading to the easy observation that the affairs of the nursery or the Kindergarten cannot go on unless we tell the truth and let alone other folk's things.

The affairs should of course be such that a failure in them would seem to the child a calamity too portentous to be thought about.

In fact, as Häckel says, the effect of the doctrine of evolution upon teaching and the methods of teaching cannot fail to be enormous and widespread, quite independently of the direct teaching of any portions of the doctrine itself.

Let us now go on to examine, in respect of their fitness for education, certain other doctrines mentioned by Virchow; taking next the doctrine of Spontaneous Generation.

"If you ask me (says Tyndall) whether there exists the least evidence to prove that any form of life can be developed out of matter independently of antecedent life, my reply is that evidence considered directly conclusive by many has been adduced, and that were we to follow a common example and accept testimony because it falls in with our belief, we should eagerly close with the evidence referred to. But there is in the true man of science a desire stronger than the wish to have his beliefs upheld; namely, the desire to have them true. And this stronger wish causes him to reject the most plausible support, if he has reason to suspect that it is vitiated by error. Those to whom I refer as having studied this question, believing the evidence offered in favour of 'spontaneous generation' to be thus vitiated, cannot accept it. They know full well that the chemist now prepares from inorganic matter a vast array of substances, which were some time ago regarded as the sole products of vitality. They are intimately acquainted with the structural power of matter, as evidenced in the phenomena of crystallisation. They can justify scientifically their *belief* in its potency, under the proper conditions, to produce organisms. But in reply to your question, they will frankly admit their inability to point to any satisfactory experimental proof that life can be developed, save from demonstrable antecedent life."[1]

What is the justification for this *belief* that non-living matter can, under proper conditions, produce organisms?

There is a substance called *acetylene*, the molecule of which is made of two atoms of carbon, holding together by two hooks from each, and four atoms of hydrogen each holding

[1] *Belfast Address.*

on by its one hook to a carbon atom. It is made by driving hydrogen between the tremendously hot carbon points of an electric light; directly, therefore, from the elements. If we make acetylene pass through a red-hot tube, we shall get what is called *benzene*. A molecule of benzene is a game of round-the-mulberry-tree played by six carbon atoms, each one holding by two hooks to its right-hand neighbour and one to its left, while it keeps the remaining hook for a hydrogen atom. It is therefore made of *three* molecules of acetylene, each of which has dropped two hydrogen atoms in order to join hands with the other two molecules. How does this molecule of benzene get made out of the three molecules of acetylene?

There are two answers. If anybody likes to assert that benzene can never be made out of acetylene without the presence of pre-existing benzene, it is impossible to disprove his statement. We should have no means of discovering the presence of two or three molecules of benzene vapour in the original hydrogen that we made the acetylene of. It is known that the first step is often a difficulty in the formation of chemical compounds, and that when the process has once begun, the new compound has the property of assisting the formation of its like. Nobody knows why this is.

No chemist, however, will, as a matter of fact, make this supposition about benzene. It is generally held that the benzene molecule is formed by the collision of three acetylene molecules in favourable positions. This collision is a *coincidence*. Each molecule meets another molecule many millions of times in a second; but I am not aware that anybody has calculated the number of times it meets two other molecules at once. We must know a great deal more of the constitution of atoms before we can calculate what proportion of these triple collisions is favourable to the formation of a benzene molecule; but there can be no doubt that the coincidence takes place an enormous number of times per second in every cubic centimetre of the gas, because a perceptible quantity of benzene is obtained.

There is another substance which can be made out of six carbon atoms and six hydrogen atoms, by fastening them together in a different way. I forget the name of it, but it

is an unstable and explosive substance, which breaks itself up on the slightest provocation. We do not find this mixed up with the benzene, although the coincidence which formed it may have occurred quite as often as that which formed benzene. It becomes extinct because it is not adapted to the conditions.

On the other hand, we do find some more complex compounds mixed up with the benzene. These may have been partly made by collision of benzene molecules with acetylene molecules: partly by *coincidences* of a more elaborate character, such as the collision of four or five acetylene molecules. These are all *stable;* that is to say, they are suited to the conditions, and therefore they survive.

Observe, then, that in this very simple case of the formation of an organic body (in large quantities benzene is always prepared from coal-tar) it is produced by a coincidence, and preserved by natural selection.

If we take thirteen carbon atoms instead of six, and combine them only in the simplest ways, so as to form an open chain with branches, it has been calculated by Cayley that 799 compounds are possible. How many of these are stable at a given pressure and temperature nobody knows. In a gaseous mixture of paraffins, the *coincidence* necessary to form each one of them may occur many thousand times a second. Only those can survive which are stable under the given conditions. Such natural selection determines, for example, the compound ethers which go to make up the flavour of a pear.

Now those persons who believe that living matter, such as protein, arises out of non-living matter in the sea, suppose that it is formed like all other chemical compounds. That is to say, it originates in a coincidence, and is preserved by natural selection. Only in this case the coincidence is of the most elaborate and complex character. I once saw an estimate of the number of carbon atoms in a molecule of albumen. I cannot now lay my hands on the book in which I found it, but there were three figures in it. I do not believe, on the strength of that estimate, that there are over a hundred carbon atoms in a molecule of albumen; because, from the nature of the substance, I cannot imagine any evidence on

which it might be securely founded. But there can be no doubt that all the forms of living matter are enormously complex in chemical constitution. Now there may, of course, be half-way houses, less complex forms out of which they may be built up, just as acetylene forms a half-way house to benzene. Still, the coincidence involved in the formation of a molecule so complex as to be called *living*, must be, so far as we can make out, a very elaborate coincidence. How often does it happen in a cubic mile of sea-water? Perhaps once a week; perhaps once in many centuries; perhaps also, many million times a day. From this living molecule to a speck of protoplasm visible in the microscope is a very far cry; involving, it may be, a thousand years or so of evolution. Possibly, however, the molecule has from the beginning that power which belongs to other chemical bodies, and certainly to itself when existing in sensible masses, of assisting the formation of its like. Once started, however, there it is; the spontaneous generation, believed in as a possibility by the evolutionist, has taken place.

Why then do the experiments all "go against" spontaneous generation? What the experiments really prove is that the coincidence which would form a *Bacterium*—already a definite structure reproducing its like—does not occur in a test-tube during the periods yet observed. Such a coincidence is the nearest thing to a "special creation" that can be distinctly conceived. The experiments have nothing whatever to say to the production of enormously simpler forms, in the vast range of the ocean, during the ages of the earth's existence.

Allowing that this makes the thing possible, does it give any reason for believing that it has actually taken place? We might get a direct demonstration if we knew the constitution of protein, and could calculate the chances of the coincidence which would lead to its formation in the sea. But on the other hand we have an argument precisely like that which we used in the case of the descent of man. We know from physical reasons that the earth was once in a liquid state from excessive heat. Then there could have been no living matter upon it. Now there is. Consequently non-living matter has been turned into living matter *somehow*. We can only get out of spontaneous generation by the

supposition made by Sir W. Thomson, in jest or earnest, that some piece of living matter came to the earth from outside, perhaps with a meteorite. I wish to treat all hypotheses with respect, and to have no preferences which are not entirely founded on reason; and yet, whenever I contemplate this

> "simpler protoplastic shape
> Which came down in a fire-escape,"

an internal monitor, of which I can give no rational account, invariably whispers "Fiddlesticks!"

I think, however, that the nature of the evidence which makes spontaneous generation probable is such that we cannot teach it in schools except to very advanced pupils. And the same thing may be said of the doctrine of evolution as a whole, regarded as involving the nebular hypothesis.

"Those who hold (says Tyndall) the doctrine of evolution are by no means ignorant of the uncertainty of their data, and they only yield to it a provisional assent. They regard the nebular hypothesis as probable, and in the utter absence of any proof of the illegality of the act, they prolong the method of nature from the present into the past. Here the observed uniformity of nature is their only guide. Having determined the elements of their curve in a world of observation and experiment, they prolong that curve into an antecedent world, and accept as probable the unbroken sequence of development from the nebula to the present time."

When I was seven or eight years old, I came across an article in *Chambers' Journal* upon Plateau's experiments with rotating oil-drops, and their bearing on the nebular hypothesis. I was highly delighted with this, and made notes of it on the fly-leaves of a book of Bible stories. My notion was that creation was precisely a large Plateau's experiment. Now I am pretty sure that this unfortunate circumstance retarded my knowledge of the nebular hypothesis by some years, because it gave me an idea that I knew all about it already.

Besides the nebular hypothesis, there are other doctrines about the origin of the world which it seems undesirable to have taught to our children. One [1] is an account of a wet

[1] See that admirable book, *The Bible for Young People* (Williams and Norgate, 1873).

beginning of things, after which the waters were divided by a firm canopy of sky, and the dry land appeared underneath. Plants, and animals, and men, were successively formed by the word of a deity enthroned above the canopy. Another account is of a dry beginning of things, namely a garden, subsequently watered by a mist, in which there were no plants until a man was put there to till it. This man was made from the dust of the ground by a deity, who walked about on the earth, and had divine associates, jealous of the man for sharing their privilege of knowing good from evil, and fearful that he would gain that of immortality also. The deity had taken a rib out of the man, and made a woman of it.

I do not see that we should mind the teaching of these stories, so long as others are taught along with them, such as that of the Chaldee God Bel, who cut off his head, moistened the clay with his blood, and then made men out of it; or of the Gods of our own race, Odin, Vale, and Ve, who walked about the earth until they found two trees, one of which they made into a man, and the other into a woman; or of Deucalion and Pyrrha, who threw stones over their heads, which became men and women. As soon as ever they can understand them children may be taught the reasons why the first two stories are quite different from the others, and, though contradictory, both of them true; as, for example, the nature of the evidence which connects or disconnects the stories with Moses, and which proves that Moses could have known anything about the origin of the world. But we ought not, I think, to allow either of these stories to be taught to our children *as a known fact.* It will be better to prepare them that they may by and by understand the attitude of the lover of truth towards these problems.

"If you ask him whence is this 'matter' . . . who or what divided it into molecules, and impressed upon them this necessity of running into organic forms, he has no answer. Science is mute in reply to such questions. But if the materialist is confounded, and science is rendered dumb, who else is prepared with an answer? Let us lower our heads and acknowledge our ignorance, priest and philosopher, one and all.

"His (the scientific man's) refusal of the creative hypothesis is less an assertion of knowledge than a protest against the assumption of knowledge which must long, if not for ever, lie beyond us, and the claim to which is the source of perpetual confusion upon earth."[1]

I do not propose to discuss here those difficult questions which were raised by Häckel and Nägeli about the relation of body and mind; because I hope soon to have an opportunity of dealing with them separately. But in regard to the teaching in schools of abstract and general conclusions derived from this branch of science still so very imperfect, so much in the air, it seems to me that Virchow has spoken with the utmost practical wisdom. The basis of it, indeed, the one point of firm ground on which the structure of mind-and-body lore can be built, is fully suited for teaching, as Virchow himself has pointed out. The theory of the eye, slowly elaborated from Lionardo to Kepler, from Kepler to Helmholtz, and the doctrine of perception founded upon it, these supply a safe foundation for whatever more may come. But the Plastidule-soul can take no harm by waiting awhile, until we are a little more clear about what we mean by it.

And this same judgment applies necessarily to another abstract and general conclusion from an unproved doctrine about body and mind; the conclusion that a man's consciousness survives the decay of his body. Such a conclusion can be at best, in the present state of knowledge, a hope, a conjecture, an aspiration; it can have no claim to be regarded as a known fact. Those who hold to it may think it highly probable, they may strongly desire that it should be true, they may eagerly expect that better evidence will shortly be forthcoming; but they cannot be justified in teaching it to little children as a known fact. Of such a doctrine, surely, if of any doctrine, we ought to say: "Do not take this for established truth; be prepared to find that it is otherwise; only for the moment we are of opinion that *it may possibly be so*."

And in this case the reasons for such caution are deeper and stronger than the merely intellectual ones, because of the vast hold of this doctrine upon the hearts, and its serious

[1] Tyndall, *Fragments*, pp. 421, 548.

influence upon the actions, of men. You, who teach it to your children, do so from the highest of motives, because you believe that it will influence their character for good, and strengthen them in the course of right conduct. But there are two things which you should carefully consider. The first is, that by teaching the doctrine too early you weaken its effect, because you teach it while it can be only half realised, and so prevent it from being realised afterwards. Dr. Martineau testifies to the greater power of a belief in immortality gained by the believer for himself, and strengthening a moral sense which has been formed on a different basis. Teach your children to do good and to eschew evil; if in later life they can find hope of an eternity of such action, it will make them happier and may make them better. But the experience of centuries condemns the practice of teaching the doctrine to little children, so as to make it familiar as an ill-understood conception, to weaken the power it might have for good, and to help the perversion of it to superstitious uses.

The second point to be considered is the frightful loss and disappointment you prepare for your child if, as is most probable in these days, he becomes convinced that the doctrine is founded on insufficient evidence. It is not merely that you have brought him up as a prince, to find himself a pauper at eighteen. He may have allowed this doctrine to get inextricably intertwined with his feelings of right and wrong. Then the overthrow of one will, at least for a time, endanger the other. You leave him the sad task of gathering together the wrecks of a life broken by disappointment, and wondering whether honour itself is left to him among them. Leave him free of this doctrine, and his conscience will rest upon its true base, safe against all storms; for it is built upon a rock. Then he can never reproach you with raising hopes in him which knowledge is fated to blast, and with them, it may be, to blast the promise of his life.

THE END